UNIVERSITY OF NORTH CAROLINA

BOOK CARD

Please keep this card in book pocket

WE-ME-LITTLE-LOAN

PARTIAL TITLE

THE LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF
NORTH CAROLINA

ENDOWED BY THE
DIALECTIC AND PHILANTHROPIC
SOCIETIES

PR5210
.E95
v.7

UNIVERSITY OF N.C. AT CHAPEL HILL
00022219323

This book is due at the WALTER R. DAVIS LIBRARY on the last date stamped under "Date Due." If not on hold it may be renewed by bringing it to the library.

DATE DUE	RET.	DATE DUE	RET.
JAN 21 19[illegible]			
[illegible]	JAN 15 '92		
JAN 16 1993			
[illegible]	JAN 26 '98		
MAY 04 2004			
JAN 05 2004			
JUN 19 2012			
[illegible]	JUN 18 2013		

Form No. 513,
Rev. 1/84

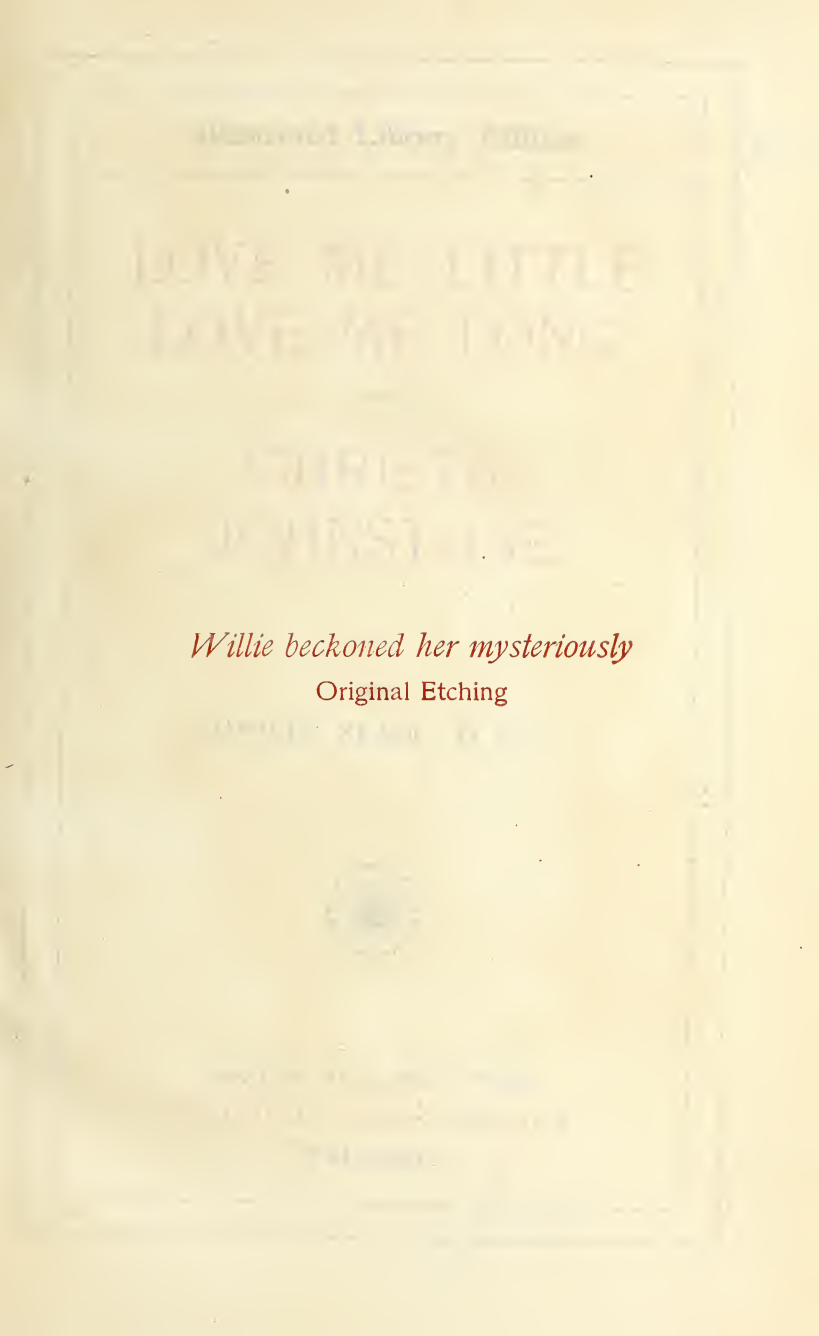
Special [illegible]

bmfe 12V
SOXX

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

http://archive.org/details/workslovemelittl07read

E 59 H
STIE JOHNSTONE
NEWHAVEN



Willie beckoned her mysteriously
Original Etching

.E95
V, 7

Illustrated Library Edition

LOVE ME LITTLE LOVE ME LONG

—

CHRISTIE JOHNSTONE

BY

CHARLES READE, D. C. L.

BOSTON AND NEW YORK
COLONIAL PRESS COMPANY
PUBLISHERS

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

LOVE ME LITTLE, LOVE ME LONG

PAGE

TWELVE O'CLOCK CAME AND FOUND THEM STILL WALLOWING IN MODERN ANTIQUITY 25

THE CARRIAGE WENT ON, AND LEFT HIM STANDING IN THE ROAD 183

"I AM SORRY I CAME TO SPOIL YOUR PLEASURE" . . 304

CHRISTIE JOHNSTONE

WILLIE BECKONED HER MYSTERIOUSLY . . . *Frontispiece*

CHRISTIE JOHNSTONE 18

OUR ARTIST USED TO WORK, AND CHRISTIE TELL HIM STORIES THE WHILE 57

711901

LOVE ME LITTLE, LOVE ME LONG.

CHAPTER I.

Nearly a quarter of a century ago, Lucy Fountain, a young lady of beauty and distinction, was, by the death of her mother, her sole surviving parent, left in the hands of her two trustees, Edward Fountain, Esq., of Font Abbey, and Mr. Bazalgette, a merchant whose wife was Mrs. Fountain's half-sister.

They agreed to lighten the burden by dividing it. She should spend half the year with each trustee in turn, until marriage should take her off their hands.

Our mild tale begins in Mr. Bazalgette's house two years after the date of that arrangement.

The chit-chat must be your main clew to the characters. In life it is the same. Men and women won't come to you ticketed, or explanation in hand.

"Lucy, you are a great comfort in a house: it is so nice to have some one to pour out one's heart to; my husband is no use at all."

"Aunt Bazalgette!"

"In that way. You listen to my faded illusions, to the aspirations of a nature too finely organized, ah! to find its happiness in this rough selfish world; when I open my bosom to him, what does he do? guess now,—whistles."

"Then I call that rude."

"So do I, and then he whistles more and more."

"Yes; but, aunt, if any serious grief or trouble fell upon you, you would find Mr. Bazalgette a much greater comfort and a better stay than poor spiritless me."

"Oh, if the house took fire and fell about our ears, he would come out of his shell, no doubt; or if the children all died one after another, poor dear little souls: but those great troubles only come in stories. Give me a friend that can sympathize with the real hourly mortifications of a too susceptible nature; sit on this ottoman, and let me go on; where was I, when Jones came and interrupted us? they always do just at the interesting point."

Miss Fountain's face promptly wreathed itself into an expectant smile; she abandoned her hand, and her ear, and leaned her graceful person towards her aunt, while that lady murmured to her in low and thrilling tones — his eyes, his long hair, his imaginative expressions, his romantic projects of frugal love; how her harsh papa had warned Adonis off the premises, how Adonis went without a word (as pale as death, love), and soon after in his despair flung himself — to an ugly heiress, and how this disappointment had darkened her whole life, and so on.

Perhaps if Adonis had stood before her now, rolling his eyes, and his phrases hot from the annuals, the flourishing matron might have sent him to the servants' hall with a wave of her white and jewelled hand. But the melody disarms this sort of brutal criticism: a woman's voice relating love's young dream: and then the picture; a matron still handsome pouring into a lovely virgin's ear the last thing she ought; the young beauty's eyes mimicking sympathy, the ripe beauty's soft delicious accents — purr! purr! purr!

Crash overhead! a window smashed, aie! aie! clatter!

clatter! screams of infantile rage and feminine remonstrance, feet pattering, and a general hullah-baloo, cut the soft recital in two. The ladies unclasped hands like guilty things surprised.

Lucy sprang to her feet: the oppressed one sank slowly and gracefully back inch by inch on the ottoman with a sigh of ostentatious resignation, and gazed martyr-like on the chandelier.

"Will you not go up to the nursery?" cried Lucy in a flutter.

"No, dear," replied the other faintly, but as cool as a marble slab, "you go, cast some of your oil upon those ever troubled waters, and then come back and let us try once more."

Miss Fountain heard but half this sentence: she was already gliding up the stairs. She opened the nursery door, and there stood in the middle of the room, "Original Sin." Its name after the flesh was Master Reginald; it was half-past six, had been baptized in church, after which every child becomes, according to certain polemic divines of the day, "a little soul of Christian fire,"—until it goes to a public school: and there it straddled, two scarlet cheeks puffed out with rage, soft flaxen hair streaming, cerulean eyes glowing, the poker grasped in two chubby fists: it had poked a window in vague ire, and now threatened two females with extinction if they ailed it any more.

The two grown-up women were discovered, erect but flat in distant corners, avoiding the bayonet and trusting to their artillery.

"Wicked boy!"
"Naughty boy!"
"Little ruffian," etc. } (grape).

And hints as to the ultimate destination of so sanguinary a soul (round shot).

"Ah, here's miss. Oh! miss, we are so glad you are come up; don't go a-nigh him, miss; he is a tiger."

Miss Fountain smiled, and went gracefully on one knee beside him; this brought her angelic face level with the fallen cherub's. "What is the matter, dear?" asked she, in a tone of soft pity.

The tiger was not prepared for this; he dropped his poker and flung his little arms round his cousin's neck.

"I love you, oh! oh! oh!"

"Yes, dear: then tell me now; what is the matter? What have you been doing?"

"Noth—noth—nothing—it's th—them been na—a—agging me!"

"Nagging you?" and she smiled at the word and a tiger's horror of it. "Who has been nagging you, love?"

"Th—those—bit—bit—it." The word[1] was unfortunately lost in a sob. It was followed by red faces and two simultaneous yells of remonstrance and objurgation.

"I must ask you to be silent a minute," said Miss Fountain quietly. "Reginald, what do you mean by—by—nagging?"

Reginald explained. "By nagging he meant—why—nagging."

"Well, then, what had they been doing to him?"

"No!" poor Reginald was not analytical, dialectical, and critical, like certain pedanticules, who figure in story as children. He was a terrible infant, not a horrible one.

"They won't fight—and they won't make it up, and they keep nagging," was all could be got out of him.

"Come with me, dear," said Lucy gravely. "Yes," assented the tiger softly, and went out awe-struck, hold-

[1] Bit-ter, bad bargains.

ing her hand and paddling three steps to each of her serpentine glides.

Seated in her own room, Tiger at knee, she tried topics of admonition; during these his eyes wandered about the room in search of matter more amusing; so she was obliged to bring up her reserve.

"And no young lady will ever marry you."

"I don't want them to, cousin. I wouldn't let them; you will marry me: because you promised."

"Did I?"

"Why, you know you did; upon your honor: and no lady or gentleman ever breaks their word when they say that; you told me so yourself," added he of the inconvenient memory.

"Ah, but there is another rule that I forgot to tell you."

"What is that?"

"That no lady ever marries a gentleman who has a violent temper."

"Oh, don't they?"

"No, they would be afraid; if you had a wife, and took up the poker, she would faint away — and die — perhaps."

"Oh, dear!"

"I should."

"But, cousin, you would not *want* the poker taken to you — you never nag."

"Perhaps that is because we are not married yet."

"What then, when we are, shall you turn like the others?"

"Impossible to say."

"Well, then (after a moment's hesitation), I'll marry you all the same."

"No! you forget, I shall be afraid till your temper mends."

"I'll mend it. It is mended now. See how good I am now," added he with self-admiration and a shade of surprise.

"I don't call this mending it; for I am not the one that offended you; mending it is promising me never, never to call naughty names again; how would you like to be called a puppy-dog?"

"I'd kill 'em."

"There, you see — then how can you expect poor nurse to like it?"

"You don't understand, cousin; Tom said to George the groom that Mrs. Jones was an — old — stingy" —

"I don't want to hear anything about Tom."

"He is such a clever fellow, cousin. So I think, if Jones is an old one, those two that keep nagging me must be young ones. What do you think yourself?" asked Reginald, appealing suddenly to her candor.

"And no doubt it was Tom that taught you this other vulgar word 'nagging,'" was the evasive reply.

"No, that was mamma."

Lucy colored, wheeled quickly, and demanded severely of the terrible infant, "Who is this Tom?"

"What, don't you know Tom?" Reginald began to lose a grain of his respect for her. "Why, he helps in the stables; oh, cousin, he is such a nice fellow."

"Reginald, I shall never marry you if you keep company with grooms, and speak their language."

"Well!" sighed the victim, "I'll give up Tom sooner than you."

"Thank you, dear — now I *am* flattered. One struggle more: we must go together and ask the nurses' pardons."

"Must we? ugh!"

"Yes — and kiss them, — and make it up."

Reginald made a wry face; but, after a pause of solemn reflection, he consented on condition that Lucy

would keep near him, and kiss him directly afterwards.

"I shall be sure to do that, because you will be a good boy then."

Outside the door Reginald paused — "I have a favor to ask you, cousin — a great favor. You see, I am very little: and you are so big; now the husband ought to be the biggest."

"Quite my own opinion, Reggy."

"Well, dear, now, if you would be so kind as not to grow any older, till I catch you up, I shall be so very, very, very much obliged to you, dear."

"I will try, Reggy. Twenty is a very good age. I will stay there as long as my friends will let me."

"Thank you, cousin."

"But that is not what we have in hand."

The nurses were just agreeing what a shame it was of miss to take that little vagabond's part against them, when she opened the door. "Nurse, here is a penitent, a young gentleman who is never going to use rude words, or be violent and naughty again."

"La, miss! why, it is witchcraft — the dear child — soon up, and soon down, as a boy should."

"Beg par'n nurse — beg par'n Kitty," recited the dear child, late tiger, and kissed them both hastily: and, the double formula gone through, ran to Miss Fountain and kissed her with warmth while the nurses were reciting "little angel," "all heart," etc.

"To take the taste out of my mouth," explained the penitent, and was left with his propitiated females: and didn't they nag him at short intervals until sunset! But, strong in the contemplation of his future union with cousin Lucy, this great heart in a little body despised the pins and needles that had goaded him to fury before.

Lucy went down to the drawing-room. She found

Mrs. Bazalgette leaning with one elbow on the table, her hand shading her high polished forehead; her grave face reflected great mental power taxed to the uttermost. So Newton looked, solving Nature.

Miss Fountain came in full of the nursery business, but catching sight of so much mind in labor, approached it with silent curiosity.

The oracle looked up with an absorbed air, and delivered itself very slowly, with eye turned inwards.

"I am afraid — I don't think — I quite like my new dress."

"That *is* unfortunate."

"That would not matter; I never like anything till I have altered it; but here is Baldwin has just sent me word that her mother is dying, and she can't undertake any work for a week. Provoking — couldn't the woman die just as well after the ball?"

"Oh, aunt!"

"And my maid has no more taste than an owl. What on earth am I to do?"

"Wear another dress."

"What other can I?"

"Nothing can be prettier than your white mousseline-de-soie with the tartan trimming."

"No: I have worn that at four balls already; I won't be known by my colors like a bird. I have made up my mind to wear the jaune, and I will in spite of them all; that is, if I can find anybody who cares enough for me to try it on and tell me what it wants." Lucy offered at once to go with her to her room, and try it on.

"No — no — it is so cold there — we will do it here by the fire — you will find it in the large wardrobe, dear — mind how you carry it, Lucy! — lots of pins."

Mrs. Bazalgette then rang the bell and told the servant to say she was out if any one called, no matter who.

Meantime Lucy, impressed with the gravity of her office, took the dress carefully down from the pegs; and as it would have been death o crease it, and destruction to let its hem sweep against any of the inferior forms of matter, she came down the stairs and into the room, holding this female weapon of destruction as high above her head as Judith waves the sword of Holofernes in Etty's immortal picture.

The other had just found time to loosen her dress and lock one of the doors; she now locked the other, and the rites began. Well!!??

"It fits you like a glove."

"Really? tell the truth now; it is a sin to tell a story — about a new gown — what a nuisance one can't see behind one."

"I could fetch another glass, but you may trust my word, aunt. This point behind is very becoming, it gives distinction to the waist."

"Yes — Baldwin cuts these bodies better than Olivier; but the worst of her is, when it comes to the trimming you have to think for yourself; the woman has no mind; she is a pair of hands, and there is an end of her."

"I must confess it is a little plain, for one thing," said Lucy.

"Why, you little goose, you don't think I am going to wear it like this. No, I thought of having down a wreath and bouquet from Foster's of violets and heart's-ease — the bosom and sleeves covered with blonde, you know, and caught up here and there with a small bunch of the flowers. Then, in the centre heart's-ease of the bosom, I meant to have had two of my largest diamonds set — hush!"

The door-handle worked viciously; then came rap! rap! rap! rap!

"Tic — tic — tic — this is always the way. Who is there? go away — you can't come here."

"But I want to speak to you — what the deuce are you doing?" said through the keyhole the wretch that owned the room in a mere legal sense.

"We are trying a dress. Come again in an hour."

"Confound your dresses! Who is we?"

"Lucy has got a new dress."

"Aunt," whispered Lucy, in a tone of piteous expostulation.

"Oh, if it is Lucy. Well, good-by, ladies. I am obliged to go to London at a moment's notice, for a couple of days. You will have done by when I come back, perhaps:" and off went Bazalgette whistling, but not best pleased. He had told his wife more than once that the drawing-rooms and dining-rooms of a house are the public rooms, and the bedrooms the private ones.

Lucy colored with mortification; it was death to her to annoy any one; so her aunt had thrust her into a cruel position.

"Poor Mr. Bazalgette!" sighed she.

"Fiddle-de-dee. Let him go; and come back in a better temper, — set transparent; so then backed by the violet you know they will imitate dew-drops to the life."

"Charming! Why not let Olivier do it for you, as poor Baldwin cannot?"

"Because Olivier works for the Claytons, and we should have that Emily Clayton coming out as my double, and as we visit the same houses" —

"And as she is extremely pretty — aunt, what a generalissima you are!"

"Pretty! Snub-nosed little toad. No. She is not pretty. But she is eighteen: so I can't afford to dress her. No. I see I shall have to moderate my views for this gown, and buy another dress for the flowers and

diamonds. There, take it off, and let us think it calmly over. I never act in a hurry but I am sorry for it afterwards, I mean in things of real importance." The gown was taken off in silence, broken only by occasional sighs from the sufferer, in whose heart a dozen projects battled fiercely for the mastery and worried and sore perplexed her, and rent her inmost soul fiercely divers ways.

"Black lace, dear," suggested Lucy soothingly.

Mrs. B. curled her arm lovingly round Lucy's waist. "Just what I was beginning to think," said she, warmly. "And we can't both be mistaken, can we? But where can I get enough?" and her countenance, that the cheering coincidence had rendered seraphic, was once more clouded with doubt.

"Why, you have yards of it."

"Yes — but mine is all made up in some form or other, and it messes one's things so to pick them to pieces."

"So it does, dear," replied Lucy with gentle but genuine feeling.

"It would only be for one night, Lucy — I should not hurt it, love — you would not like to fetch down your Brussels point scarf, and see how it would look, would you? we need not cut the lace, dear; we could tack it on again next morning: you are not so particular as I am — you look well in anything."

Lucy was soon seated denuding herself and embellishing her aunt. The latter reclined with grace and furthered the work by smile and gesture.

"You don't ask me about the skirmish in the nursery."

"Their squabbles bore me, dear: but you can tell me who was the most in fault, if you think it worth while."

"Reginald, then, I am afraid; but it is not the poor boy; it is the influence of the stable-yard; and I do advise and entreat you to keep him out of it."

"Impossible, my dear; you don't know boys. The stable is their paradise. When he grows older his father must interfere; meantime let us talk of something more agreeable."

"Yes — you shall go on with your story. You had got to his look of despair, when your papa came in that morning."

"Oh — I have no time for anybody's despair just now — I can think of nothing but this detestable gown. Lucy, I suspect I almost wish I had made them put another breadth into the skirt."

"Luncheon, ma'am."

Lucy begged her aunt to go down alone; she would stay and work.

"No, you must come to luncheon; there is a dish on purpose for you — stewed eels."

"Eels! why, I abhor them; I think they are water-serpents."

"Who is it that is so fond of them, then?"

"It is you, aunt."

"So it is. I thought it had been you. Come, you must come down, whether you eat anything or not. I like somebody to talk to me while I am eating, and I had an idea just now — it is gone — but perhaps it will come back to me; it was about this abominable gown. Oh! how I wish there was not such a thing as dress in the world!"

While Mrs. Bazalgette was munching water-snakes with delicate zeal, and Lucy nibbling cake, came a letter — Mrs. Bazalgette read it with heightening color, laid it down, cast a pitying glance on Lucy, and said with a sigh, "Poor girl."

Lucy turned a little pale. "Has anything happened?" she faltered.

"Something is going to happen: you are to be torn

away from here, where you are so happy, where we all love you, dear; it is from that selfish old bachelor. Listen: 'Dear madam, my niece Lucy has now been due here three days. I have waited to see whether you would part with her without being dunned. My curiosity on that point is satisfied, and I have now only my affection to consult, which I do by requesting you to put her and her maid into a carriage that will be waiting for her at your door, twenty-four hours after you receive this note. I have the honor to be, madam,' — an old brute! And you can smile; but that is you all over; you don't care a straw whether you are happy or miserable."

"Don't I?"

"Not you — you will leave this, where you are a little queen, and go and bury yourself three months with that old bachelor, and nobody will ever gather from your face that you are bored to death; and here we are asked to the Cavendish's next Wednesday, and the Hunt's ball on Friday — you are such a lucky girl — our best invitations always drop in while you are with us — we go out three times as often during your months as at other times; it is your good fortune, or the weather, or something."

"Dear aunt, this was your own arrangement with Uncle Fountain; I used to be six months with each in turn till you insisted on its being three; you make me almost laugh, both you and Uncle Fountain; what *do* you see in me worth quarrelling for?"

"I will tell you what *he* sees, a good little spiritless thing" —

"I am larger than you, dear."

"Yes, in body — that he can make a slave of — always ready to nurse him and his toe, or to put down your work and to take up his; to play at his vile backgammon."

"Piquet — please."

"Where is the difference? to share his desolation, and take half his blue devils on your own shoulders, till he will hyp you so that to get away you will consent to marry into his set, the county set, some beggarly old family that came down from the Conquest, and has been going down ever since; so then he will let you fly — with a string — you must vegetate two miles from him; so then he can have you in to Backquette and write his letters — he will settle four hundred a year on you, and you will be miserable for life."

"Poor Uncle Fountain, what a schemer he turns out."

"Men all turn out schemers when you know them, Miss Impertinence. Well, dear, I have no selfish views for you. I love my few friends too single-heartedly for that; but I *am* sad when I see you leaving us to go where you are not prized."

"Indeed, aunt, I am prized at Font Abbey. I am over-rated there as I am here. They all receive me with open arms."

"So is a hare when it comes into a trap," said Mrs. Bazalgette sharply, drawing upon a limited knowledge of grammar and field sports.

"No — Uncle Fountain really loves me."

"As much as I do?" asked the lady with a treacherous smile.

"Very nearly," was the young courtier's reply. She went on to console her aunt's unselfish solicitude by assuring her that Font Abbey was not a solitude; that dinners and balls abounded, and her uncle was invited to them all.

"You little goose, don't you see? all those invitations are for your sake, not his; if we could look in on him now, we should find him literally in single cursedness. Those county folks are not without cunning. They say,

Beauty has come to stay with the Beast; we must ask the Beast to dinner, so then Beauty will come along with him. What other pleasure awaits you at Font Abbey?"

"The pleasure of giving pleasure," replied Lucy, apologetically.

"Ah! that is your weakness, Lucy; it is all very well with those who won't take advantage; but it is the wrong game to play with all the world; you will be made a tool of, and a slave of, and use of. I speak from experience; you know how I sacrifice myself to those I love; luckily they are not many."

"Not so many as love you, dear."

"Heaven forbid! but you are at the head of them all, and I am going to prove it — by deeds, not words."

Lucy looked up at this additional feature in her aunt's affection.

"You must go to the great bear's den for three months, but it shall be the last time!" Lucy said nothing.

"You will return never to quit us, or at all events not the neighborhood."

"That — would be — nice," said the courtier, warmly, but hesitatingly; "but how will you gain uncle's consent?"

"By dispensing with it."

"Yes; but the means, aunt?"

"A husband!"

Lucy started and colored all over, and looked askant at her aunt with opening eyes like a thoroughbred filly just going to start all across the road. Mrs. Bazalgette laid a loving hand on her shoulder and whispered knowingly in her ear. "Trust to me, I'll have one ready for you against you come back this time."

"No! please don't! pray don't!" cried Lucy, clasping her hands in feeble-minded distress.

"In this neighborhood, one of the right sort."

"I am so happy as I am."

"You will be happier when you are quite a slave; and so I shall save you from being snapped up by some country wiseacre; and marry you into our own set."

"Merchant princes," suggested Lucy demurely, having just recovered her breath, and what little sauce there was in her.

"Yes, merchant princes — the men of the age, the men who could buy all the acres in the country without feeling it — the men who make this little island great, and a woman happy, by letting her have everything her heart can desire."

"You mean everything that money can buy?"

"Of course. I said so, didn't I?"

"So then you are tired of me in the house," remonstrated Lucy sadly.

"No, ingrate; but you will be sure to marry soon or late."

"No, I will not — if I can possibly help it."

"But you can't help it; you are not the character to help it. The first man that comes to you and says, 'I know you rather dislike me' — (you could not hate anybody, Lucy), 'but if you don't take me I shall die of a broken fiddlestick,' you will whine out, 'Oh, dear — shall you? well then — sooner than disoblige — here — take me!'"

"Am I so weak as this?" asked Lucy, coloring, and the water coming into her eyes.

"Don't be offended," said the other coolly, "we won't call it weakness, but excess of complaisance; you can't say no to anybody."

"Yet I have said it," replied Lucy, thoughtfully.

"Have you? when? Oh, to me. Yes — where I am concerned, you have sometimes a will of your own, and a pretty stout one — but never with anybody else."

The aunt then inquired of the niece, "frankly now, between ourselves," whether she had no wish to be married. The niece informed her in confidence that she had not, and was puzzled to conceive how the bare idea of marriage came to be so tempting to her sex. Of course she could understand a lady wishing to marry, if she loved a gentleman who was determined to be unhappy without her; but that women should look about for some hunter to catch, instead of waiting quietly till the hunter caught them, this puzzled her; and as for the superstitious love of females for the marriage rite in cases when it took away their liberty and gave them nothing amiable in return, it amazed her. "So, aunt," she concluded, "if you really love me, driving me to the altar will be an unfortunate way of showing it."

While listening to this tirade, which the young lady delivered with great serenity, and concluded with a little yawn, Mrs. Bazalgette had two thoughts; the first was, "This girl is not flesh and blood; she is made of curds and whey, or something;" the second was, "No, she is a shade hypocriticaller than other girls before they are married, that is all." And, acting on this latter conviction she smiled a lofty incredulity, and fell to counting on her fingers all the moneyed bachelors for miles.

At this Lucy winced with sensitive modesty, and for once a shade of vexation showed itself on her lovely features; the quick-sighted, keen-witted matron caught it, and instantly made a masterly move of feigned retreat. "No," cried she, "I will not tease you any more, love; just promise me not to receive any gentleman's addresses at Font Abbey, and I will never drive you from my arms to the altar."

"I promise that," cried Lucy, eagerly.

"Upon your honor?"

"Upon my honor."

"Kiss me, dear. I know you won't deceive me now you have pledged your honor. This solemn promise consoles me more than you can conceive."

"I am so glad; but if you knew how little it costs me."

"All the better; you will be more likely to keep it," was the dry reply.

The conversation then took a more tender turn. "And so to-morrow you go. How dull the house will be without you: and who is to keep my brats in order now, I have no idea — well, there is nothing but meeting and parting in this world; it does not do to love people, does it? (ah!) Don't cry, love, or I shall give way: my desolate heart already brims over — no — now don't cry (a little sharply), the servants will be coming in to take away the things."

"Will you c—c—come and h—help me pack, dear?"

"Me? love? oh, no. I could not bear the sight of your things put out to go away. I promised to call on Mrs. Hunt this afternoon: and you must not stop in all day yourself — I cannot let your health be sacrificed: you had better take a brisk walk, and pack afterwards."

"Thank you, aunt. I will go and finish my drawing of Harrowden church, to take with me."

"No — don't go there: the meadows are wet — walk upon the Hatton road; it is all gravel."

"Yes: only it is so ugly, and I have nothing to do that way."

"But I'll give you something to do," said Mrs. Bazalgette obligingly. "You know where old Sarah and her daughter live: the last cottages on that road; I don't like the shape of the last two collars they made me; you can take them back if you like, and lend them that one of yours I admire so, for a pattern."

"That I will with pleasure."

"Shall you come back through the garden? if you don't, never mind; but, if you do, you may choose me a bouquet. The servants are incapable of a bouquet."

"I will; thank you, dear; how kind and thoughtful of you to give me something to occupy me now that I am a little sad." Mrs. Bazalgette accepted this tribute with a benignant smile, and the ladies parted.

The next morning a travelling-carriage with four smoking post-horses came wheeling round the gravel to the front door. Uncle Fountain's factotum got down from the dickey, packed Lucy's imperial on the roof, and slung a box below the dickey; stowed her maid away aft, arranged the foot-cushion and a shawl or two inside, and, half obsequiously, half bumptiously, awaited the descent of his fair charge.

Then, up-stairs, came a sudden simultaneous attack of ardent lips, and a long clinging embrace, that would have graced the most glorious, passionate, antique love. Sculpture out-done, the young lady went down and was handed into the carriage. Her ardent aunt followed presently, and fired many glowing phrases in at the window; and, just as the carriage moved, she uttered a single word quite quietly, as much as to say, Now this I mean. This genuine word, the last Aunt Bazalgette spoke, had been, two hundred years before, the last word of Charles the First. Note the coincidences of history.

The two post-boys lifted their whips level to their eyes by one instinct, the horses tightened the traces, the wheels ground the gravel, and Lucy was whirled away with that quiet emphatic post-dict ringing in her ears.

Remember!

Font Hill was sixty miles off: they reached it in less than six hours; there was Uncle Fountain on the hall steps to receive her, and the comely housekeeper, Mrs. Brown, ducking and smiling in the background. While

the servants were unpacking the carriage, Mr. Fountain took Lucy to her bedroom. Mrs. Brown had gone on before to see for the third time whether all was comfortable. There was a huge fire, all red; and on the table a gigantic nosegay of spring flowers with smell to them all.

"Oh, how nice after a journey," said Lucy, mowing down Uncle Fountain and Mrs. Brown with one comprehensive smile.

Mrs. Brown flamed with complacency.

"What!" cried her uncle, "I suppose you expected a black fire and impertinent apologies, by way of substitute for warmth; a stuffy room, and damp sheets roasted, like a woodcock, twenty minutes before use."

"No, uncle, dear, I expected every comfort at Font Abbey." Brown retired with a courtesy.

"Aha! what, have you found out that it is all humbug about old bachelors not knowing comfort? Do bachelors ever put their friends into damp sheets? No; that is the women's trick with their household science. Your sex have killed more men with damp sheets than ever fell by the sword."

"Yet nobody erects monuments to us," put in Lucy slyly.

She missed fire — Uncle Fountain, like most Englishmen, could take in a pun by the ear, but wit only by the eye. "Do you remember when Mrs. Bazalgette put you into the linen sponge, and killed you?"

"Killed me?"

"Certainly, as far as in her lay. We can but do our best — well, she did hers, and went the right way to work."

"You see, I survive."

"By a miracle. Dinner is at six."

"Very well, dear."

"Yes: but six in this house means sixty minutes after five and sixty minutes before seven. I mention this the first day because you are just come from a place where it means twenty minutes to seven; also let me observe that I think I have noticed soup and potatoes eat better hot than cold, and meat tastes nicer done to a turn than" —

"To a cinder?"

"Ha — ha! and come with an appetite, please!"

"Uncle, no tyranny, I beg."

"Tyranny? you know this is Liberty Hall: only when I eat, I expect my companion to eat too: besides, there is nothing to be gained by humbug to-day. There will only be us two at dinner, and when I see young ladies fiddling with an asparagus head, instead of eating their dinner, I don't fall into the greenhorn's notion — exquisite creature! all soul! no stomach! feeds on air, ideas, and quadrille music; no; what do you think I say?"

"Something flattering, I feel sure."

"On the contrary, something true. I say, hypocrite! been grubbing like a pig all day, so can't eat like a Christian at meal-time; you can't humbug me."

"Alas! so I see. That decides me to be candid — and hungry."

"Well, I am off: I don't stick to my friends and bore them with my affairs like that egotistical hussy Jane Bazalgette. I amuse myself, and leave them to amuse themselves; that is my notion of politeness. I am going to see my pigs fed; then into the village. I am building a new blacksmith's shop there; (you must come and look at it the first thing to-morrow), and at six if you want to find me" —

"I shall peep behind the soup-tureen."

"And there I shall be if I am alive."

At dinner the old boy threw himself into the work

with such zeal, that, soon after the cloth was removed, from fatigue and repletion he dropped asleep with his shoulder towards Lucy, but his face instinctively turned towards the fire. Lucy crept away on tiptoe not to disturb him.

In about an hour he bustled into the drawing-room; ordered tea, blew up the footman because the cook had not water boiling that moment; drank three cups; then brightened up, rubbed his hands, and, with a cheerful, benevolent manner, "Now, Lucy," cried he, "come and help me puzzle out this tiresome genealogy."

A smile of warm assent from Lucy, and the old bachelor and the blooming Hebe were soon seated with a mountain of parchments by their side, and a tree spreading before them.

It was not a finite tree like an elm or an oak. No — it was a banyan-tree; covered an acre, and from its boughs little suckers dropped to earth, and turned to little trees, and had suckers in their turn, and "confounded the confusion."

Uncle Fountain's happiness depended, *pro tem*, on proving that he was a sucker from the great bough of the Fontaines of Melton: and why? Because, this effected, he had only to go along that bough by an established pedigree to the great trunk of the Funteyns of Salle — and the first Funteyne of Salle was said to be (and this he hoped to prove true) great-grandson of Robert de Fontibus, son of John de Fonte.

Now Uncle Fountain could prove himself the shoot of George his father (a step at which so many great pedigrees halt), who was the shoot of William, who was the shoot of Richard: but here came a gap of eighty years between him and that Fountain, younger son of Melton, to whom he wanted to hook on. Now the logic of women, children, and criticasters, is a thing of gaps;

TWELVE O'CLOCK CAME AND FOUND THEM STILL WALLOWING IN MODERN ANTIQUITY.

they reason as marches a kangaroo: but, to mathematicians, logicians, and genealogists, a link wanting is a chain broken. This blank then made Uncle Fountain miserable, and he cried out for help. Lucy came with her young eyes, her woman's patience, and her native complaisance. A great ditch yawned between a crocheteer and a rotten branch he coveted. Our Quinta Curtia flung herself, her eyesight, and her time into that ditch.

Twelve o'clock came and found them still wallowing in modern antiquity.

"Bless me," cried Mr. Fountain, when John brought in the bed-candles, "how time flies when one is really employed!"

"Yes indeed, uncle:" and by a gymnastic of courtesy she first crushed, and then so moulded a yawn, that it glided into society a smile.

"We have spent a delightful evening, Lucy."

"Thanks to you, uncle."

"I hope you will sleep well, child."

"I am sure I shall, dear," said she sweetly and inadvertently.

CHAPTER II.

A LARGE aspiration is a rarity; but who has not some small ambition, none the less keen for being narrow — keener perhaps? Mrs. Bazalgette burned to be great by dress; Mr. Fountain, member of a sex with higher aims, aspired to be great in the county.

Unluckily his main property was in the funds; he had acres in ——shire, but so few, that, some years ago, its lord-lieutenant declined to make him an injustice of the peace; that functionary died, and on his death the mortified aspirant bought a coppice, christened it Springwood, and under cover of this fringe to his three meadows applied to the new lord-lieutenant as Macduff approached Macbeth: the new man made him a magistrate; so now he aspired to be a deputy-lieutenant, and attended all the boards of magistrates, and turnpike trusts, etc., and brought up votes and beer barrels at each election, and in short played all the cards in his pack, Lucy included, to earn that distinction.

We may as well confess that there lurked in him a half unconscious hope that some day or other, in some strange collision or combination of parties, a man profound in county business, zealous in county interests, personally obnoxious to nobody, might drop into the seat of county member; and, if this should be, would not he have the sense to hold his tongue upon the noisy questions that waste Parliament's time, and the nation's, but, on the first of those periodical attacks to which the wretched land-owner is subject, wouldn't he speak and show the difference between a mere member of the commons and a member for the county?

If any one had asked this man plump which is the most important, England or ——shire, he would have certainly told you England; but our opinions are not the notions we repeat, and can defend by reasons or even by facts: our opinions are the notions we feel and act on. Could you have looked inside Mr. Fountain's head, you would have seen ideas corresponding to the following diagrams: —

Mr. Fountain courted the stomach of the county.

Without this, he knew, an angel could not reach its heart — and here one of his eccentricities broke out. He drew a line in his dictatorial way between dinner and feeding-parties. "A dinner-party is two rubbers. Four gentlemen and four ladies sit round a circular table; so then each can hear what any one says, and need not twist the neck at every word. Foraging-parties are from fourteen to thirty, set up and down a plank,

each separated from those he could talk to, as effectually as if the ocean rolled betwixt, and bawling into one person's ear amidst the din of knives, forks, and multitude. I go to those long strings of noisy duets, because I must; but I give *society* at home."

The county people had just strength of mind to like the old boy's sociable dinners, though not to imitate them, and an invitation from him was very rarely declined when Lucy was with him.

And she was in her glory. She could carry complaisance such a long way at Font Abbey — she was mistress of the house.

She listened with a wonderful appearance of interest to county matters, i.e., to minute scandal and infinitesimal politics, to the county cricket-match and archery meeting, to the past ball and the ball to come. In the drawing-room, when a cold fit fell on the coterie, she would glide to one egotist after another, find out the monotope, and set the critter off on it. Then might you see beings of straw kindle and emit sparks of small talk as this torch went round and touched them.

One day old Fountain said to his niece with a good-humored sneer, "I have found out why you are such a favorite, Lucy: you have not got a wish or an opinion of your own upon any earthly thing. You are a mirror — a regular looking-glass in a handsome frame, upon my honor — haw! haw! haw! But never mind, a mirror is more attractive than a magnet; see how they all sidle up to mine, and so they do to you, and always will, wherever you go." Lucy smiled, but a red flush flitted across her brow; she bowed over her work, and made no reply.

Uncle Fountain chuckled. He prided himself on his perfect insight into people's characters. He was one of those who can tell the exact depth of the Atlantic with a ten-fathom line.

Lucy was finishing her answer to Mrs. Bazalgette's letter, that lay on the table; that lady's postscript ran thus: "Any wooer yet? upon your honor?"

She had hardly time to fold her letter before her uncle wanted her to write five invitations to dinner. She was immediately at his service, and out of the business arose the following dialogue: —

"And who is to be the eighth?"

"Oh, Talboys."

"No, uncle, not Mr. Talboys."

"Not Mr. Talboys? why, what earthly objection can you have to him?" said Mr. Fountain almost roughly.

"I? none whatever: only you never invite the same person twice running, and Mr. Talboys dined here last time, at least, I think so; let me examine my book — yes — why he dined here not only last time, but the time before. Whom shall we substitute? three times running is too great a distinction for any mere mortal."

"Mr. Talboys," replied the other gravely, "is one of those who confer distinction on his entertainer; he can hardly receive it."

Lucy opened her eyes: "Why, what has he done?"

"He is the oldest family in the county, that is all," replied Fountain with tremendous irony.

"Older than yours? than ours?"

"Older than ours," said her uncle firmly and solemnly. "The Talboys came in with the Conqueror, — Robert de Fonte lived in Henry the Third's reign only."

"Apropos, where has Mr. Talboys been all this time, that I never met him here before this visit?"

"He was doing what his ancestors have done for three hundred years past. On attaining his majority, he made a three years' tour of Europe to rub off his English prejudices; he has returned the accomplished gentleman you see him."

"Mr. Talboys dresses in good taste and carries himself very tolerably," said Lucy, whose cue it now was to see the gentleman's good qualities; "still, three times running: consider the many competitors for a seat at your board."

"My table, please; the only one in the county that is not a board. Never mind, Lucy, so long as Talboys does us the honor to come, we will make him welcome; and, by the way, I want you to pay him a little more attention."

"Dear uncle, have I been so thoughtless as to neglect any guest of yours?

"No, my dear, you are the pink of courtesy; but Talboys is a little reserved, a man of singular delicacy; he wants drawing out; but he has been in all the courts of Europe, and there are treasures of good sense and knowledge in him, if you will but dig for them, ay, and of feeling, too."

"Of feeling? are you sure, uncle?"

"Positive; he has the highest opinion of you."

"Indeed? he never gave me any reason to think so."

"He has me, though; which is more to the point."

"Is it?"

"And, by the by," said the old boy slyly, "that reminds me I have a note from him in my pocket in which you are concerned — there it is. Talking of notes, I had better ring and send your letter down, or it will be too late for the post — well — what is the matter? you are as red as a fire — ha! ha!"

"O uncle! now, how kind of Mr. Talboys — how very kind."

"'Your niece mentioned the other evening that she was fond of riding, but that your hunters are too hot for a lady to manage. There is an animal here that perhaps may suit her; a quiet galloway' — O uncle! — 'with

tolerable paces. I send him over to you with his side saddle,' — O uncle! — 'and shall feel flattered if Miss Fountain will do him the honor to ride him *faute de mieux*.' Is not that kind of Mr. Talboys? so considerate, too. How one may be mistaken!"

"In what?" cried Fountain with eager expectation.

"I took him for a well-bred nullity."

"Well, now you see he is nothing of the kind."

"Oh, no; a quiet galloway! I will make up for my injustice when he dines here. I was to invite Mr. Talboys, was I not?"

"Of course."

Lucy drew the note-paper to her, and, while she was writing Mr. Talboys in the usual form, but with a grateful smile dimpling her glowing cheek, John answered the bell, and Mr. Fountain sent off her letter to Mrs. Bazalgette.

Mrs. Bazalgette got the letter in due course, pounced like an eagle on the postscript first. It ran thus — "No wooer — upon my honor."

Her eyes twinkled with exultation and small treachery.

That very afternoon, for the second time this month, she despatched a perfumed note to Mr. Hardie.

Mr. Hardie was only son of the greatest banker in the great commercial city near which the Bazalgettes lived. The lady's reasons for courting him so ran thus, on the ascending scale: he is thirty — he is a bachelor — his father is just dead.

CHAPTER III.

Lucy received Mr. Talboys graciously; but reserved the pony for the drawing-room. There she thanked him with a world of grace: and indeed the nag and his paces were a fruitful theme, to which she returned by skilful detours, when all else flagged. Next, in compliance with her uncle's request, she dug for this gentleman's treasures. Hitherto he had not appeared to her what my Lord Bacon calls "a full man:" for which she blamed herself. "I have not given him a fair chance. He is a great traveller; I ought to have shown more curiosity about the countries he has visited, the customs, the buildings, the works of art, the costumes, the — oh, how I should love to travel!"

So now she did question him with a warm and courteous curiosity; and so plied him that the other ladies by degrees came gliding up one by one, serpent-like, with genuine curiosity and most seeming nonchalance, and Mr. Talboys was the centre of a circle of bright eyes. Miss Fountain still plied him, and the others listened to him with undisguised deference, and a marked prejudice in favor of every word he could utter.

The gentleman saw this, and, instead of warming at his hearers, and fighting hard against his natural coldness of temperament and faintness of perception, he fell into the quaint error of icing his milk-and-water. Most superfluous congelation! Talboys had really sauntered Europe round with a mind cased in non-conductors. To him nothing in all the countries he visited had seemed very beautiful, or very curious; and why? to admire, a

man must appreciate, and the power of appreciating on a large scale is too much akin to genius to be common. Glowing descriptions from such a quarter as this were out of the question: to describe loftily, you must have admired humbly.

The quiet and well-bred but genuine enthusiasm, with which Lucy addressed the great traveller, extracted cold monosyllables: little clots of indifference; she felt like chipping an iceberg: still she persisted, and vanity fired the little heart, that the Alps from the Jurat, the lake of Thun, the bay of Naples, the Jung Frau, the wreck of the Parthenon, St. Peter's, the Place de Concorde, the square of St. Mark, Versailles, the Alhambra, the Apollo Belvidere, the Madonna of the Chair, and all the glories of nature and the feats of art could not warm. So then the fine gentleman began to act: to walk himself out as a person who had seen and could give details about anything, but was exalted far above admiring anything (*Quel grand homme! rien ne peut lui plaire!*), and, on this, while the women were gazing sweetly on him, and revering his superiority to all great impressions, and the men envying, rather hating, but secretly admiring him too, she, who had launched him, bent on him a look of soft pity and abandoned him to admiration.

"Poor Mr. Talboys." thought she, "I fear I have done him an ill turn by drawing him out," and she glided to her uncle, who was sitting apart and nobody talking to him.

Mr. Talboys, started by Lucy, ambled out his high-pacing *nil admirantem* character, and derived a little quiet self-satisfaction. This was the highest happiness he was capable of; so he was not ungrateful to Miss Fountain, who had procured it him, and partly for this, partly because he had been kind to her and lent her a

pony, he shook hands with her somewhat cordially at parting. As it happened, he was the last guest.

"You have won that man's heart, Lucy," cried Mr. Fountain with a mixture of surprise and pride.

Lucy made no reply. She looked quickly into his face to see if he was jesting.

"Writing, Lucy? so late."

"Only a few lines, uncle. You shall see them: I note the more remarkable phenomena of society. I am recalling a conversation between three of our guests this evening and shall be grateful for your opinion on it. There. Read it out, please."

Mrs. Luttrell. We missed you at the archery meeting, ha! ha! ha!

Mrs. Willis. Mr. Willis would not let me go, — he! he! he!

Mrs. James. Well, at all events — he! he! — you will come to the flower-show.

Mrs. Willis. Oh yes! — he! he! — I *am* so *fond* of flowers — ha! ha!

Mrs. Luttrell. So am I. I adore them, — he! he!

Mrs. Willis. How sweetly Miss Malcolm sings, — he! he!

Mrs. Luttrell. Yes, she shakes like a bird, — ha! ha!

Mrs. James. A little Scotch accent though, — he! he!

Mrs. Luttrell. She is Scotch, — he! he! (To John offering her tea) No more, thank you, — he! he!

Mrs. James. Shall you go to the assize sermon? — ha! ha!

Mrs. Willis. Oh yes! — he! he! — the last was very dry, — he! he! Who preaches it this term? — he!

Mrs. James. The Bishop — he! he!

Mrs. Willis. Then I shall certainly go: he is such a dear preacher, — he! he!

"Just tell me what is the precise meaning of 'ha! ha!' and what of 'he! he!'"

"The precise meaning? there you puzzle me, uncle."

"I mean, what do you mean by them?"

"Oh, I put 'ha! ha!' when they giggled, and 'he! he!' when they only chuckled."

"Then this is a caricature, my lady."

"No, dear; you know I have no satire in me; it is taken down to the letter, and I fear I must trouble you for the solution."

"Well the solution is, they are three fools."

"No, uncle, begging your pardon, they are not," replied Lucy politely but firmly.

"Well then, — three d——d fools."

Lucy winced at the participle, but was too polite to lecture her elder. "They have not that excuse," said she: "they are all sensible women, who discharge all the duties of life with discretion, except society: and they can discriminate between grave and gay whenever they are not at a party; and as for Mrs. Luttrell, when she is alone with me she is a sweet, natural love."

"They cackled — at every word — like that — the whole evening?"

"Except when you told that funny story about the Irish corporal who was attacked by a mastiff, and killed him with his halbert, and when he was reproached by his captain for not being content to repel so valuable an animal with the butt-end of his lance, answered, — 'ha, ha!'"

"So then he answered 'haw, haw!' did he?"

"Now, uncle! No, he answered, 'So I would, your Arnr, if he had run at me with his tail!' Now that was genuine wit mixed with quite enough fun to make an intelligent person laugh; and then you told it so drolly, ha, ha!"

"They did not laugh at *that?*"

"Sat as grave as judges."

"And you tell me they are not fools."

"I must repeat, they have not that excuse; perhaps their risibility had been exhausted: after laughing three hours *apropos de rien*, it is time to be serious out of place. I will tell you what they *did* laugh at though — Miss Malcolm sang a song with a title I dare not attempt. There are two lines in it which I am going to mispronounce, but you are not Scotch, so I don't care for *you*, uncle darling.

> 'He had but a saxpence: he brake it in twa,
> And he gave me the half o't when he gaed awa.'

They laughed at that: a general giggle went round."

"Well, I must confess I don't see much to laugh at in that, Lucy."

"It would be odd if you did, uncle dear; why, it is pathetic."

"Pathetic? Oh, is it?"

"You naughty cunning uncle, you know it is — it is pathetic, and almost heroic — consider, dear: in a world where the very newspapers show how mercenary we all are, a poor young man is parted from his love: he has but one coin to go through the world with, and what does he do with it? scheme to make the sixpence a crown and to make the crown a pound? no: he breaks this one treasure in two, that both the poor things may have a silver token of love and a pledge of his return. I am sure if the poet had been here, he would have been quite angry with us for laughing at that line."

"Keep your temper! why, this is new from you, Lucy: but you women of sugar can all cauterize your own sex: the theme inspires you."

"Uncle! how dare you! are you not afraid I shall be angry one of these days? The gentlemen were equally concerned in this last enormity. Poor Jemmy, or Jammy,

with his devotion and tenderness that soothed, and his high spirit that supported the weaker vessel, were as funny to our male as to our female guests — so there, I saw but one that understood him, and did not laugh at him."

"Talboys, for a pound."

"Mr. Talboys ? no ! *you*, dear uncle, you did not laugh. I noticed it with all a niece's pride."

"Of course I didn't. Can I hear a word these ladies mew ? can I tell in what language even they are whining and miauling ? I have given up trying this twenty years and more."

"I return to my question," said Lucy hastily.

"And I to my solution; your three graces are three deed fools. If you can account for it in any other way, do."

"No, uncle dear: if you had happened to agree with me beforehand, I would; but, as you do not, I beg to be excused. But keep the paper, and the next time listen to the talk and the unmeaning laughter; you will find I have not exaggerated, and some day, dear, I will tell you how my mamma used to account for similar monstrosities in society."

"Here is a mysterious little toad. Well, Lucy, for all this you enjoyed yourself. I never saw you in better spirits."

"I am glad you saw that," said Lucy with a languid smile.

"And how Talboys came out."

"He did," sighed Lucy.

Here the young lady lighted softly on an ottoman and sank gracefully back with a weary-o'-the-world air: and when she had settled down like so much floss silk, fixing her eyes on the ceiling and doling her words out languidly yet thoughtfully — just above a whisper — "Uncle

darling," inquired she, "where are the men we have all heard of?"

"How should I know? What men?"

"Where are the men of sentiment, that can understand a woman, and win her to reveal her real heart, the best treasure she has, uncle dear?" She paused for a reply: none coming, she continued with decreasing energy: —

"Where are the men of spirit? the men of action? the upright, downright men, that heaven sends to cure us of our disingenuousness? Where are the heroes and the wits?" (an infinitesimal yawn) "where are the real men? And where are the women to whom such men can do homage without degrading themselves? where are the men who elevate a woman without making her masculine, and the women who can brighten and polish and yet not soften the steel of manhood — tell me, tell me instantly," said she with still great languor and want of earnestness, and her eyes remained fixed on the ceiling, in deep abstraction.

"They are all in this house at this moment," said Mr. Fountain coolly.

"Who, dear? I fear I was not attending to you. How rude!"

"Horrid. I say the men and women you inquire for are all in this house of mine;" and the old gentleman's eyes twinkled.

"Uncle! Heaven forgive you, and — oh, fie!"

"They are, upon my soul."

"Then they must be in some part of it I have not visited — are they in the kitchen?" (with a little saucy sneer).

"No, they are in the library."

"In the lib— ah, le malin!"

"They were never seen in a drawing-room and never will."

"Yet surely they must have lived in nature before they were embalmed in print," said Lucy, interrogating the ceiling again.

"The nearest approach you will meet to these paragons is Reginald Talboys," said Fountain, stoutly.

"Uncle, I do love you;" and Lucy rose with Juno-like slowness and dignity, and leaning over the old boy, kissed him with sudden small fury.

"Why?" asked he, eagerly, connecting this majestic squirt of affection with his last speech.

"Because you are such a nice, dear, *sarcastic* thing. Let us drink tea in the library to-morrow; then that will be an approach to" —

With this illegitimate full-stop the conversation ended, and Miss Fountain took a candle and sauntered to bed.

In church next Sunday, Lucy observed a young lady with a beaming face, who eyed her by stealth in all the interstices of devotion. She asked her uncle who was that pretty girl with a *nez retroussé*.

"A cocked nose? it must be my little friend, Eve Dodd. I didn't know she was come back."

"What a pretty face to be in such — such a — such an impossible bonnet! It has come down from another epoch." This not maliciously, but with a sort of tender womanly concern for beauty set off to the most disadvantage.

"Oh, hang her bonnet! she is full of fun; she shall drink tea with us; she is a great favorite of mine."

They quickened their pace and caught Eve Dodd just as she took a flying leap over some water that lay in her path, and showed a charming ankle; in those days female dress committed two errors that are disappearing: it revealed the whole foot by day, and hid a section of the bosom at night.

After the usual greetings Mr. Fountain asked Eve if

she would come over and drink tea with him and his niece.

Miss Dodd colored and cast a glance of undisguised admiration at Miss Fountain, but she said, "Thank you, sir, I am much obliged, but I am afraid I can't come; my brother would miss me."

"What? the sailor? is he at home?"

"Yes, sir, came home last night," and she clapped her hands by way of comment. "He has been with my mother all church time; so now it is my turn, and I don't know how to let him out of my sight yet awhile." And she gave a glance at Miss Fountain as much as to say, "You understand."

"Well, Eve," said Mr. Fountain good-humoredly, "we must not separate brother and sister," and he was turning to go.

"Perhaps, uncle," said Lucy, looking not at Mr. Fountain but at Eve, "Mr. — Mr." —

"David Dodd is my brother's name," said Eve quickly.

"Mr. David Dodd might be persuaded to give us the pleasure of his company too."

"Oh, yes, if I may bring dear David with me," burst out the child of nature, coloring again with pleasure.

"It will add to the obligation," said Lucy, finishing the sentence in character.

"So that is settled," said Mr. Fountain somewhat dryly.

As we were walking home together the courtier asked her uncle rather coldly, — "Who are these we have invited, dear?"

"Who are they? A pretty girl and a man she wouldn't come without."

"And who is the gentleman? what is he?"

"A marine animal: first mate of a ship."

"First mate? mate? is that what in the novels is called boatswain's mate?"

"Haw, haw, haw! I say, Lucy, ask him when he comes if he is the bosen's mate? how little Eve will blaze!"

"Then I shall ask him nothing of the kind; do tell me! — I know admirals — they swear — and captains, and, I think, lieutenants, and, *above all*, those little loves of midshipmen, strutting with their dirks and cocked hats, like warlike bantams; but I never met 'mates.' Mates?"

"That is because you have only been introduced to the Royal Navy: but there is another navy not so ornamental, but quite as useful, called the East India Company's."

"I am ashamed to say I never heard of it."

"I dare say not. Well, in this navy there are only two kinds of superior officers — the mates, and the captain. There are five or six mates. Young Dodd has been first mate some time, so I suppose he will soon be a captain."

"Uncle!"

"Well."

"Will this — mate — swear?"

"Clearly."

"There now. I do not like swearing on a Sunday. That wicked old admiral used to make me shudder."

"Oh," said Mr. Fountain, playing upon innocence, "he swore by the Supreme Being, I bet sixpence."

"Yes," said Lucy, in a low soft voice of angelic regret.

"Ah, he was in the Royal Navy. But this is a merchantman; you don't think he will presume to break into the monopoly of the superior branch. He will only swear by the wind and the weather. Thunder and squalls! Donner and blitzen! Handspikes and halyards! these are the innocent execrations of the merchant service — he, he! ho!"

"Uncle, can you be serious?" asked Lucy somewhat coldly; "if so, be so good as to tell me, is this gentleman — a — gentleman?"

"Well," replied the other coolly, "he is what I call a nondescript: like an attorney, or a surgeon, or a civil-engineer, or a banker, or a stock-broker, and all that sort of people. He can be a gentleman if he is thoroughly bent on it; you would in his place, and so should I; but these skippers don't turn their mind that way. Old families don't go into the merchant-service. Indeed, it would not answer. There they rise by — by — mere maritime considerations."

"Then, uncle," began Lucy, with dignified severity, "permit me to say that in inviting a nondescript — you showed — less consideration for me than — you — are in the habit — of doing, dearest."

"Well, have a headache and can't come down."

"So I certainly should; but most unfortunately I have an objection to telling fibs on a Sunday."

"You are quite right; we should rest from our usual employments one day, ha — ha! and so go at it fresher to-morrow, haw! ho! Come, Lucy, don't you be so exclusive. Eve Dodd is a merry girl; she comes and amuses me when you are not here; and David by all accounts is a fine young fellow, and as modest as a girl of fifteen; they will make me laugh, especially Eve, and it would be hard at my age, I think, if I might not ask who I like — to tea."

"So it would," put in Lucy hastily: she added coaxing, "it shall have its own way, it shall have what makes it laugh."

Long before eight o'clock the Fountains had forgotten that they had invited the Dodds.

Not so Eve. She was all in a flutter, and hesitated between two dresses, and by some blessed inspiration

decided for the plainest; but her principal anxiety was not about herself, but about David's deportment before the Queen of Fashion; for such report proclaimed Miss Fountain. "And those fine ladies are so satirical," said Eve to herself; "but I will lecture him going along."

Dinner-time, and by consequence tea-time, came earlier in those days. So about eight o'clock a tall square-shouldered young fellow was walking in the moonlight towards Font Abbey; Eve holding his hand and tripping by his side, and lecturing him on deportment very gravely while dancing round him and pulling him all manner of ways, like your solid tune with your gambolling accompaniment, a combination now in vogue. All of a sudden, without your leave, or by your leave, the said David caught this light fantastic object up in his arms and carried it on one shoulder.

On this she gave one little squeak, then, without a moment's interval, continued her lecture as if nothing had happened. She looked down from her perch, like a hen from a ladder, and laid down the law to David with seriousness and asperity.

"And just please to remember that they are people a long way above us, at least above what we are now since father fell into trouble, so don't you make too free; and Miss Fountain is the finest of all the fine ladies in the county."

"Then I am sorry we are going."

"No, you are not; she is a beautiful girl."

"That alters the case."

"No, it does not: don't chatter so, David, interrupting forever, but listen, and mind what I say, or I'll never take you anywhere again."

"Are you sure you are taking me now?" asked David dryly.

"Why not, Mr. David?" retorted Eve from his shoul-

der. "Didn't I hear you tell how you took the Combermere out of harbor, and how you brought her into port: she didn't take you out and bring you home, eh?"

"Had me there, though."

"Yes, and what is more, you are not skipper of the Combermere yet; and never will be; but I am skipper of you."

"Ashore; not a doubt of it," said David with cool indifference. He despised terrestrial distinction, courting only such as was marine.

"Then I command you to let me down this instant: do you hear, crew?"

"No," objected David, "if I put you overboard you can't command the vessel, and ten to one if the craft does not founder for want of seawomanship on the quarter-deck. However," added he in a relenting tone, "wait till we get to that puddle shining on ahead, and there I'll disembark you."

"No, David, do let me down, that is a good soul — I am tired," added she peevishly.

"Tired! of what?"

"Of doing nothing, stupid — there, let me down, dear; won't you, darling? then take that, love" (a box on the ear).

"Well, I've got it," said David dryly.

"Keep it then, till the next: no, he won't let me down — now he has got both my hands in one of his paws, and he will carry me every foot of the way now, I know, the obstinate pig."

"We all have our little characters, Eve. Well, I have got your wrists, but you have got your tongue, and that is the stronger weapon of the two, you know, and you are on the poop; so give your orders, and the ship shall be worked accordingly — likewise I will enter all your remarks on good breeding into my log."

Here unluckily David tapped his forehead to signify that the log in question was a metaphorical one, the log of memory. Eve had him again directly. She freed a claw. "So this is your log, is it?" cried she, tapping it as hard as she could; "well, it does sound like wood of some sort. Well, then, David, dear, you wretch, I mean, promise me not to laugh loud."

"Well, I will not: it is odds if I laugh at all. I wish we were to moor alongside mother instead of running into this strange port."

"Stuff! think of Miss Fountain's figure-head — nor tell too many stories — and above all, for heaven's sake do keep the poor dear old sea out of sight for once."

"Ay, ay, that stands to reason."

By this time they were at Font Abbey, and David deposited his fair burden gently on the stone steps of the door: she opened it without ceremony, and bustled into the dining-room crying, "I have brought David, sir, and here he is," and she accompanied David's bow with a corresponding movement of her hand, the knuckles downwards.

The old gentleman awoke with a start, rubbed his eyes, shook hands with the pair, and proposed to go up to Lucy in the drawing-room.

Now it happened unluckily that Miss Fountain had been to the library and taken down one or two of those men and women who according to her uncle exist only on paper, and certain it is she was in charming company, when she heard her visitors' steps and voices coming up the stairs. Had those visitors seen the vexed expression of her face as she laid down the book, they would have instantly 'bout ship and home again; but that sour look dissolved away as they came through the open door.

On coming in they saw a young lady seated on a sofa.

Apparently she did not see them enter: her face *hap-*

pened to be averted; but ere they had taken three steps she turned her face, saw them, rose and took two steps to meet them, all beaming with courtesy, kindness, and quiet satisfaction, at their arrival.

She gave her hand to Eve.

"This is my brother, Miss Fountain."

Miss Fountain instantly swept David a courtesy with such a grace and flow, coupled with an engaging smile, that the sailor was fascinated and gazed instead of bowing.

Eve had her finger ready to poke him, when he recovered himself and bowed low.

Eve played the accompaniment with her hand, knuckles down.

They sat down; cups of tea, etc., were brought round to each by John. It was bad tea — made out of the room — catch a human being making good tea in which it is not to share.

Mr. Fountain was only half awake.

Eve was more or less awed by Lucy; David, tutored by Eve, held his tongue altogether, or gave short answers.

"This must be what the novels call a sea-cub," thought Miss Fountain.

The fiends, Propriety and Restraint, presided over the innocent banquet, and a dismal evening set in.

The first infraction of this polite tranquillity came, I blush to say, from the descendant of John de Fonte. He exploded in a yawn of magnitude; to cover this the young lady began hastily to play her old game of setting people astride their topic, and she selected David Dodd for the experiment. She put on a warm curiosity about the sea, and ships, and the countries men visit in them. Then occurred a droll phenomenon: David flashed with animation, and began full and intelligent answers; then catching his sister's eye came to unnatural full stops;

and so warmly and skilfully was he pressed that it cost him a gigantic effort to avoid giving much amusement and instruction. The courtier saw this hesitation, and the vivid flashes of intelligence, and would not lose her prey. She drew him with all a woman's tact and with a warmth so well feigned that it set him on real fire. His instinct of politeness would not let him go on all night giving short answers to inquiring beauty. He turned his eye, which glowed now like live coal, towards that enticing voice, and presently, like a ship that has been hanging over the water ever so long on the last rollers, with one gallant glide he took the sea and towed them all like little cockle-boats in his wake. From sea to sea, from port to port, from tribe to tribe, from peril to peril, from feat to feat, David whirled his wonder-struck hearers, and held them panting by the quadruple magic of a tuneful voice, a changing eye, an ardent soul, and truth at first-hand.

They sat thrilled and surprised, most of all Miss Fountain. To her things great and real had up to that moment been mere vague outlines seen through a mist. Moreover her habitual courtesy had hitherto drawn out pumps : but now, when least expected, all in a moment, as a spark fires powder, it let off a man.

A sailor is a live book of travels. Check your own vanity (if you possibly can), and set him talking, you shall find him full of curious and profitable matter.

The Fountains did not know this, and, even if they had, Dodd would have taken them by surprise ; for besides being a sailor and a sea-enthusiast, he was a fellow of great capacity and mental vigor.

He had not skimmed so many books as we have ; but I fear he had sucked more. However, his main strength did not lie there — he was not a paper man, and this — oh men of paper, and oh C. R. in particular — gave

him a tremendous advantage over you that Sunday evening.

The man whose knowledge all comes from reading accumulates a great number of what? facts? no, of the shadows of facts; shadows, often so thin, indistinct, and featureless, that, when one of the facts themselves runs against him in real life, he does not know his old friend, round about which he has written a smart leader in a journal, and a ponderous trifle in the Polysyllabic Review.

But this sailor had stowed into his mental hold not fact-shadows, but the glowing facts all alive O. For thirteen years, man and boy, he had beat about the globe, with real eyes, real ears, and real brains ever at work. He had drunk living knowledge like a fish, and at fountain-heads.

Yet to utter intellectual wealth nobly, two things more are indispensable, the gift of language and a tunable voice, which last does not always come by talking with tempests.

Well David Dodd had sucked in a good deal of language from books and tongues; not indeed the Norman-French and demi-Latin, and jargon of the schools, printed for English in impotent old trimestrials for the further fogification of cliques, but he had laid by a fair store of the best, of the monosyllables, the Saxon, the soul and vestal fire of the great English tongue.

So he was never at a loss for words, simple, clear, strong, like blasts of a horn.

His voice at this period was mellow and flexible. He was a mimic too; the brighter things he had seen, whether glories of nature or acts of man, had turned to pictures in this man's mind. He flashed these pictures one after another upon the trio: he peopled the soft and cushioned drawing-room with twenty different tribes and

varieties of man — barbarous, semi-barbarous, and civilized; their curious customs, their songs and chants and dances and struts and actual postures.

The aspect of famous shores from the sea, glittering coasts, dark straits, volcanic rocks defying sea and sky, and warm delicious islands clothed with green, that burst on the mariner's sight after rugged places and scowling skies.

The adventures of one unlucky ship, the Connemara, on a single whaling cruise, on the coast of Peru. The first slight signs of a gale seen only by the careful skipper. The hasty preparation for it: all hands to shorten sail; then the moaning of the wind high up in the sky. All hands to reef sail now — the whirl and whoo of the gale as it came down on them. The ship careening as it caught her; the speaking-trumpet, the captain howling his orders through it amid the tumult.

The floating icebergs — the ship among them picking her way in and out a hundred deaths. Baffled by the unyielding wind off Cape Horn, sailing six weeks on opposite tacks and ending just where they began, weather-bound in sight of the gloomy Horn. Then the terrors of a land-locked bay, and a lee shore: the ship tacking, writhing, twisting, to weather one jutting promontory; the sea and safety is on the other side of it, land and destruction on this — the attempt, the hope, the failure; then the stout-hearted skilful captain would try one rare manœuvre to save ship, cargo, and crew. He would club-haul her, "and if that fails, my lads, there is nothing but up mainsail, up helm, run her slap ashore, and lay her bones on the softest bit of rock we can pick."

Long ere this the poor ship had become a live thing to all these four, and they hung breathless on her fate.

Then he showed how a ship is club-hauled, and told how nobly the old Connemara behaved (ships are apt to

when well handled — doubled-barrelled guns ditto); and how the wind blew fiercer and the rocks seemed to open their mouths for her, and how she hung and vibrated between safety and destruction, and at last how she writhed and slipped between Death's lips, yet escaped his teeth, and tossed and tumbled in triumph on the great but fair-fighting sea. And how they got at last to the whaling-ground and could not find a whale for many a weary day, and the novices said, "they were all killed before we sailed," and how, as uncommon ill luck is apt to be balanced by uncommon good luck, one fine evening they fell in with a whole shoal of whales at play, jumping clean into the air sixty feet long and coming down each with a splash like thunder; even the captain had never seen such a game: and how the crew were for lowering the boats and going at them, but the captain would not let them — a hundred playful mountains of fish, the smallest weighing thirty ton, flopping down happy-go-lucky, he did not like the looks of it. "The boat will be at the mercy of chance among all those tails, and we are not lucky enough to throw at random. No — since the beggars have taken to dancing for a change, let them dance all night, to-morrow they shall pay the piper." How at peep of day the man at the mast-head saw ten whales about two leagues off on the weather-bow, how the ship tacked and stood towards them, how she weathered on one of monstrous size, and how he and the other youngsters were mad to lower the boat and go after it, and how the captain said, "Ye lubbers, can't ye see that is a right whale, and not worth a button? Look here away over the quarter at this whale: see how low she spouts: she is a sperm whale, and worth seven hundred pounds if she was only dead and towed alongside."

"'That she shall be in about a minute,' cried one, and

indeed we were all in a flame, the boat was lowered, and didn't I worship the skipper when he told me off to be one of her crew!

"I was that eager to be in at the whale's death, I didn't recollect that there might be smaller brutes in danger.

"Just before the oars fell into the water the skipper looked down over the bulwarks, and says he to one of us that had charge of the rope that is fast to the boat at one end and to the harpoon at the other: 'Now, Jack, you are a new hand — mind all I told you last night, or your mother will see me come ashore without you, and that will vex her; and my lads, remember if there is a single lubberly hitch in that line you will none of you come up the ship's side again.'

"'All right, captain,' says Jack, and we pulled off singing —

> 'And spring to your oars, and make your boat fly,
> And when you come near her beware of her eye' —

till the coxswain bade us hold our lubberly tongues, and not frighten the whales; however we soon found we wanted all our breath for our work and more too." Then David painted the furious race after the whale, and "how the boat gradually gained, and how at last, as he was grinding his teeth and pulling like mad, he heard a sound ahead like a hundred elephants wallowing. And now he hoped to see the harpooner leave his oar and rise and fling his weapon; but that moment, up flukes, a tower of fish was seen a moment in the air with a tail fin at the top of it 'just about the size of this room we are sitting in, ladies,' and down the whale sounded; then it was pull on again in her wake, according as she headed in sounding: pull for the dear life: and after a while the oarsmen saw the steersman's eyes prying over the sea

turn like hot coals; the men caught fire at this and put their very backbones into each stroke, and the boat skimmed and flew: suddenly the steersman cried out fiercely, — 'Stand up, harpoon!' up rose the harpooner, *his* eye like a hot coal, now: the men saw nothing; they must pull fiercer than ever: the harpooner balanced his iron, swayed his body lightly, and the harpoon hissed from him. A soft thud — then a heaving of the water all round, a slap that sounded like a church-tower falling flat upon an acre of boards, and drenched and blinded and half smothered us all in spray, and at the same moment away whirled the boat, dancing and kicking in the whale's foaming, bubbling wake, and we holding on like grim death by the thwarts, not to be spun out into the sea."

"Delightful!" cried Miss Fountain, "the waves bounded beneath you like a steed that knows its rider — pray continue."

"Yes, Miss Fountain; now of course you can see that if the line ran out too easy the whale would leave us astern altogether, and that if it jammed or ran too hard, she would tow us under water."

"Of course we see," said Eve, ironically, "we understand everything by instinct — hang explanations when I'm excited; go ahead, do!"

"Then I won't explain how it is, or why it is, but I'll just let you know that two or three hundred fathom of line are passed round and round the boat from stem to stern and back, and carried in and out between the oarmen as they sit. Well, it was all new to me then; but when the boat began jumping and rocking, and the line began whizzing in and out and screaming and smoking like — there now, fancy a machine, a complicated one, made of poisonous serpents, the steam on, and you sitting in the middle of the works with not an inch to

spare, on the crankest, rockingest, jumpingest, bumpingest, rollingest cradle that ever" —

"David!" said Eve, solemnly.

"Hallo!" sang out David.

"Don't!"

"Oh! yes, do!" cried Lucy, slightly clasping her hands.

"If this little black ugly line was to catch you, it would spin you out of the boat like a shuttlecock; if it held you, it would cut you in two, or hang you to death and drown you all at one time: and if it got jammed against anything alive or dead that could stand the strain, it would take the boat and crew down to the coral before you could wink twice."

"Oh dear," said Lucy, "then I don't think I like it now; it is too terrible; pray go on, Mr.--Mr." —

"Well, Miss Fountain, when a novice like me saw this black serpent twisting and twirling, and smoking and hissing in and out among us, I remembered the skipper's words, and I hailed Jack: it was he had laid the line; he was in the bow.

"'Jack,' said I. 'Hallo,' said he. 'For God's sake, are there any hitches in the line?' said I.

"'Not as I *knows* on,' says he, much cooler than you sit there, and that is a sailor all over. Well, she towed us about a mile, and then she was blown, and we hauled up on the line and came up with her and drove lances into her, till she spouted blood instead of salt water, and went into her flurry and rolled suddenly over our way, dead, and was within a foot of smashing us to atoms; but if she had it would only have been an accident, for she was past malice, poor thing; then we took possession, planted our flagstaff in her spouting hole, you know, and pulled back to the ship, and she came down and anchored to the whale, and then for the first time I

saw the blubber stripped off a whale and hoisted by tackles into the ship's hold, which is as curious as any part of the business, but a dirtyish job and not fit for the present company; and I dare say that is enough about whales."

"No! no! no!"

"Well, then, shall I tell you how one old whale knocked our boat clean into the air, bottom uppermost, and how we swam round her, and managed to right her?"

"And went back to the ship and had your tea in bed and your clothes dried?"

"No, Eve," replied David with the utmost simplicity; "we got in and to work again and killed the whale in less than half an hour, and planted our flag on her, and away after another."

Then he told them how they harpooned one right whale, and by good luck were able to make her fast to the stern of the ship, "and if you will believe me, Miss Fountain, though there was just a breath on and off right aft, and the foresail jib and mizzen all set to catch it, she towed the ship astern a good cable's length, and the last thing was, she broke the harpoon shaft just below the line, and away she swam right in the wind's eye."

"And there was an end of her, and your nasty cruel harpoon, and — oh, I'm so pleased."

"No, there wasn't, Eve; we heard of both fish and harpoon again; but not for a good many years."

"Mr. Dodd!"

"Yes, Miss Fountain; it is curious, like many things that fall out at sea; but not so wonderful as her towing a ship of four hundred tons with the foresail, mizzen, and jib all aback. Well, sir, did you ever hear of Nantucket? It is a port in the United States; and our harpooner happened to be there full four years after we lost this

whale. Some Yankee whalers were treating him to the best of grog, and it was brag Briton, brag Yankee, according to custom whenever these two meet. Well, our man had no more invention than a stone; so he was getting the worst of it, till he bethought him of this whale; so he up and told how he had struck a right whale in the Pacific, and she had towed the ship with her sails aback, at least her foresail, mizzen, and jib; only he didn't tell it short like me, but as long as the Red Sea, with the day and the hour, the latitude (within four or five degrees, I take it), and what we had done a week before, and what we had not done, all by way of prologue, and for fear of weathering the Horn, tic, tic, the point, of the story too soon. When he had done there was a general howl of laughter, and they began to cap lies with him, and so they bantered him most cruelly by all accounts; but at last a long, silent chap, weather-beaten to the color of rosewood, put in his word.

"'What was the ship's name, mate?'

"'The Connemara,' says he.

"'And what is your name?' So he told him, 'Jem Green.'

"The other brings a great mutton fist down on the table, and makes all the glasses dance. 'You stay at your moorings till I come back,' says he. 'I have got something belonging to you, Jem Green,' and he sheered off. The others lay to and passed the grog. Presently, the long one comes back with a harpoon steel in his hand — there was 'Connemara' stamped on it, and also 'James Green' graved with a knife. 'Is that yours?' 'Is my hand mine?' says Jem; 'but wasn't there a broken shaft to it?'

"'There was,' says the Yankee harpooner, 'I cut it out.'

"'Well!' says Jem, 'that is the harpoon we were fast by to this very whale — where did you kill her?'

"'In the Greenland seas.' And he whips out his private log: 'here you are,' says he — 'March 25, 1820, latitude so and so — killed a right whale, lost half the blubber owing to the carcass sinking — cut an English harpoon out of her.'

"'Avast there, mate!' cries Jem, and he whips out *his* log; 'overhaul that.' The other harpooner overhauled it; 'mates, look here,' says he, 'I reckon we han't fathomed the critters yet. The Britisher struck her in the Pacific on the 5th of March, and we killed her off Greenland on the 25th, five thousand miles of water by the lowest reckoning.' By this time there were a dozen heads jammed together, like bees swarming, over the two logs. 'She got a wound in the Pacific! "Hallo!" says she — "this is no sea for a lady to live in;" so she up helm and right away across the pole into the Atlantic, and met her death.'"

"Your story has an interest you little suspect, young gentleman. If this is true, the north-west passage is proved."

"That has been proved a hundred times, sir, and in a hundred ways; the only riddle is to find it. The man that tells you there is not a north-west passage is no sailor, and the fish that can't find it is not a whale; for there is not a young suckling no bigger than this room that does not know that passage as well as a mid on his first voyage knows the way to the mizzen top through lubber's hole — how tired you must be of whales, ladies!"

"Oh, no!"

"Kill us one more, David! I love bloodshed — to hear of."

"Well, now, I don't think that can be Miss Fountain's taste, to look at her."

Then David told them how he had fallen in with a sperm whale dead of disease, floating as high as a

frigate; how, with a very light breeze, the skipper had crept down towards her; how at half a mile distance the stench of her was severe, but, as they neared her, awful — then so intolerable, that the skipper gave the crew leave to go below, and close the lee-ports. So there were but two men left on the brig's deck, and a ship's company that a hurricane would not have driven from their duty, skulked before a foul smell; but such a smell — a smell that struck a chill and a loathing to the heart and soul and marrow-bone, a smell like the gases in a foul mine; "it would have suffocated us in a few minutes if we had been shut up along with it." Then he told how the skipper and he stuffed their noses and ears with cotton steeped in aromatic vinegar, and their mouths with pig-tail (by which, as it subsequently appeared, Lucy understood pork or bacon in some form unknown to her narrow experience), and lighted short pipes and breached the brig upon the putrescent monster, and grappled to it, and then the skipper jumped on it, a basket slung to his back, and a rope fast under his shoulders in case of accidents, and drove his spade in behind the whale's side-fin.

"His spade, Mr. Dodd?"

"His whale-spade; it is as sharp as a razor;" and how the skipper dug a hole in the whale as big as a well and four feet deep, and, after a long search, gave a shout of triumph, and picked out some stuff that looked like Gloucester cheese; and when he had nearly filled his basket with this stuff, he slacked the grappling iron, and David hauled him on board, and the carcass dropped astern, and the captain sang out for rum, and drank a small tumbler neat and would have fainted away, spite of his precautions, but for the rum, and how a heavenly perfume was now on deck fighting with that horrid odor. And how the crew smelled it and crept timidly up one

by one, and how "the Gloster cheese was a great favorite of yours, ladies; it was the king of perfumes; ambergris; there is some of it in all your richest scents; and the knowing skipper had made a hundred guineas in the turn of the hand. So knowledge is wealth, you see, and the sweet can be got out of the sour by such as study nature."

"Don't preach, David, especially after just telling a fib — a hundred guineas!"

"I am wrong," said David.

"Very wrong, indeed."

"There were eight pounds; and he sold it a guinea the ounce to a wholesale chemist; so that looks to me like one hundred and twenty-eight pounds."

Then David left the whales, and encouraged by bright eyes, and winning smiles, and warm questions, sang higher strains.

Ships in dire distress at sea, yet saved by God's mercy and the cool invincible courage of captain and crew, — great ships run ashore, the waves breaking them up, the rigging black with the despairing crew eying the watery death that tumbled and gaped and roared for them below — and then little shore boats, manned by daring hearts, launched into the surf, and going out to the great ship and her peril, risking more life for the chance of saving life. And he did not present the bare skeletons of daring acts; those grand morgues, the journals, do that. There lie the dry bones of giant epics waiting genius's hand to make them live. He gave them not only the broad outward facts, the bones; but those smaller touches that are the body and soul of a story, true or false; wanting which the deeds of heroes sound an almanac; above all he gave them glimpses not only of what men acted but what they felt, what passed in the hearts of men perishing at sea, in sight of land,

houses, fires on the hearth, and out-stretched hands, and in the hearts of the heroes that ran their boats into the surf and Death's maw to save them, and of the lookers on, admiring, fearing, shivering, glowing, and of the women that sobbed and prayed ashore with their backs to the sea; just able to risk lover, husband, and son, for the honor of manhood and the love of Christ, but not able to look on at their own flesh and blood diving so deep, and lost so long, in cockle-shells between the hills of waves.

Such great acts, great feelings, great perils, and the gushes that crowned all of holy triumph, when the boats came in with the dripping and saved, and man for a moment looked greater than the sea and the wind and death, this seaman poured hot from his own manly heart into quick and womanly bosoms, that heaved visibly and glowed with admiring sympathy and fluttered with gentle fear.

And after a while, though not at first, David's yarns began to contain a double interest to one of the party — Miss Fountain. Those who live to please get to read character at sight, and David, though in these more noble histories he scarcely named himself, was laying a full-length picture of his own mind bare to these keen feminine eyes. As for old Fountain, he was charmed, and saw nothing more than David showed him outright. But the women sat flashing secret intelligence backwards and forwards from eye to eye, after the manner of their sex.

"Do you see?" said one lady's eyes.

"Yes," replied the other. "He was concerned in this feat, though he does not say so."

"Oh! you agree with me? Then we are right," replied the first pair of speakers.

"There again, look, this sailor whom he describes as a fellow that happened to be ashore at that foreign port

with nothing better to do, and who went out with the English smugglers to save the brig when the natives durst not launch a boat ?"

"Himself ! not a doubt of it."

And so the blue and hazel lightning went dancing to and fro; ay, even when the tale took a sorrowful turn and dimmed these bright orbs of intelligence, the lightning struggled through the dew, and David was read and discussed by gleams and glances and flashes, without a word spoken. And he, all unconscious that he sat between a pair of telegraphs, and heating more and more under his great recollections, and his hearers' sympathy, enthralled them with his tuneful voice, his glowing face, his lion eye, and his breathing-burning histories : heart to dare and do, yet heart to feel, and brain and tongue to tell a deed well, are rare allies, yet here they met. He mastered his hearers, and played on their breasts as David played the harp, and perhaps Achilles; Bochsa never, nor any of his tribe. He made the old man forget his genealogies, his small ambition, his gout, his years, and be a boy again an hour or two in thought and blood and early fire. He made the women's bosoms pant and swell, and seem to aspire to be the nests and cradles of heroes, and their eyes flash and glisten, and their cheeks flush and grow pale by turns; and the four little papered walls that confined them seemed to fall without noise, and they were away in thought out of a carpeted temple of wax, small talk, nonentity, and nonentities, away to sea-breezes that they almost felt in their hair and round their temples as their hearts rose and fell upon a broad swell of passion, perils, waves, male men, realities. The spell was at its height, when the sea-wizard's eye fell on the mantel-piece. Died in a moment his noble ardor. "Why it's eight bells," said he servilely; then, doggedly, "time to turn in."

"Hang that clock!" shouted Mr. Fountain, "I'll have it turned out of the room."

Said Lucy, with gentle enthusiasm, "It must be beautiful to be a sailor, and to have seen the real world, and above all to be brave and strong like Mr. ——, must it not, uncle?" And she looked askant at David's square shoulders and lion eye, and for the first time in her life there crossed her an undefined instinct that this gentleman must be the male of her species.

"As for his courage," said Eve, "that we have only his own word for."

David grinned.

"Nor even that," replied Lucy, "for I observed he spoke but little of himself."

"I did not notice that," said Eve, pertly; "but as for his strength, he certainly is as strong as a great bear, and as rude. What do you think? my lord carried me all the way from the top of the green lane to your house, and I am no feather."

"No, a skein of silk," put in David.

"I asked the gentleman politely to put me down, and he wouldn't, so then I boxed his ears."

"Oh! how could you?"

"Oh! bless you! he never hits me again; he is too great a coward. And the great mule carried me all the more — carried me to your very door."

"I almost think, I believe, I could guess why he carried you, if you will not be offended at my assuming the interpreter," said Lucy, looking at Eve, and speaking at David. "You have thin shoes on, Miss Dodd; now I remember the gravel ends at green lane and the grass begins; so, from what we now know of Mr. Dodd, perhaps he carried you that you might not have damp feet."

"Nothing of the kind — yes it was, though, by his coloring up. La, David, dear boy!"

"What is a man alongside for, but to keep a girl out of mischief?" said David brusquely.

"Pray convert all your sex to that view," laughed Lucy.

So now they were going. Then Mr. Fountain thanked David for the pleasant evening he had given them; then David blushed and stammered; he had a veneration for old age; another of his superstitions.

Her uncle's lead gave Lucy an opportunity she instantly seized. "Mr. Dodd, you have taken us into a new world of knowledge: we never were so interested in our lives." At this point-blank praise David blushed, and was anything but comfortable, and began to back out of it all with a curt bow. Then, as the ladies can advance when a man of merit retreats, Lucy went the length of putting out her hand with a sweet grateful smile; so he took it, and, in the ardor of encouraging so much spirit and modesty, she unconsciously pressed his hand. On this delicious pressure, light as it was, he raised his full brown eye, and gave her such a straightforward look of manly admiration and pleasure, that she blushed faintly, and drew back a little in her turn.

"Well, Davy dear, how do you like the Fountains?"

"Eve, she is a clipper!"

"And the old gentleman?"

"He was very friendly. What do *you* think of her?"

"She is an out-and-out woman of the world — and very agreeable, as insincere people generally are. I like her, because she was so polite to you."

"Oh, that is your reading of her, is it?"

The rest of the walk passed almost in silence.

"Uncle, I am not sleepy to-night."

"No more am I: that young rascal has set me on fire

with his yarns. Who would have thought that awkward cub had so much in him?"

"Awkward; but not a cub: say rather a black swan; and you know, uncle, a swan is an awkward thing on land, but when it takes the water it is glorious, and that man was glorious; but — Da—vid — Do—dd."

"I don't know whether he was glorious, but I know he amused me, and I'll have him to tea three times a week while he lasts."

"Uncle, do you believe such an unfortunate combination of sounds is his real name?" asked Lucy, gravely.

"Why, who would be mad enough to feign such a name?"

"That is true, but now tell me — if he should ever think of marrying with such a name?"

"Then there will be two David Dodds in the world, Mr. and Mrs."

"I don't think so; he will be merciful, and take her name instead of she his, he is so good-natured."

"Ordinary sponsors would have been content with Samuel or Nathan, but no, his ones must call in 'apt alliteration's artful aid,' and have the two 'd's.'"

Lucy assented with a smile, and so, being no longer under the spell of the enthusiast and the male, the genealogist and the fine lady took the rise out of what Miss Fountain was pleased to call his im-possible title:

Da—vid Dodd.

Lucy was not called on to write any more formal invitations to Mr. Talboys. Her uncle used merely to say to her, "Talboys dines with us to-day." She made no remark, she respected her uncle's preference; besides — the pony. Of these trios Mr. Fountain was the true soul. He had to blow the coals of conversation right and left. It is very good of me not to compare him to the Tropic between two frigid zones. At first he took

his nap as usual; for he said to himself, "Now I have started them, they can go on." Besides, he had seen pictures in the shop windows of an old fellow dozing and then the young ones "popping."

Dozing off with this idea uppermost, he used to wake with his eyes shut and his ears wide open; but it was to hear drowsy monosyllables dropping out at intervals like minute-guns, or to find Lucy gone and Talboys reading the coals. Then the schemer sighed, and took to strong coffee soon after dinner, and gave up his nap; and its loss impaired his temper the rest of the evening.

He indemnified himself for these laborious and sleepless dinners by asking David Dodd and his sister to tea thrice a week, on the off-nights. This joyous pair amused the poor old gentleman, and he was not the man to deny himself a pleasure without a powerful motive.

"What, again so soon?" hazarded Lucy, one day that he bade her invite them. "I hardly know how to word my invitation: I have exhausted the forms."

"If you say another word, I'll make them come every night. Am I to have no amusement?" he added, in a deep tone of reproach, "they make me laugh."

"Ah! I forgot, forgive me."

"Little hypocrite: don't they you too, pray? why, you are as dull as ditch-water the other evenings."

"Me, dear, dull with you?"

"Yes, Miss Crocodile; dull with a pattern uncle, and his friend — and your admirer." He watched her to see how she would take this last word. Catch her taking it at all. "I am never dull with you, dear uncle," said she, "but a third person, however estimable, is a certain restraint; and when that person is not very lively" — Here the explanation came quietly to an untimely end, like those old tunes that finish in the middle or thereabouts.

"But that is the very thing; what do I ask them for to-night, but to thaw Talboys?"

"To thaw Talboys? he, he!" Lucy seemed so tickled by this expression that the old gentleman was sorry he had used it.

"I mean they will make him laugh;" then, to turn it off, he said hastily, "And don't forget the fiddle, Lucy."

"Oh yes, dear, please let me forget that, and then perhaps they may forget to bring it."

"Why you pressed him to bring it, I heard you."

"Did I?" said Lucy ruefully.

"I am sure I thought you were mad after a fiddle — you seconded Eve so warmly; so that was only your extravagant politeness after all. I am glad you are caught. I like a fiddle; so there is no harm done."

Yes, reader, you have hit it. Eve, who openly quizzed her brother, but secretly adored him, and loved to display all his accomplishments, had egged on Mr. Fountain to ask David to bring his violin next time. Lucy had shivered internally — "Now of all the screeching, whining things that I dislike, a violin!" — and thus thinking gushed out, "Oh, pray do, Mr. Dodd," with a gentle warmth that settled the matter, and imposed on all around.

This evening then the Dodds came to tea.

They found Lucy alone in the drawing-room, and Eve engaged her directly in sprightly conversation, into which they soon drew David, and, interchanging a secret signal, plied him with a few artful questions, and — launched him. But the one sketch I gave of his manner and matter must serve again and again. Were I to retail to the reader all the droll, the spirited, the exciting things, he told his hearers, there would be no room for my own little story; and we are all so egotistical. Suffice it to say, the living book of travels was inexhaustible; his

observation and memory were really marvellous, and his enthusiasm coupled with his accuracy of detail had still the power to enthrall his hearers.

"Mr. Dodd," said Lucy, "now I see why Eastern kings have a story-teller always about them, a live story-teller; would not you have one, Miss Dodd, if you were queen of Persia?"

"Me? I'd have a couple: one to make me laugh, one miserable."

"One would be enough if his resources were equal to your brother's. Pray go on, Mr. Dodd. It was madness to interrupt you with small talk."

David hung his head a moment; then lifted it with a smile, and sailed in the spirit into the China seas, and there told them how the Chinamen used to slip on board his ship and steal with supernatural dexterity, and the sailors catch them by the tails, which, they observing, came over with their tails soaped like pigs' at a village feast; and how some fool-hardy sailors would venture into the town at the risk of their lives, and how one day they had to run for it, and when they got to the shore their boat was stolen, and they had to 'bout ship and fight it out, and one fellow who knew the natives had loaded the sailors' guns with currant-jelly. Make ready — present — fire! In a moment the troops of the Celestial Empire smarted, and were spattered with seeming gore, and fled yelling.

Then he told how a poor comrade of his was nabbed and clapped in prison, and his hands and feet were to be cut off at sunrise; himself at noon. It was midnight, and strict orders from the quarter-deck that no man should leave the ship; what was to be done? It was a moonlight night. They met silent as death between decks, — daren't speak above a whisper, for fear the officers should hear them. His messmate was crying

like a child. One proposed one thing, one another; but it was all nonsense, and we knew it was, and at sunrise poor Tom must die.

At last up jumps one fellow, and cries, "Messmates, I've got it! Tom isn't dead yet!"

This was the moment Mr. Fountain and Mr. Talboys chose for coming into the drawing-room, of course. Mr. Fountain, with a shade of hesitation and awkwardness, introduced the Dodds to Mr. Talboys; he bowed a little stiffly, and there was a pause. Eve could not repress a little movement of nervous impatience. "David is telling us one of his nonsensical stories, sir," said she to Mr. Fountain, "and it is so interesting; go on, David."

"Well, but," said David modestly, "it isn't everybody that likes these sea yarns as you do, Eve. No, I'll belay, and let my betters get a word in now."

"You are more merciful than most story-tellers, sir," said Talboys.

Eve tossed her head and looked at Lucy, who with a word could have the story on again. That young lady's face expressed general complacency, politeness, and "*tout m'est egal.*" Eve could have beat her for not taking David's part. "Double face!" thought she. She then devoted herself with the sly determination of her sex to trotting David out, and making him the principal figure in spite of the new-comer.

But as fast as she heated him, Talboys cooled him. We are all great at something or other, small or great. Talboys was a first-rate freezer. He was one of those men who cannot shine, but can eclipse. They darken all but a vain man by casting a dark shadow of trite sentences on each luminary. The vain man insults them directly, and so gets rid of them.

Talboys kept coming across honest enthusiastic David with little remarks, each skilfully discordant with the

rising sentiment. Was he droll, Talboys did a bit of polite gravity on him; was he warm in praise of some gallant action, chill irony trickled on him from T.

His flashes of romance were extinguished by neat little dicta, embodying sordid and false, but current, views of life. The gauze wings of eloquence unsteeled by vanity will not bear this repeated dabbing with prose glue, so David collapsed and Talboys conquered — "spell" benumbed "charm." The sea-wizard yield to the petrifier, and "could no more," as the poets say. Talboys smiled superior. But, as his art was a purely destructive one, it ended with its victim; not having an idea of his own in his skull, the commentator, in silencing his text, silenced himself, and brought the society to a stand-still. Eve sat with flashing eyes. Lucy's twinkled with sly fun, this made Eve angrier. She tried another tack.

"You asked David to bring his fiddle," said she sharply, "but I suppose *now*" —

"Has he brought it?" asked Mr. Fountain eagerly.

"Yes, he has, I made him," with a glance of defiance at Talboys.

Mr. Fountain rang the bell directly, and sent for the fiddle. It came, David took it, and tuned it, and made it discourse. Lucy leaned a little back in her chair, and wore her "*tout m'est egal*" face, and Eve watched her like a cat. First her eyes opened with mild astonishment, then her lips parted in a smile; after a while a faint color came and went, and her eyes deepened and deepened in color and glistened with the dewy light of sensibility.

A fiddle wrought this, or rather genius, in whose hand a jew's-harp is the lyre of Orpheus, a fiddle the harp of David, a chisel a hewer of heroic forms, a brush or a pen the sceptre of souls, and, alas! a nail a picklock.

Inside every fiddle is a soul, but a coy one. The nine

hundred and ninety-nine never win it. They play rapid tunes, but the soul of beautiful gayety is not there; slow tunes, very slow ones, wherein the spirit of whining is mighty, but the sweet soul of pathos is absent; doleful, not nice and tearful. Then comes the heaven-born fiddler,[1] who can make himself cry with his own fiddle. David had a touch of this witchcraft. Though a sound musician and reasonably master of his instrument, he could not fly in a second up and down it, tickling the finger-board, and scratching the strings without an atom of tone, as the mechanical monkeys do that boobies call fine players.

> Great Orpheus played so well, he moved Old Nick,
> But these move nothing but their fiddle-stick.[2]

But he could make you laugh and crow with his fiddle, and could make you jump up, ætat. sixty, and snap your fingers at old age and propriety, and propose a jig to two bishops and one master of the rolls, and, they declining, pity them without a shade of anger, and substitute three chairs: then sit unabashed and smiling at the past; and the next minute he could make you cry or near it. In a word, he could evoke the soul of that wonderful wooden shell and bid it discourse with the souls and hearts of his hearers.

Meantime Lucy Fountain's face would have interested a subtle student of her sex.

Her sensibility to music was great, and the feeling strains stole into her nature and stirred the treasures of the deep to the surface. Eve, a keen if not a profound observer, was struck by the rising beauty of this countenance over which so many moods chased one another.

[1] This is the definition of the heaven-born fiddler by Pate Bailey, a gypsy tinker and celestial violinist. Being asked for a test of proficency on that instrument, he replied that no man is a fiddler "till he can gar himsel greet wi a feddle."

[2] See how unjust satire is! Don't they move their finger-nails?

She said to herself, "Well, David is right after all. She is a lovely girl. Her features are nothing out of the way. Her nose is neither one thing nor the other; but her expression is beautiful. None of your wooden faces for me. And, dear heart, how her neck rises! La, how her color comes and goes! Well, I do love the fiddle myself dearly; and now, if her eyes are not brimming! I could kiss her! La, David," cried she, bursting the bonds of silence, "that is enough of the tune the old cow died of; take and play something to keep our hearts up, do."

Eve's good humor and mirth were restored by David's success, and now nothing would serve her turn but a duet, pianoforte and violin. Miss Fountain objected — "Why spoil the violin?" David objected too — "I had hoped to hear the pianoforte, and how can I with a fiddle sounding under my chin?" Eve overruled both peremptorily.

"Well, Miss Dodd, what shall we select? but it does not matter, I feel sure Mr. Dodd can play *à livre ouvert.*"

"Not he," said Eve hypocritically, being secretly convinced he could. "Can you play 'a leevre ouvert,' David? — Who is it by, Miss Fountain?" Lucy never moved a muscle.

After a rummage a duet was found that looked promising; and the performance began.

In the middle David stopped.

"Ha! ha! David's broke down," shrieked Eve, concealing her uneasiness under fictitious gayety. "I thought he would."

"I beg your pardon," explained David to Miss Fountain, "but you are out of time."

"Am I?" said Lucy composedly.

"And have been more or less all through."

"David, you forget yourself."

"No, no, set me right by all means, Mr. Dodd. I am not a hardened offender."

"Is it not just possible the violin may be the instrument that is out of time?" suggested Talboys insidiously.

"No," said David simply, "I was right enough."

"Let us try again, Mr. Dodd. Play me a few bars first in exact time. Thank you! — now" —

"All went merry as a marriage bell," for a page and a half — then David, fiddling away, cried out, "You are getting too fast, 'ri tum tiddy iddy ri tum ti,'" — then by stamping and accenting very strongly, he kept the piano from overflowing its bounds. The piece ended. Eve rubbed her hands. "Now you'll catch it, Mr. David."

"I am afraid I gave you a great deal of trouble, Mr. Dodd."

"*En revanche*, you gave us a great deal of pleasure," put in Mr. Talboys.

Lucy turned her head and smiled graciously; "But pianoforte players play so much by themselves; they really forget the awful importance of time."

"I profit by your confession that they do sometimes play by themselves," said Mr. Talboys: "be merciful, and let us hear you by yourself." Eve turned as red as fire.

David backed the request sincerely.

Lucy played a piece composed expressly for the piano by a pianist of the day. David sat on her left hand and watched intently how she did it.

When it was over Talboys did a bit of rapture; Eve another.

"That is playing."

"I would not have believed it if I had not seen it done," said David. "Eve, you should have seen her beautiful fingers thread in and out among the keys; it

was like white fire dancing, and as for her hand, it is not troubled with joints like ours, I should say."

"The music, Mr. Dodd," said Lucy, severely.

"Oh, the music! well, I could hardly take on me to say. You see I heard it by the eye, and that was all in its favor: but I should say the music wasn't worth a button."

"David!"

"How you run off with one's words, Eve. I mean, played by anybody but her; why, what was it when you come to think? up and down the gamut and then down and up. No more sense in it than *a b c*, a scramble to the mainmast head for nothing and back to no good. I'd as lief see you play on the table, Miss Fountain."

"Poor Moscheles!" said Lucy, dryly.

"Revenge is in your power," said Talboys, "play no more; punish us all for this one heretic."

Lucy reflected a moment: she then took from the Canterbury a thick old book. "This was my mother's. Her taste was pure in music as in everything. I shall be sorry if you do not *all* like this," added she, softly.

It was an old mass; full magnificent chords in long succession, strung together on a clear but delicate melody. She played it to perfection: her lovely hands seemed to grasp the chords. No fumbling in the bass; no gelatinizing in the treble. Her touch, firm and masterly, yet feminine, evoked the soul of her instrument as David had of his, and she thought of her mother as she played. These were those golden strains from which all mortal dross seems purged. Hearing them so played you could not realize that he who writ them had ever eaten, drunk, smoked, snuffed, and hated the composer next door. She who played them felt their majesty and purity. She lifted her beaming eye to heaven as she played, and the color receded from her cheek; and when her enchant-

ment ended she was silent, and all were silent, and their ears ached for the departed charm.

Then she looked round a mute inquiry.

Talboys applauded loudly.

But the tear stood in David's eye, and he said nothing.

"Well, David," said Eve, reproachfully, "I'm sure if that does not please you" —

"Please me," cried David, a little fretfully, "more shame for me if it does not. Please is not the word. It is angel music, I call it — ah!"

"Well, you need not break your heart for that: he is going to cry, ha, ha!"

"I'm no such thing," cried David indignantly, and blew his nose — promptly, with a vague air of explanation and defiance.

But why the male of my species blows its nose to hide its sensibility, a deeper than I must decide.

Mr. Talboys for some time had not been at his ease. He had been playing too, and an instrument he hated — second fiddle. He rose and joined Mr. Fountain, who was sitting half awake on a distant sofa.

"Aha!" thought Eve exulting, "we have driven him away."

Judge her mortification, when Lucy, after shutting the piano, joined her uncle and Mr. Talboys. Eve whispered David — "Gone to smooth him down: the high and mighty gentleman wasn't made enough of."

"Every one in their turn," said David calmly; "that is manners: look, it is the old gentleman she is being kind to. She could not be unkind to any one, however."

Eve put her lips to David's ear. "She will be unkind to you, if you are ever mad enough to let her see what I see," said she, in a cutting whisper.

"What do you see? More than there is to see, I'll wager," said David, looking down.

"Ah, that is the way with young men: the moment they take a fancy, their sister is nothing to them: their best friend loses their confidence."

"Don't ye say that, Eve! now don't say that!"

"No — no — David — never mind me. I am cross. And if you saw a sore heart in store for any one you had a regard for, wouldn't you be cross? Young men are so stupid: they can't read a girl, no more than Hebrew; if she is civil and affable to them, oh they are the man directly, when, instead of that, if it was so, she would more likely be shy, and half afraid to come near them. David, you are in a fool's paradise. In company and even in flirtation all sorts meet and part again: but it isn't so with marriage. There 'it is beasts of a kind that in one are joined, and birds of a feather that come together.' Like to like, David. She is a fine lady, and she will marry a fine gentleman and nothing else, with a large income. If she knew what has been in your head this month past, she would open her eyes and ask if the man was mad."

"She has a right to look down on me, I know," murmured David humbly, but (his eye glowing with sudden rapture) she doesn't — she doesn't."

"Look down on you! you are better company than she is, or any one she can get in this out-of-the-way place: it is her interest to be civil to you. I am too hard upon her; she is a lady, a perfect lady, and that is why she is above giving herself airs. No, David, she is not the one to treat us with disrespect, if we don't forget ourselves. But if ever you let her see that you are in love with her, you will get an affront that will make your cheek burn and my heart smart: so I tell you."

"Hush! I never told you I was in love with her."

"Never told me? Never told me? who asked you to tell me? I have eyes if you have none."

"Eve," said David, imploringly, "I don't hear of any lover that she has. Do you?"

"No," said Eve, carelessly. "But who knows? she passes half the year a hundred miles from this; and there are young men everywhere. If she was a milk-maid, they'd turn to look at her with such a face and figure as that, much more a young lady with every grace and every charm: she has more than one after her that we never see, take my word."

Eve had no sooner said this than she regretted it; for David's face quivered, and he sighed like one trying to recover his breath after a terrible blow.

What made this and the succeeding conversation the more trying and peculiar was that the presence of other persons in the room, though at a considerable distance, compelled both brother and sister, though anything but calm, to speak *sotto voce*. But in the history of mankind more strange and incongruous matter has been dealt with in an undertone, and with artificial and forced calmness.

"My poor David," said Eve, sorrowfully, "you who used to be so proud, so high-spirited. Be a man! don't throw away such a treasure as your affection. For my sake, dear David, your sister's sake who does love you so very, very dearly!"

"And I love you, Eve. Thank you. It was hard lines. Ah! But it is wholesome, no doubt, like most bitters. Yes. Thank you, Eve. I do admire her v-very much," and his voice faltered a little. "But I am a man for all that, and I'll stand to my own words. I'll never be any woman's slave."

"That is right, David."

"I will not give hot for cold, nor my heart for a smile or two. I can't help admiring her, and I do hope she will be — happy — ah — whoever she fancies. But, if I am never to command her, I won't carry a willow at my

mast-head, and drift away from reason and manhood and my duty to you and mother and myself."

"Ah, David, if you could see how noble you look now — is it a promise, David? For I know you will keep your word if once you pass it."

"There is my hand on it, Eve."

The brother and sister grasped hands, and when David was about to withdraw his, Eve's soft but vigorous little hand closed tighter and kept it firmer, and so they sat in silence.

"Eve."

"My dear."

"Now don't you be cross."

"No, dear. Eve is sad, not cross: what is it?"

"Well, Eve — dear Eve."

"Don't be afraid to speak your mind to me — why should you?"

"Well then, Eve, now, if she had not some little kindness for me, would she be so pleased with these thundering yarns I keep spinning her, as old as Adam, and as stale as bilge-water? You that are so keen, how comes it you don't notice her eyes at these times? I feel them shine on me like a couple of suns. They would make a statue pay the yarn out. Who ever fancied my chat as she does?"

"David," said Eve, quietly, "I have thought of all this: but I am convinced now there is nothing in it. You see, David, mother and I are used to your yarns, and so we take them as a matter of course — but the real fact is, they are very interesting, and very enticing, and you tell them like a book. You came all fresh to this lady, and she is very quick; so she had the wit to see the merit of your descriptions directly. I can see it myself *now*. All young women like to be amused, David, and, above all, *excited:* and your stories are very

exciting: that is the charm: that is what makes her eyes fire: but if that puppy there, or that book-shelf yonder, could tell her your stories, she would look at either the puppy or the book-stand with just the same eyes she looks on you with, my poor David."

"Don't say so, Eve! Let me think there is some little feeling for me inside those sweet eyes that look so kind on me."

"And on me, and on everybody. It is her manner. I tell you she is so to all the world. She isn't the first I've met. Trust me to read a woman, David: what can you know?"

"I know nothing: but they tell me you can fathom one another better than any man ever could," said David sorrowfully.

"David, just now you were telling as interesting a story as ever was. You had just got to the thrilling part."

"Oh, had I, what was I saying?"

"I can't tell you to the very word: I am not your sweetheart any more than she is; but one of the sailors was in danger of his life, and so on; you never told me the story before. I was not worth it. Well, just then does not that affected puppy choose his time to come meandering in?"

"Puppy? I call him a fine gentleman."

"Well, there isn't so much odds. In he comes: your story is broken off directly. Does she care? No, she has got one of her own set; he is not a very bright one; he is next door to a fool. No matter; before he came, to judge by her crocodile eyes, she was hot after your story; the moment he did come, she didn't care a pin for you *nor* your story. I gave her more than one opening to bring it on again; not she. I tell you you are nothing but a *pass* time,[1] you suit her turn so long as none of

[1] I write this word as the lady thought proper to pronounce it.

her own set are to be had. If she would leave you for such a jackanapes as that, what would she do for a real gentleman, such a man as she is a woman for instance, and as if there weren't plenty such in her own set — oh, you goose!"

David interrupted her. "I have been a vain fool, and it is lucky no one has seen it but you," and he hid his face in his hands a moment: then, suddenly remembering where he was, and that this was an attitude to attract attention, he tried to laugh — a piteous effort; then he ground his teeth and said, "Let us go home. All I want now is to get out of the house. It would have been better for me if I had never set foot in it."

"Hush! be calm, David, for heaven's sake. I am only waiting to catch her eye, and then we'll bid them good-evening."

"Very well, I'll wait;" and David fixed his eyes sadly and doggedly on the ground. "I won't look at her if I can help," said he resolutely, but very sadly, and turned his head away.

"Now, David," whispered Eve.

David rose mechanically and moved with his sister towards the other group. Miss Fountain turned at their approach. Somewhat to David's surprise, Eve retreated as quietly as she had advanced.

"We are to stay."

"What for?"

"She made me a signal."

"Not that I saw," said David incredulously.

"What, didn't you see her give me a look?"

"Yes, I did. But what has that to do with it?"

"That look was as much as to say, Please stay a little longer, I have something to say to you."

"Good heavens!"

"I think it is about a bonnet, David. I asked her to

put me in the way of getting one made like hers. She does wear heavenly bonnets."

"Ay. I did well to listen to you, Eve: you see I can't even read her face, much less her heart. I saw her look up, but that was all. How is a poor fellow to make out such craft as these that can signal one another a whole page with a flash of the eye? Ah!"

"There, David, he is going. Was I right?"

Mr. Talboys was in fact taking leave of Miss Fountain. The old gentleman convoyed his friend. As the door closed on them, Miss Fountain's face seemed to catch fire. Her sweet complacency gave way to a half-joyous, half-irritated small energy: she came gliding swiftly through not hurriedly up to Eve: "Thank you for seeing." Then she settled softly and gradually on an ottoman, saying, "Now, Mr. Dodd."

David looked puzzled. "What is it?" and he turned to his interpreter Eve.

But it was Lucy who replied, "'His messmate was crying like a child. At sunrise poor Tom must die. Then up rose one fellow (we have not an idea who one fellow means in these narratives; have we, Miss Dodd?) and cried, "I have it, messmates. Tom isn't dead yet."' Now Mr. Dodd, between that sentence and the one that is to follow, all that has happened in this room was a hideous dream: on that understanding we have put up with it — it is now happily dispersed, and we — go ahead again."

"I see, Eve, she thinks she would like some more of that China yarn."

"Her sentiments are not so tame. She longs for it, thirsts for it, and must and will have it — if you will be so very obliging, Mr. Dodd." The contrast between all this singular vivacity of Miss Fountain, and the sudden return to her native character and manner in the last

sentence, struck the sister as very droll; seemed to the brother so winning, that, scarcely master of himself, he burst out, "You shan't ask me twice for that, or anything I can give you:" and it was with burning cheeks and happy eyes he resumed his tale of bold adventure and skill on one side, of numbers, danger, and difficulty on the other. He told it now like one inspired, and both the young ladies hung panting and glowing on his words.

David and Eve went home together.

David was in a triumphant state, but waited for Eve to congratulate him. Eve was silent.

At last David could refrain no longer. "Why, you say nothing."

"No. Common-sense is too good to be wasted — don't go so fast."

"No. There — I heave-to for convoy to close up — would it be wasted on me? ha, ha!"

"To-night. There you go pelting on again."

"Eve, I can't help it. I feel all canvas, with a cargo of angels' feathers, and sunshine for ballast."

"Moonshine."

"Sun, moon, and stars, and all that is bright by night or day. I'll tell you what do; you keep your head free and come on under easy sail: I'll stand across your bows with every rag set and drawing: so then I shall be always within hail."

This sober-minded manœuvre was actually carried out. The little corvette sailed steadily down the middle of the lane; the great merchant-man went pitching and rolling across her bows: thus they kept together though their rates of sailing were so different.

Merry Eve never laughed once; but she smiled; and then sighed.

David did not heed her: all of a moment his heart

vented itself in a sea ditty so loud and clear and mellow, that windows opened, and out came nightcapped heads to hear him carol the lusty stave making night jolly.

Meantime, the weather being balmy, Mr. Fountain had walked slowly with Mr. Talboys in another direction. Mr. Talboys inquired, "Who were those people?" "Oh, only two humble neighbors," was the reply.

"I never met them anywhere. They are received in the neighborhood?"

"Not in society, of course."

"I don't understand you. Have not I just met them here?"

"That is not the way to put it," said the old gentleman, a little confused. "You did not meet them; you did me and my niece the honor to dine with us, and the Dodds dropped in to tea — quite another matter."

"Oh, is it?"

"Is it not? I see; you have been so long out of England, you have forgotten these little distinctions; society would go to the deuce without them. We ask our friends, and persons of our own class, to dinner, but we ask who we like to tea in this county. Don't you like her? she is the prettiest girl in the village."

"Pretty and pert."

"Ha — ha — that is true — she is saucy enough, and amusing in proportion."

"It is the man I alluded to."

"What, David? ay, a very worthy lad. He is a downright modest, well-informed young man."

"I don't doubt his general merits, but let me ask you a serious question. His evident admiration of Miss Fountain?"

"His ad-mi-ration of Miss Fountain?"

"It is agreeable to you?"

"It is a matter of consummate indifference to me."

"But not, I think, to her — she showed a submission to the cub's impertinence, and a desire to please instead of putting him down, that made me suspect — Do you often ask Mr. Dodd — what a name! — to tea?"

"My dear friend, I see that with all your accomplishments you have something to learn; you want insight into female character: now I, who must go to school to you on most points, can be of use to you here:" then seeing that Talboys was mortified at being told thus gently there was a department of learning he had not fathomed, he added, "at all events, I can interpret my own niece to you. I have known her much longer than you have."

Mr. Talboys requested the interpreter to explain the pleasure his niece took in Mr. Dodd's fiddle.

"Part politeness — part sham — why, she wanted not to ask them this evening, the fiddle especially. I'll give you the clew to Lucy; she is a female Chesterfield, and the droll thing is she is polite at heart as well. Takes it from her mother: she was something between an angel and a duchess."

"Politeness does not account for the sort of partiality she showed for these Dodds while I was in the room."

"Pure imagination, my dear friend. I was there; and, had so monstrous a phenomenon occurred, I must have seen it. If you think she could really prefer their society to yours, you are as unjust to her as to yourself. She may have concealed her real preference out of *finesse*, or perhaps she has observed that our inferiors are touchy, and ready to fancy we slight them for those of our own rank."

Talboys shrugged his shoulders; he was but half convinced. "Her enthusiasm when the cub scraped the fiddle went beyond mere politeness."

"Beyond other people's, you mean. Nothing on earth

ever went beyond hers — ha, ha, ha! To-morrow night, if you like, we will have my gardener Jack Absolom in to tea."

"No, I thank you. I have no wish to go beyond Mr. and Miss Dodd."

"Oh, only for an experiment. The first minute Jack will be wretched, and want to sink through the floor. But in five minutes you will find Lucy will have made Jack Absolom at home in my drawing-room. He will be laying down the law about jonquils, and she all sweetness, curiosity, and enthusiasm outside — *ennui* in."

"Can her eyes glisten out of politeness?" inquired Talboys, with a subdued sneer.

"Why not?"

"They could shed tears perhaps for the same motive?" said Talboys, with crushing irony.

"Well? Hum? I'd back them at four to seven."

Mr. Talboys was silent, and his manner showed that he was a little mortified at a subject turning to joke which he had commenced seriously. He must stop this annoyance. He said severely, "It is time to come to an understanding with you."

At these words, and above all at their solemn tone, the senior pricked his ears, and prepared his social diplomacy.

"I have visited very frequently at your house, Mr. Fountain."

"Never without being welcome, my dear sir."

"You have, I think, divined one reason of my very frequent visits here."

"I have not been vain enough to attribute them entirely to my own attractions."

"You approve the homage I render to that other attraction?"

"Unfeignedly."

"Am I so fortunate as to have her suffrage too?"

"I have no better means of knowing than you have."

"Indeed. I was in hopes you might have sounded her inclinations."

"I have scrupulously avoided it," replied the veteran. "I had no right to compromise you upon mere conjecture however reasonable. I awaited your authority to take any move in so delicate a matter. Can you blame me? On one side my friend's dignity, on the other a young lady's peace of mind, and that young lady my brother's daughter."

"You were right, my dear sir; I see and appreciate your reserve, your delicacy; though I am about to remove its cause. I declare myself to you your niece's admirer; have I your permission to address her?"

"You have, and my warmest wishes for your success."

"Thank you. I think I may hope to succeed, provided I have a fair chance afforded me."

"I will take care you shall have that."

"I should prefer not to have others buzzing about the lady whose affection I am just beginning to gain."

"You pay this poor sailor an amazing compliment," said Mr. Fountain a little testily; "if he admires Lucy, it can only be as a puppy is struck with the moon above. The moon does not respond to all this wonder by descending into the whelp's jaws: no more will my niece. But that is neither here nor there; you are now her declared suitor, and have a right to stipulate; in short, you have only to say the word, and 'exeunt Dodds' as the play-books say."

"Dodds? I have no objection to the lady; would it not be possible to invite her to tea alone?"

"Quite possible, but useless: she would not stir out without her brother."

"She seems a little person likely to give herself airs;

well then, in that case, though as you say I am no doubt raising Mr. Dodd to a false importance, still" —

"Say no more; we should indulge the whims of our friends, not attack them with reasons. You will see the Dodds no more in my house."

"Oh, as to that, just as you please. Perhaps they would be as well out of it," said Talboys, with a sudden affectation of carelessness. "I must not take you too far; good night."

"Go-o-d night!"

Poor David. He was to learn how little real hold upon society has the man who can only instruct and delight it.

Mr. Fountain bustled home, rubbing his hands with delight. "Aha!" thought he, "jealous, actually jealous! absurdly jealous! That is a good sign. Who would have thought so proud a man could be jealous of a sailor? I have found out your vulnerable point, my friend. I'll tell Lucy: how she will laugh! David Dodd! Now we know how to manage him, Lucy and I. If he freezes back again, we have but to send for David Dodd, and his fiddle." He bustled home and up into the drawing-room to tell Lucy Mr. Talboys had at last declared himself. His heart felt warm. He would settle six thousand pounds on Mrs. Talboys during his life, and his whole fortune after his death.

He found the drawing-room empty. He rang the bell. "Where is Miss Fountain?" John didn't know, but supposed she had gone to her room.

"You don't know? You never know anything. Send her maid to me."

The maid came and courtesied demurely at the door.

"Tell your mistress I want to speak to her directly; before she undresses."

The maid went out, and soon returned to say that her

mistress had retired to rest, but that if he pleased she would rise and just make a demi-to-let, and come to him. This smooth and fair-sounding proposal was not, I grieve to say, so graciously received as offered. "Much obliged," snapped old Fountain. "Her demi-toilette will keep me another hour out of my bed, and I get no sleep after dinner now *amongst you.* Tell her to-morrow at breakfast-time will do."

CHAPTER IV.

David Dodd was so radiant and happy for a day or two that Eve had not the heart to throw cold water on him again.

Three days elapsed, and no invitation to Font Abbey: on this his happiness cooled of itself. But when day after day rolled by, and no Font Abbey, he was dashed, uneasy, and above all perplexed. What could be the reason? Had he with his rough ways offended her? had she been too dignified to resent it at the time? Was he never to go to Font Abbey again?

Eve's first feeling was unmixed satisfaction. We have seen already that she expected no good from this rash attachment. For a single moment her influence and reasons had seemed to wean David from it, but his violent agitation and joy at two words of kindly curiosity from Miss Fountain, and the instant unreasonable revival of love and hope, showed the strange power she had acquired over him. It made Eve tremble.

But now the Fountains were aiding her to cure this folly. She had read them right, had described them to David aright. A wind of caprice had carried him and her into Font Abbey; another such wind was carrying them out. No event had happened. Mr. and Miss Fountain had been seen more than once in the village of late. "They have dropped us, and thank Heaven," said Eve in her idiomatic way.

She pitied David deeply, and was kinder and kinder to him now to show him she felt for him, but she never mentioned the Font Abbey people to him either to praise

or blame them, though it was all she could do to suppress her satisfaction at the turn their insolent caprice had taken.

That satisfaction was soon clouded. This time, instead of rousing himself and his pride, David sank into a moody despondency varied by occasional fretfulness: his appetite went, and his bright color, and his elastic step: this silent sadness was so new in him: such a contrast to his natural temperament, large, genial, and ever cheerful, that Eve could not bear it; "I must shake him out of this, at all hazards," thought she: yet she put off the experiment, and put it off, partly in hopes that David would speak first, partly because she saw the wound she must probe was deep, and she winced beforehand for her patient.

Meantime prolonged doubt and suspense now goaded with their intolerable stings the active spirit that chill misgivings had at first benumbed. Spurred into action by these torments, David had already watched several days in the neighborhood of Font Abbey, determined to speak to Miss Fountain, and find out whether he had given her offence; for this was still his uppermost idea. Having failed in this attempt at an interview with her, he was now meditating a more resolute course, and he paced the little gravel-walk at home debating in himself the pros and cons. Raising his head suddenly he saw his sister walking slowly at the other end of the path. She was coming towards him, but her eyes were bent thoughtfully on the ground. David slipped behind some bushes, not to have his unhappiness and his meditations interrupted. The lover and the lunatic have points in common.

He had been there some time when a grave little voice spoke quietly to him from the lawn. "David, I want to speak to you." David came out.

"Here am I."

"Oh, I knew where you were. Don't do that again, sir, please, or you'll catch it."

"Oh! I didn't think you saw me," said David somewhat confusedly.

"What has that to do with it, stupid? David," continued she, assuming a benevolent, cheerful, and somewhat magnificent nonchalance, "I sometimes wonder you don't come to me with your troubles. I might advise you as well as here and there one. But perhaps you think now, because I am naturally gay, I am not sensible. You mustn't go by that altogether. Manner is very deceiving. The most foolishly-conducted men and women ever I met were as grave as judges, and as demure as cats after cream. Bless you! there is folly in every heart. Your slow ones bottle it up for use against the day wisdom shall be most needed. My sort let it fizz out at their mouths in their daily talk, and keep their good sense for great occasions, like the present."

"Have we drifted among the proverbs of Solomon?" inquired David, dryly. "No need to make so many tacks, Eve. Haven't I seen your sense and profited by it — I and one or two more? Who but you has steered the house this ten years, and commanded the lubberly crew?" [1]

"And then again, David, where the heart is concerned, young women are naturally in advance of young men."

"God knows. He made them both. I don't."

"Why, all the world knows it. And then, besides, I am five years older than you."

"So mother says: but I don't know how to believe it. No one would say so, to look at you."

[1] The reader must not be misled by the familiar phraseology of these two speakers, to suppose that anything the least droll or humorous was intended by either of them at any part of this singular dialogue. Their hearts were sad, and their faces grave.

"I'll tell you, David. Folk that have small features look a deal younger than their years; and you know poor father used to say my face was the pattern of a flat-iron: so nobody gives me my age: but I am five good years older than you; only you need not go and tell the town-crier."

"Well, Eve?"

"Well then, put all these together, and now why not come to me for friendly advice, and the voice of reason?"

"Reason! reason! there are other lights beside reason."

"Jack-o'-lantern, eh? and will-o'-the-wisp."

"Eve, nobody can advise me that can't feel for me. Nobody can feel for me that doesn't know my pain: and you don't know that, because you were never in love."

"Oh, then if I had ever been in love, you would listen."

"As I would to an angel from heaven."

"And be advised by me."

"Why not? for then you'd be competent to advise: but now you haven't an idea what you are talking about."

"What a pity! Don't you think it would be as well if you were not to speak to me so sulky?"

"I ask your pardon, Eve. I did not mean to offend you."

"Davy dear — for God's sake, what is this chill that has come between you and me? You are a man. Speak out like a man."

David turned his great calm sorrowful eye full upon her.

"Well then, Eve, if the truth must be told, I am disappointed in you."

"Oh, David!"

"A little. You are not the girl I took you for. You know which way my fancy lies; yet you keep steering me in the teeth of it: then you see how downhearted I

am this while: but not a word of comfort or hope comes from you; and me almost dried up for want of one."

"Make one word of it, David: I am not a sister to you."

"I don't say that — but you might be kinder: you are against me just when I want you with me the most."

"Now this is what I like," said Eve, cheerfully: "this is plain speaking. So now it is my turn, my lad. Do you remember Balaam and his ass?"

"Sure," said David: but used as he was to Eve's transitions, he couldn't help staring a little at being carried eastward ho so suddenly.

"Then what did the ass say when she broke silence at last?"

"Well, you know, Eve, I take shame to say I don't remember her very words; but the tune of them I do. Why, she sang out, 'Avast there, it is my first fault; so you needn't be so hasty with your thundering rope's-end.'"

"There! You'd make a nice commentator. You haven't taken it up one bit: you are as much in the dark as our parson. He preached on her the very Sunday you came home; and it was all I could do to help whipping up into the pulpit, and snatching away his book and letting daylight in on them."

David was scandalized at the very idea of such a breach of discipline. "That is ridiculous," said he: "one can't have two skippers in a church any more than in a ship, brig or barque. But you can let daylight in on me."

"I mean. To begin, the ass was in the right and Balaam in the wrong: so what becomes of your 'first fault'? She was frugal of her words; but every syllable was a needle: the worst is, some skins are so thick our needles won't enter 'em. Says she, 'This seven years

you have known me; always true to the bridle, and true to you. Did ever I disobey you before? Then why go and fancy I do it without some great cause, that you can't see?' Then the man's eyes were opened, and he saw it was destruction his old friend had run back from, and galled his foot to save his life: so of course he thanked her and blessed her then. Not he. He was too much of a man."

"Ay, ay, I see, but what is the moral? for I have no heart to expound riddles."

"Oh, I'll tell you the moral sooner than you'll like, perhaps. The ass is a type, David. In Holy Writ you know almost every thing is a type: when a thing means one thing and stands for another, that's a type."

"Ducks can swim. At least I've heard so. Now, if you could tell me what she is a type of?"

"What, the ass? don't you know? Why, of women, to be sure. Of us poor creatures of burden, underrated and misunderstood all the world over. And Balaam, he stands for men; — and for you at the head of them," cried she, turning round with flashing eyes on David: "you have known me and my true affection more than seven years, or seventeen. I carried you in my arms when you were a year old, and I was six. You were my little curly-headed darling then, and have been from that day to this. Did ever I cross you, or be cold or unkind to you till the other day?"

"No, Eve, no, no, no! Come sit beside me!"

"Then shouldn't you have said — don't slobber *me* — I won't have it — you and I are bad friends — oughtn't you to have said, 'Eve could never give herself the pain of crossing me' (no, there isn't a man in the world with gumption enough to say that: that is a woman's thought), but at least you might have said, 'She sees rocks ahead that I can't.' (Balaam couldn't see the drawn sword

ahead, but there it was.) It was for you to say, 'My sister Eve would not change from gay to grave all at once, and from indulging me in everything to thwarting me and vexing me, unless she saw some great danger threatening your peace of mind, your career in life, your very reason, perhaps.'"

"I have been to blame, Eve: but speak out, and let me know the worst — you have heard something against her character? Speak plain out for Heaven's sake!"

"It is all very well of you to say speak plain out; but there are things girls don't like to speak about to any man. But after what you said that you would listen to me if I — so it is my duty. You will see my face red enough in about a minute. Two years ago I couldn't have done this even for you. It is hard I must expose my own folly, my own crime."

"Why, Eve, lass, how you tremble! Drop it now! drop it!"

"Hold your tongue!" said Eve, sharply, but in considerable agitation. "It is too late now; after something you have said to me. If I didn't speak out now, I should be like that bad man you told us of, who let out the beacon light when the wind was blowing hard on shore. Listen, David, and take my words to heart. The road you are on now — I have been upon; only I went much further on it than you shall go" — she resumed after a short pause, "You remember Henry Dyke?"

"What, the young clergyman who used to be always alongside you at our last anchorage?"

"Yes. He was just such a man as Miss Fountain is a woman. He was but a dish of skim-milk — yet he could poison my life."

Then Eve told the story of her heart. She described her lover as he appeared to her in the early days of courtship, young, handsome, good, noble in sentiment,

and warm and tender in manner. Halcyon days, not a speck to be seen in love's horizon.

Then she delineated the fine gradations by which the illusion faded, too slowly and too late for her to withdraw the love she had conceived for his person at that time when person and mind seemed alike superior. She painted with the delicate touch of her sex the portrait of a man and a scholar born to please all the world, and incapable of condensing his affections: a pious flirt, no longer stimulated to genuine ardor by doubts of success; but too kind-hearted to pain her beyond measure, when a little factitious warmth from time to time would give her hours of happiness, keep her on the whole content, and, above all, retain her his. Then she shifted the mirror to herself, the fiery and faithful one: and showed David what centuries of torture a good little creature like this Dyke with its charming exterior could make a quick and ardent and devoted nature suffer in a year or two. Came out in her narrative, link by link, the gentle delicious complacency of the first period, the chill airs that soon ruffled it, the glowing hopes, the misgivings that dashed them; then the diminution of confidence, more perplexing and exasperating than its utter loss; the alternations of joy and doubt, the fever and the ague of the wounded spirit: then the gusts of hatred followed by deeper love: later still, the periodical irritation at hopes long deferred, and still gleams of bliss between the paroxysms: so that now, as the vulgar say in their tremendous Saxon, she "spent her time between heaven and hell:" last of all, the sickness and recklessness of the worn-out and wearied heart, over which melancholy or fury impended.

It was at this crisis when, as she could now see on a calm retrospect, her mind was distempered, a new and terrible passion stepped upon the scene — jealousy. A

friend came and whispered her, "Mr. Dyke was courting another woman at the same time, and that other woman was rich."

"David, at that word a flash of lightning seemed to go through me and show me the man as he really was."

"The mean scoundrel, to sell himself for money!"

"No, David, he would not have sold himself with his eyes open, any more than perhaps your Miss Fountain would; but what little heart he had he could give to any girl that was not a fright. He was a self-deceiver, and a general lover; and such characters and their affections sink by nature to where their interest lies. Iron is not conscious, yet it creeps towards the loadstone. Well, while she was with me, I held up and managed to question her as coldly as I speak to you now, but, as soon as she left me, I went off in violent hysterics."

"Poor Eve!"

"She had not been gone an hour when doesn't the Devil put it into *his* head to send me a long affectionate letter, and in the postscript he invited himself to supper the same afternoon. Then I got up and dried my eyes, and I seemed to turn into stone with resolution. 'Come!' I said, 'but don't think you shall ever go back to her. Your troubles and mine shall end to-night.'"

"Why, Eve, you turn pale with thinking of it. I fear you have had worse thoughts pass through your mind than any man is worth."

"David, your blood was in my veins, and mine is in yours."

"If I didn't think so! The Lord deliver us from temptation! We don't know ourselves nor those we love."

"He had driven me mad."

"Mad, indeed! what! had you the heart to see the man bleed to death, the man you had loved, you, my little gentle Eve?"

"Oh, no, no, — no blood!" said Eve with a shudder. "Laudanum!"

"Good God!"

"Oh! I see your thought; no, I was not like the men in the newspapers, that kill the poor woman with a sure hand and then give themselves a scratch. It was to be one spoonful for him, but two for me. I can't dwell on it (and she hid her face in her hands); it is too terrible to remember how far I was misled; who, think you, saved us both?" David could not guess.

"A little angel, my good angel, that came home from sea that very afternoon. When I saw your curly head, and your sweet sunburnt face, come in at the door, guess if I thought of putting death in the pot after that: ah! the love of our own flesh and blood, that is the love — God and good angels can smile on it."

"Yes; but go on," said David, impatiently.

"It is ended, David. They say a woman's heart is a riddle; and perhaps you will think so when I tell you that when he had brought me down to this, and hadn't died for it, I turned as cold as ice to him that minute, once and forever. I looked back at the precipice, and I hated him. Ay, from that evening he was like the black dog to my eye. I used to slip anywhere to hide out of his way, just as you did out of mine but now."

"Can't you forget that? Well, to be sure. Well?"

"So then (now you may learn what these skim-milk cheeses are made of) when he found he was my aversion, he fell in love with me again as hot as ever; tried all he could think of to win me back; wrote a letter every day; came to me every other day, and when he saw it was all over for good between us, he cried and bellowed till my hate all went, and scorn came in its place. Next time we met he played quite another part, the calm, heart-broken Christian; gave me his blessing, went down on

his knees, and prayed a beautiful prayer that took me off my guard and made me almost respect him; then went away, and quietly married the girl with money; and six months after wrote to me he was miserable, dated from the vicarage her parents had got him."

"Now you know if he wasn't a parson, d——n me if I'd turn in to-night till I'd rope's-ended that lubber!"

"As if I'd let you dirty your hands with such rubbish. I sent the note back to him with just one line, 'Such a fool as you are has no right to be a villain.' There, David, there is your poor sister's life. Oh, what I went through for that man! Often I said, is Heaven just, to let a poor faithful loving girl, who has done no harm, be played with on the hook and tortured hot and cold, day after day, month after month, year after year, as I was? But now I see why it was permitted; it was for your sake, that you might profit by my sharp experience, and not fling your heart away on frozen mud as I did;" and, happy in this feminine theory of divine justice, Eve rested on her brother a look that would have adorned a seraph, then took him gently round the neck and laid her little cheek flat to his.

She felt as if she had just saved a beloved life.

Who can estimate the value of a happiness so momentary, yet so holy?

Presently, looking up, she saw David's face illuminated. "What is it?" she asked, joyously; "you look pleased."

David was "pleased, because now he was sure she could feel for him and would side with him."

"That I do; but, David, as it is all over between you and her"—

"All over? Am I dead, then?"

Eve gasped with astonishment: "Why, what have I been telling you all this for?"

"Who should you tell your trouble to, but your own brother? Why, Eve, ha, ha! you don't really see any likeness between your case and mine, do you? You are not so blind as to compare her with that thundering muff?"

"They are brother and sister, as we are," was the reply. "Ever since I saw you looked her way, my eye has hardly been off her; and she is Henry Dyke in petticoats."

"I don't thank you for saying that; well, and if she is, what has that to do with it? I am not a woman. I am not forced to lie-to, waiting for a wind, as the girls are. I am a man. I can work for the wish of my heart, and, if it does not come to meet me, I can overhaul it." Eve was a little staggered by this thrust; but she was not one to show an antagonist any advantage he had obtained.

"David," said she, coldly, "it must come to one of two things: either she will send you about your business in form, which is a needless affront for you and me both, or she will hold you in hand, and play with you and drive you *mad*. Take warning, remember what is in our blood. Father was as well as you are; but agitation and vexation robbed him of his reason for a while; and you and I are his children. Milk of roses creeps along in that young lady's veins, but fire gallops in ours. Give her up, David, as she has you. She has let you escape; don't fly back like a moth to the candle! you shan't, however; I won't let you."

"Eve," said David, quietly, "you argue well; but you can't argue light into dark, nor night into day. She is the sun to me. I have seen her light, and now I can't live without it." He added more calmly, "It is her or none. I never saw a girl but this that I wanted to see twice, and I never shall."

"But it is that which frightens me for you, David. Often I have wished I could see you flirt a bit, and harden your heart."

"And break some poor girl's?"

"Oh, hang them! they always contrive to pass it on. What do I care for girls? they are not my brother. But no, David, I can't believe you will go against me and my judgment after the insult she has put on you; no more about it, but just you choose between my respect and this wild-goose chase."

"I choose both," said David, quietly.

"Both you shan't have;" and with this up bounced Eve, and stood before him bristling like a cat-o'mountain. David tried to soothe her, to coax her — in vain: her cheek was on fire and her eyes like basilisks. It was a picture to see the pretty little fury stand so erect and threatening, and great David so humble and deprecating, yet so dogged. At last he took out his knife; it was not one of your stabbing-knives, but the sort of pruning-knife that no sailor went without in those days.

"Now," said he, sadly, "take and cut my head off; cut me to pieces if you will; I won't wince or complain; and then you will get your way; but while I do live I shall love her, and I can't afford to lose her by sitting twiddling my thumbs waiting for luck. I'll try all I know to win her; and if I lose her I won't blame her, but myself for not finding out how to please her; and with that I'll live a bachelor all my days for her, or else die, just as God wills; I shan't much care which."

"Oh, I know you, you obstinate toad," said Eve, clenching her teeth and her little hand. Then she burst out furiously — "Are you quite resolved?"

"Quite, dear Eve," said David, sadly; but somehow it was like a rock speaking.

"Then there is my hand," said Eve, with an instant

transition to amiable cheerfulness that dazzled a body like a dark lantern flying open. Used as David was to her, it stupefied him; he stared at her and was all abroad. "Well, what is the wonder now?" inquired Eve; "there are but two of us. We must be together somehow or another, mustn't we? You won't be wise with me; well, then, I'll be a fool with you. I'll help you with this girl."

"Oh! my dear Eve!"

"You won't gain much. Without me you hadn't the shadow of a chance, and with me you haven't a chance; that is all the odds."

"I have! I have! you have taken away my breath with joy," and David was quite overcome at the turn Eve had taken in his favor.

"Oh, you need not thank me," said Eve, tossing her head with an hypocrisy all her own. "It is not out of affection for you I do it, you may be very sure of that. But it looks so ridiculous to see my brother slipping out of my way behind a tree as soon as he sees me coming. Oh! oh! oh! oh!" And a violent burst of sobs and tears revealed how that incident had rankled in this stoical little heart.

David, with the tear in his own eye, clasped her in his arms, and kissed her and coaxed her, and begged her again and again to forgive him. This she did internally at the first word; but externally, no; pouted and sobbed till she had exacted her full tribute, then cleared up with sudden alacrity and inquired his plans.

"I am going to call at Font Abbey and find out whether I have offended her."

Eve demurred. "That would never do. You would betray yourself, and there would be an end of you. How good I am not to let you go! No, I'll call there. I shall quietly find out whether it is her doing that we have not

been invited so long, or whose it is. You stay where you are. I won't be a minute."

When the minute was thirty-five, David came under her window and called her; she popped her head out, "Well?"

"What are you doing?"

"Putting on my bonnet."

"Why, you have been an hour."

"You wouldn't have me go there a fright, would you?"

At last she came down, and started for Font Abbey, and David was left to count the minutes till her return. He paced the gravel sailor-wise, taking six steps and then turning, instead of going in each direction as far as he could. He longed and feared his sister's return. One hour — two hours elapsed — still he walked a supposed deck on the little lawn. Six steps, and then turn. At last he saw her coming in the distance; he ran to meet her; but when he came up with her he did not speak, but looked wistfully in her face, and tried hard to read it and his fate.

"Now, David, don't make a fool of yourself, or I won't tell you."

"No — no. I'll be calm, I will — be — calm."

"Well, then, for one thing — she is to drink tea with us this evening."

"She Who? What? Where? Oh!"

"Here."

CHAPTER V.

Mr. Fountain sat at breakfast opposite his niece with a twinkle set in his eye like a cherry-clack in a tree, relishing beforehand her smiles and blushes and gratitude to him for having hooked and played his friend, so that now she had but to land him. "I'll just finish this delicious cup of coffee," thought he, "and then I'll tell you, my lady." Whilst he was slowly sipping said cup, Lucy looked up, and said graciously to him, "How silly Mr. Talboys was last night, was he not, dear?"

"Talboys, silly? what, do you know? Why, what on earth do you mean?"

"Silly is a harsh word; injudicious, then: praising me *à tort et à travers*, and was downright ill-bred; was discourteous to another of our guests, Mr. Dodd."

"Confound Mr. Dodd! I wish I had never invited him."

"So do I. If you remember, I dissuaded you."

"I do remember now. What, you don't like him, either?"

"There you are mistaken, dear. I esteem Mr. Dodd highly, and Miss Dodd, too, in spite of her manifest defects; but in making up parties, however small, we should choose our guests with reference to each other, not merely to ourselves; now, forgive me, it was clear beforehand that Mr. Fountain and the Dodds, especially Miss Dodd, would never coalesce. Hence my objection to inviting them; but you overruled me — with a rod of iron, dear."

"Yes, but why? because you gave me such a bad

reason; you never said a word about this incongruity."

"But it was in my mind all the time."

"Then why didn't it come out?"

"Because — because something else would come out instead. As if one gave one's real reasons for things! Now, uncle dear, you allow me great liberties; but would it have been quite the thing for me to lecture you upon the selection of your own *convives?*"

"Why, you have ended by doing it."

Lucy colored. "Not till the event proves — not till" —

"Not till your advice is no longer any use."

Lucy, driven into a corner, replied by an imploring look, which had just the opposite effect of argument; it instantly disarmed the old boy; he grinned superior, and spared his supple antagonist three sarcasms that were all on the tip of his tongue. He was rewarded for his clemency by a little piece of advice, delivered by his niece with a sort of hesitating and penitent air he did not understand one bit, — eyes down upon the cloth all the time.

It came to this: he was to listen to her suggestions with a prejudice in their favor, if he could, and give them credit for being backed by good reasons; at all events, he was never to do them the injustice to suppose they rested on those puny considerations she might put forward in connection with them.

"Silly" is a term carrying with it a certain promptness and decision; above all, it was a very remarkable word for Lucy to use. "The girl is a martinet in these things," thought he; "she can't forgive the least bit of impoliteness. I suppose he snubbed Jacky Tar: what a crime! But I had better let this blow over before I go any farther." So he postponed his disclosure till to-morrow.

But before to-morrow came he had thought it over

again, and convinced himself it would be the wiser course not to interfere at all for the present, except by throwing the young people constantly together. He had lived long enough to see that in nine cases out of ten husband and wife might be defined: "A man and a woman that were thrown a good deal together, generally in the country. A marries B, and C, D, but under similar circumstances, i.e., thrown together, A would have married D, and C, B. This applies to puppy dogs, male and female, as well as to boys and girls."

Perhaps a personal feeling had some little share, too, in bringing him to the above conclusion. He was a bit of a schemer, liked to play puppets. At present his niece and friend were the largest and finest puppets he had on hand; the day he should bring them to a mutual, rational understanding, the puppet-strings would fall from his hands, and the puppets turn independent agents. He represented to Talboys that Lucy was young and very innocent in some respects; that marriage did not seem to run in her head as in most girls'; that a precipitate avowal might startle her, and raise unnecessary difficulties by putting her on her guard too early in their acquaintance. "You have no rival," he concluded; "best win her quietly by degrees. Undermine the coy jade! she is worth it." Cool Talboys acquiesced. David had spurred him out of his pace one night. But David was put out of the way, the course was clear; and, as he could walk over it now, why gallop?

Childish as his friend's jealousy of this poor sailor had seemed to Mr. Fountain, still, the idea once started, he could not help inspecting Lucy to see how she would take his sudden exclusion from these parties. Now Lucy missed the Dodds very much, and was surprised to see them invited no more. But it was not in her character to satisfy a curiosity of this sort by putting a point-blank

question to the person who could tell her in two words. She was one of those thorough women whose instinct it is to find out little things, not to ask about them. When day after day passed by and the Dodds were not invited, it flashed through her mind, first, that there must be some reason for this; secondly, that she had only to take no notice, and the reason, if any, would be sure to pop out. She half suspected Talboys, but she gave him no sign of suspicion. With unruffled demeanor and tranquil patience, she watched demurely for disclosures from her uncle or from him, like the prettiest little velvet panther conceivable lying flat in a blind path, deranging nobody, but waiting with amiable tranquillity for her friends to come her way.

Thus under the smooth surface of the little society at Font Abbey, finesse was cannily at work. But the surface of every society is like the skin of a man, — hides a deal of secret machinery.

Here were two undermining a "coy jade" (perhaps, on the whole, Uncle Fountain, it might be more prudent in you not to call her that name again; you see, she is my heroine, and I am a man that could cut you out of this story, and nobody miss you), and the coy jade watching for the miners like a sweet little velvet panther, and, to fling away metaphor, an honest heart set aching sore hard by for having come among such a lot.

CHAPTER VI.

A FABLE tells us a fowler one day saw sitting in a tree a wood-pigeon. This is a very shy bird, so he had to creep and manœuvre to get within gun-shot unseen, unheard. He stole from tree to tree, and muffled his footsteps in the long grass so adroitly, that, just as he was going to pull the trigger, he stepped light as a feather on a venomous snake; it bit; he died.

This is amusing and pointed, but a trifle severe.

What befell Uncle Fountain, busy enmeshing his cock and hen pheasant, netting a niece and a friend, went to the same tune, but in a lower key, as befitted a domestic tale.[1]

Among his letters at breakfast time came one, which he had no sooner read, than he flung it on the table and went into a fury. Lucy sat aghast: then inquired with tender anxiety what was the matter?

Angry explanations are apt to be dark ones. "It is a confounded shame — it is a trick, child — it is a do."

"Ah? what is that, uncle? 'a do?' — 'a do'?"

"Yes, 'a do.' He knew I hate figures; can't bear the sight of them, and the cursed responsibility of adding them up right."

"But who knew all this?"

"He came over here bursting with health, and asked me to be one of his executors; mind, one: I consented on a distinct understanding I was never to be called upon to act. He was twenty years my junior, and like so

[1] "Domestic," you are aware, is Latin for "tame." Ex., "Domestic fowl," "domestic drama," "story of domestic interest," or "chronicle of small beer."

much mahogany; it was just a form: I did it to soothe a man, who called himself my friend, and set his mind at rest."

"But uncle, dear, I don't understand even now: can it be possible that a friend has abused your good-nature?"

"A little," with an angry sneer.

"Has he betrayed your confidence?"

"Hasn't he?"

"Oh, dear! What has he done?"

"Died, that is all," snarled the victim.

"Oh, uncle! Poor man!"

"Poor man! no doubt. But how about poor me? why, it turns out I am sole executor."

"But, dear uncle, how could the poor soul help dying?"

"That is not candid, Lucy," said Mr. Fountain severely. "Did ever I say he could help dying? But he could help coming here under false colors, a mahogany face, and trapping his friend."

"Uncle, what is the use your trying to play the misanthrope with me, who know how good you are in spite of your pretences to the contrary? To hide your emotion from your poor niece, you go into a feigned fury, and all the time you know how sorry you are your poor friend is gone."

"Of course I am. He has secured one mourner. He might have died to all eternity if he hadn't nailed me first. See how selfish men are, and bad-hearted into the bargain: I believe that young fellow had been to a doctor, and found out he was booked in spite of his mahogany cheeks. So then he rides out here and wheedles an unguarded friend; I'm wired — I'm trapped — I'm snared."

Lucy set herself to soothe her injured relative — you must say to yourself, "*c'est un petit malheur.*"

"Tell *myself* a falsehood? What shall I gain by that?

Let me tell you it is these minor troubles that send a man to Bedlam: one breeds another till they swarm and buzz you distracted and sting you dead. '*Petit malheur!*' it is a greater one than you have ever encountered since you have been under my wing."

"It is, dear, it is; but I hope to encounter much greater ones before I am your age."

"The deuce you do!"

"Or else I shall die without ever having lived, a vegetable, not a human being."

"Bombast! a 'flower' your lovers will call you."

"And men of sense a 'weed.' But don't let us discuss me. What I wish to know is the nature of your annoyance, dear." He explained to her with a groan that he should have to wind up all the affairs of an estate of eight thousand pounds a year, pay the annual and other incumbrances, etc., etc.

"Well, but, dear, you will be quite at home in this, you have such a turn for business."

"For my own," shrieked the old bachelor angrily; "not for other people's. Why, Lucy, there will be half a dozen separate accounts, all of four figures. It is not as if executors were paid. And why are they not paid? There ought to be a law compelling the estates they administer to pay them, and handsomely. It never occurred to me before, but now I see the monstrous iniquity of amateur executors, amateur trustees, amateur guardians. They take business out of the hands of those who live by business: I sincerely regret my share in this injustice. If a snob works, he always expects to be paid. How much more a gentleman. He ought to be paid double; once for the work, once for giving up his natural ease. Here am I guardian gratis to a cub of sixteen, the worst age, done school, and not begun. Oxford and governesses."

"Tutors, you mean."

"Do I? is it the tutors the whelps fall in love with, little goose? Stop: I'll describe my 'interesting charge' as the books call it. He has hair you could not tell from tow. He has no eyebrows — a little unfledged slippery horror. He used to come in to dessert, and turn all our stomachs, except his silly father's."

"Poor orphan!"

"When you speak to him he never answers. Blushes instead."

"Poor child!"

"He has read of eloquent blushes, and thinks there is no need to reply in words — blushing must be such an interesting and effective substitute."

"Poor boy; he wants a little judicious kindness. We will have him here."

"Here!" cried the old gentleman with horror. "What? make Font Abbey a kennel! No, Lucy, this house is sacred: no nuisances admitted here. Here, on this single spot of earth, reigns comfort, and shall reign unruffled while I live. This is the temple of peace. If I must be worried I must, but not beneath this hallowed roof."

This eloquence, delivered as it was with a sudden solemnity, told upon the mind.

"Dear Font Abbey," murmured Lucy, half closing her eyes, "how well you describe it; cosiest of the cosey; the walls seem padded, the carpets velvet, and the whole structure care-proof: all is quiet gayety and sweet punctuality. Here comfort and good humor move by clockwork — that is Font Abbey. Yet you are right — if you were to be seen in it no more, it would lose the life of its charm, dear Uncle Fountain."

"Thank you, my dear, — thank you. I do like to see my friends about me comfortable; and, above all, to be comfortable myself: the place is well enough, and I am

bitterly sorry I must leave it, and sorry to leave you, my dear."

"Leave us? not immediately?"

"This very day. Why, the funeral is to be this week — a grand funeral — and I have to order it all. Then there are relatives to be invited — thirty letters — others to be asked to the reading of the will. It will be one hurry-scurry till we get the house clear of the corpse and the vultures: then at it I must go head foremost into fathomless addition — subtraction — multiplication and vexation. 'Oh, now forever farewell something or other — farewell content!' You talk of misanthropy. I shall end there. — Lucy!"

"Yes, dear uncle."

"I never — do — a good-natured thing — but — I — bitterly — repent it. By Jupiter, the coffee is cold: the first time that has befallen me since I turned off seven servants that battled that point of comfort with me."

Lucy suggested that the coffee might have cooled a little while he was being so kind as to answer her question at unusual length. Then she came round to him bringing a fresh supply of fragrant slow poison, and sat beside him and soothed him, till his ire went down, and came the calm depression of a man, who, accustomed for many years to do just what he liked, found himself suddenly obliged to do something he did not like, a thing out of the groove of his habits too.

Sure enough he left Font Abbey the same day with a promise, exacted by Lucy, that he should make her the partner of all his vexations by writing to her every day.

"And, Lucy," said the old Parthian, as he stepped into his travelling-carriage, "my friend Talboys will miss me; pray be kind to him while I am away. He is a particu-

lar friend of mine. I may be wrong; but I do like men of known origin; of old family."

"And you are right. I will be kind to him for your sake, dear."

A slight cold confined Lucy to the house for three or four days after her uncle's departure (by the by, I think this must have been the reason of David's ill success in his endeavors to get an interview with her out of doors).

Thus circumstanced, ladies rummage.

Lucy found in a garret a chest containing a quantity of papers and parchments and the beautifullest dust. No such dust is made in these degenerate days. Some of these MSS. bore recent dates. and were easily legible, though not so easily intelligible, being written as Gratiano spake.[1] The writers had omitted to put the idea'd words into red ink: so they had to be picked out with infinite difficulty from the multitude of unidea'd ones.

Other of the MSS. more ancient wore a double veil. They hid their sense in verbiage, and also in narrow Germanified letters further deformed by contractions and ornamental flourishes, whose joint effect made a word look like a black daddy-long-legs, all sprawling fantastic limbs and the body a dot.

The perusal of these pieces was slow and painful; it was like walking or slipping about among broken ruins overgrown with nettles. But then Uncle Fountain was so anxious to hook on to the Flunkeys — oh, *ciel!* what am I saying? the Funteyns; and his direct genealogical evidence had so completely broken down. She said to herself, "Oh, dear, if I could find something among these old writings and show it him on his return." She had them all dusted and brought down and a table-cloth laid on a long table in the drawing-room, and spelled them

[1] "Gratiano speaks an infinite deal of nothing . . . his reasons are as three grains of wheat in two bushels of chaff."

with a good-humored patience that belonged partly to her character, partly to her sex. A female who undertakes this sort of work does not skip as we should; the habit of needlework in all its branches reconciles that portion of mankind to invisible progress in other matters.

Besides this they are naturally careful, and, above all, born to endure, they carry patience into nearly all they do.[1]

Lucy made her way manfully through all the well-written circumlocution, and in a very short time considering: but the antique *Βαττολογια* tried her eyes too much at night, so she gave nearly her whole day to it, for she was anxious to finish all before her uncle's return. It was a curious picture; Venus immersed in musty records.

One day she had studied and spelled four mortal hours, when a visitor was suddenly announced — Miss Dodd; that young lady came briskly in at the heels of the servant and caught Lucy at her work. After the first greeting her eyes rested with such undisguised curiosity on the "mouldy records," that Lucy told her in general terms what she was trying to do for her uncle. "La," said Eve, "you will ruin your eye-sight; why not send them over to us; I will make David read them."

"And his eye-sight?"

"Oh, bless you, he has a knack of reading old writing. He has made a study of it."

"If I thought I was not presuming too far on Mr. Dodd's good-nature, I would send one or two of them."

"Do: and I will make him draw up a paper of the contents — I have seen him at this sort of work before

[1] At about the third rehearsal of a new play, our actresses bring the author's words in their heads, our actors are still all abroad, and at the first performance the breaks-down are sure to be amongst the males; the female jumenta carry their burden (be it of pig-lead) safe from wing to wing.

now. But there, la, I suppose you know it is all vanity."

"I do it to please my poor uncle."

"And very good you are: but what the better will the poor old gentleman be? we are here to act our own part well: we can't ride up to heaven on our great-grandfather."

These maxims were somewhat coldly received. So Eve shifted her ground. "After all, I don't know why I should be the one to say that; for my own name is older than your uncle's, a pretty deal."

Lucy looked puzzled; then suddenly fancying she had caught Eve's meaning, she said, "That is true. Hail, mother of mankind!" and bowed her head with graceful reverence.

Eve stared and colored, not knowing what on earth her companion meant. I am afraid it must be owned that Eve steadily eschewed books, and always had. What little book-learning she had, came to her filtered through David, and by this channel she accepted it willingly, even sought it at odd times, when there was no bread, pudding, dress, theology, scandal, or fun going on. She turned it off by a sudden inquiry where Mr. Fountain was; "they told me in the village he was away." Now several circumstances combined to make Lucy more communicative than usual. First she had been studying hard; and after long study, when a lively person comes to us, it is a great incitement to talk. Pitiful by nature, I spare you the "bent bow." Secondly, she was a little anxious lest her uncle's sudden neglect should have mortified Miss Dodd, and a neutral topic handled at length tends to replace friendly feeling without direct and unpleasant explanations. She therefore answered every question in full; told her that her uncle had lost a dear friend, that he was executor and guardian

to the poor boy, now entirely an orphan. Her uncle, with his usual zeal on behalf of his friends, had gone off at once, and doubtless would not return till he had fulfilled in every respect the wishes of the deceased.

To this general sketch she added many details, suppressing the misanthropy Mr. Fountain had exhibited or affected at the first receipt of the intelligence.

In short, angelic gossip. Earthly gossip always backbites, you know. Eve missed something somehow, no doubt the human or backbiting element — still it was gossip, sacred gossip, far dearer than Shakespeare to the female heart, and Eve's eyes glowed with pleasure, and her tongue plied eager questions.

With all this, such instinctive artists are these delicate creatures, both these ladies were secretly in ambush, Lucy to learn whether Eve and David were hurt or surprised at not being invited of late, and why she and he had not called since, Eve to find out what was the cause David and she had been so suddenly dropped; was it Lucy's doing, or whose?

Each lady being bent on receiving, not on making revelations, nothing transpired on either side. Seeing this, Eve became impatient, and made a bold move.

"Miss Fountain," said she, "you are all alone: I wish you would come over to us this evening and have tea."

Lucy did not immediately reply. Eve saw her hesitation. "It is but a poor place," said she, "to ask you to."

"I will come," said the lady, directly. "I will come with great pleasure."

"Will seven be too early for you?"

"Oh, no. I don't dine now my uncle is away. I call luncheon dinner."

"Perhaps six, then?"

"Pray let me come at your usual hour. Why de-

range your family for one person?" Six o'clock was settled.

"I must take some of this rubbish with me," said Eve; "come along, my dears," and with an ample and mock enthusiastic gesture she caught up an armful of manuscripts.

"The servant shall take them over for you."

"Oh, bother the servant, I am my own servant — if you will lend me a pin or two."

Lucy drew six pins out from different parts of her dress. Eve noticed this, but said nothing. She pinned up her apron so as to make an enormous pocket, and went gayly off with the "spoils of time."

CHAPTER VII.

"Is that what you call being calm, David? Let me alone — don't slobber me. I am sure I wish she had said 'No.' If I had thought she would come, I would never have asked her."

"You would, Eve, you would for love of me."

"Who knows? perhaps I might. I am more indulgent than kind."

"Eve, do tell me all. Is she well? does she come of her own good will? Dear Eve!"

"Well, I'll tell you: first we had a bit of a talk for a blind, like; and her uncle is away: so then I asked her plump to come to tea. Well, David, first she looked 'No' — only for a single moment though, she soon altered her mind, and so then the moment it was to be 'Yes' she cleared up, and you would have thought she had been asked to the king's banquet. Ah, David my lad, you have fallen into good hands — you have launched your heart on a deeper ocean than ever your ship sailed on."

David took no notice. He was in a state of exaltation for one thing, and, besides, Eve's simile was sent to the wrong address; we terrestrials fear water in proportion to its depth, but these mariners dread their native element only when it is shallow.

David now kept asking in an excited way what could they do for her? What could they get to do her honor? Wouldn't she miss the luxuries of her fine place?

"Now you be quiet, David: we need not put ourselves about, for she will be the easiest girl to please you have

ever seen here; or, if she isn't, she'll act it so that you'll be none the wiser. However, you can go and buy some flowers for me."

"That I will, we have none good enough for her here."

"And, David, tea under the catalpa as we always do on fine nights."

"You don't mean that."

"Ah, but I do; these fine ladies are all for novelties: now I'm much mistaken if this one has ever had her tea out of doors in all her born days. What! do you think our little stuffy room would be any treat to her, after the drawing-room at Font Abbey? Come, you be off till half-past five: you'll fidget yourself and fidget me else."

David recognized her superiority, obeyed and vanished.

Eve, having got rid of him, showed none of the insouciance she had recommended: she darted into the kitchen, bared her arms, and made wheaten cakes with unequalled rapidity, the servant looking on with demure admiration all the while. These put into the oven, she got her keys and put out the silver tea-pot, cream-jug, and sugar-basin, things not used every day, I can tell you: item, the best old china tea-service; item, some rare tea of which David had brought home a small quantity from China. At six o'clock, Miss Fountain came; a footman marched twenty yards behind her — she dismissed him at the door, and Eve invited her at once into the garden. There David joined them; his heart beating violently. She put out her hand, kindly and calmly, and shook hands with him in the most unembarrassed way imaginable. At the touch of her soft hand every fibre in him thrilled, and the color rushed into his face. At this a faint blush tinged her own, but no more than the warm welcome she was receiving might account for.

They seated her in a comfortable chair under the catalpa. Presently out came a nice clean maid, her white neck half hidden, half revealed, by plain unfigured muslin worn where the frock ended. She put the tea-things on the table, and courtesied to Lucy, who returned her salute by a benignant smile; out came another stouter one with the kettle, hung it from a hoop between two stout sticks, and lighted a fire she had laid underneath, retiring with a parting look at the kettle as soon as it hissed. Then returned maid one, with bread and wheaten cakes and fruit, butter nice and hard from the cellar, and yellow cream, and went off smiling.

A gentle zeal seemed to animate these domestics, as if they also in relative proportions gave the *fête*, or at least contributed good will; Lucy's quick eye caught this; it was new to her.

The tea was soon made, and its Oriental fragrance mingled with the other odors that filled the balmy air. Gay golden broken lights flickered in patches on the table, the china cups, the ladies' dresses, and the grass, all but in one place where the cool deep shadow lay undisturbed around the foot of the tree-stem; looking up to see whence the flickering gold came that sprinkled her white hand, Lucy saw one of the loveliest and commonest things in nature: the sky was blue — the sun fiery — the air potable gold outside the tree, so that, as she looked up, the mellow green leaves of the catalpa, coming between her and the bright sky and glowing air, shone like transparent gold — staircase upon staircase of great exotic translucent leaves, with specks of lovely blue sky that seemed to come down and perch among the top branches: charming as these sights were, contrast doubled their beauties: for all these dimples of bright blue and flakes of translucent gold were eyed from the cool and from the deep shade: the light, it is true, came

down and danced on the turf here and there, but it left its heat behind, through running the gauntlet of the myriad leaves. Over Lucy's head, hung by a silk line from one of the branches a huge globe of humble but fragrant flowers: they were in point of fact fastened with marvellous skill all round a damp sponge: but she did not know that. Thus these simple hosts honored their lovely guest. And while these sights and smells stole into her deep eyes and her delicate nostrils, "Fiddle, David," said Eve, loftily — and straightway a simple mellow tune rang sweetly on the cheerful chords; a rustic, dulcet, and immortal ditty, in tune with summer, and afternoon, with gold-checkered grass and leaves that slumbered yet vibrated in the glowing air.

A bright dreamy hour; the soul and senses floated gently in color, fragrance, melody, and great calm. "Each sound seemed but an echo of tranquillity."

Lucy looked up and absorbed the scene, then closed her eyes and listened: and presently her lips parted gradually in so ravishing a smile, her eyes remaining closed, that even Eve, who saw her in her true light, a terrible girl come there to burn and destroy David, remaining cool as a cucumber, could hardly forbear seizing her and mumbling her.

In certain companies you shall see a boisterous cordiality, which at bottom is as hollow as diplomacy. But there is a modest geniality which is to society what the bloom is to the plum.

And this charm Lucy found in her hosts of the catalpa. For this very reason that they were her hosts, their manner to her changed a little, and becomingly; they made no secret that it was a downright pleasure to them to have her there. They petted her, and showed her so much simple kindness, that what with the scene, the music, and her companions' goodness, the coy bud opened,

— timidly at first — but in a way it never had expanded at Font Abbey.

She even developed a feeble sense of fun, followed suit demurely when Eve came out sprightly, laughed like a brook gurgling to Eve's peal of bells; and lo and behold, when the two girls got together, and faced the man, strong in numbers, a favorite trick, backed her ally as cowards back the brave, and set her on to sauce David. They cast doubts upon his skill in navigation. They perplexed him with treacherous questions in geography put with an innocent affectation of a humble desire for information. In short, they played upon him lightly as they touch the piano. And Eve carolled a song, and David accompanied her on the fiddle; and at the third verse Lucy chimed in spontaneously with a second, and the next verse David struck in with a bass, and the tepid air rang with harmony, and poor David thrilled with happiness. His heart felt his voice mingle and blend with hers, and even this contact was delicious to his imagination. And they were happy. But all must end; the shades of evening came down, and the pleasant little party broke up, and as John had not come, David asked leave to escort her home. Oh, no — she could not think of giving him that trouble — so saying she went home with him. When they were alone his deep love made him timid and confused. He walked by her side, and did not speak to her. She waited with some surprise at his silence, and then as he was shy she talked to him, uttered many airy nothings, and then put questions to him. "Did he always drink tea out of doors?"

"On fine nights in summer. Eve settled all such matters."

"Have you not a voice?"

"I have a voice, but no vote. She is skipper ashore."

"Oh, is she? Who taught her how delicious it is to drink tea out of doors?"

David did not know, fancied it was her own idea. "Did you really like it, Miss Fountain?"

"Like it, Mr. Dodd; it was elysium. I never passed a sweeter evening in my life."

David colored all over. "I wish I could believe that."

"Was it the tulip-tree, or the violin, or was it your conversation, Mr. Dodd, I wonder?" asked she demurely, looking mock innocent in his face.

"It was your goodness to be so easily pleased," said Dodd, with a gush that made her color — she smiled, however.

"Well, that is one way of looking at things," said she. "*Entre nous*, I think Miss Dodd was the enchantress."

"Eve is capital company, for that matter."

"Indeed she is; you must be very happy together. Your mutual affection is very charming, Mr. Dodd; but sometimes it almost makes me sad: forgive me! I have no brother."

"You will never want one to love you, a thousand times better than a brother can love."

"Oh, shan't I?" said the lady, and opened her eyes.

"No; and there is more than one that worships the ground you tread on at this moment — but you know that."

"Oh, do I?" she opened her eyes still wider.

David longed to tell her how he loved her; but he dared not; he looked wistfully at her face — it was quite calm, and had suddenly become a little reserved. He felt he was on new and dangerous ground; he sighed and was silent. He turned away his face. When this involuntary sigh broke from him, she turned her head a little and looked at him. He felt her eye dwell on him, and his cheeks burned under it.

The next moment they were at Font Hill, and Lucy

seemed to David to hesitate whether to give him her hand at parting or not.

She did give him her hand, though not so freely, David thought, as she had done on his own little lawn three hours before; and this dashed his spirits. It seemed to him a step lost, and he had hoped to gain a step somehow by walking home with her. He felt like one who has undertaken to catch some skittish timorous thing that, if you stand still, will come within a certain small but safe distance, but you must not move a step towards it, or, whirr, away it is. He went slowly home — his heart warm and cold by turns: warm when he remembered the sweet hours he had just spent, and her sweet looks, and heavenly tones, every one of which he saw and heard again; cold when he thought of the social distance that separated them and the hundred chances to one against his love. Then he said to himself, "Time was I thought I could never bring a yard down from the fore-top to the deck, but I mastered that. Time was I thought I could never work out a logarithm without a formula, but I mastered that. Time was the fiddle beat me so, I was ready to cry over it, but at last I learned to make it sing, and now I can make her smile with it (God bless her), instead of stopping her ears. I can hardly mind the thing that didn't beat me dead for a long while, but I persevered and got the upper hand. Ay, but this is higher and harder than them all, a hundred times harder and higher.

"I'll hold my course, let the wind blow high or low — and if I can't overhaul the wish of my heart, well, I'll carry her flag to the last. I'll die a bachelor for her sake, as sure as you are the moon, my lass, and you the pole-star, and from this hour I'll never look at you, but I'll make believe it is her I am looking up at; for she is as high above me, and as bright, as you are; God bless

her! and to think I never even said good-night to her. I stood there like a mummy." And David reproached himself for his unkindness.

Lucy, on entering the drawing-room, was surprised to find it blazing with candles — but she was more surprised at what she saw seated calmly in an arm-chair — Mrs. Bazalgette. Lucy stood transfixed, the audacious intruder laughed at her astonishment; the next moment they intertwined and fell to kissing one another with tender violence.

"Well, love, the fact is I was passing here on my way home from Devonshire, and I wanted particularly to speak to you, so I thought I would venture just to pop in for a passing call, and lo — I find the old ogre is absent and not expected back for ever so long, so I have installed myself at his Font Abbey, partly out of love for you, dear, partly, I confess it, out of hate to him. You will write and tell me his face when he comes home and hears I have been living and enjoying myself in his den. I ordered my imperial into his bedroom. I took for granted that would be the only comfortable one in his house."

"Aunt Bazalgette," cried Lucy, turning pale. "Oh, aunt, what will become of us!"

"Don't be frightened: the gray-haired monster that dyes his whiskers, and gets him up to look only forty, interposed and forbade the consecration."

"I am glad of it: you shall sleep in mine, dear, and I will go into the east room. It is a sweet little room."

"Is it — then why not put me there?"

Lucy colored a little. "I think mine would suit *you* better, dear, because it is larger and airier, and" —

"I see. As you please: you know I never make difficulties."

"And how long have you been here, aunt?"

"About three hours."

"Three hours, and not send for me! I was only in the village. Did no one tell you?"

"Yes, but you know it is not my way to make a fuss and put people out. How could I tell? You might be agreeably employed, and I was sure of you before bedtime."

Mighty fine! but the truth is she came to Font Abbey to pry. She had heard a vague report about Lucy and a gentleman.

She was very glad to find Lucy was out; it gave her an opportunity. She sent for Lucy's maid to help her unpack a dress or two — thirteen. This girl was paid out of Lucy's estate, but did not know that. Mrs. Bazalgette handed her her wages, and that gives an influence. The wily matron did not trust to that alone. In unpacking she gave the girl a dress and several smaller presents, and, this done, slowly and cautiously pumped her. Jane, to fulfil her share of a bargain, which, though never once alluded to, was perfectly understood between both the parties, told her all she knew and all she conjectured, told her in particular how constantly Mr. Talboys was in the house, and how one night the old gentleman had walked part of the way home with him, "which Mr. Thomas says he didn't think his master would do it for the king, mum!" and had come in all a flurry and sent up for miss, and swore[1] awful when she couldn't come because she was abed. "So you may depend, mum, it is so; leastways, the gentlemen they are willing; we talk it over mostly every day in the servants' hall, mum, and we are all of a mind so fur; but whether it will come to a wedding, that we haven't a-settled yet; it's miss beats us: she is like no other young lady ever I came a-nigh.

[1] The ladies of the bed-chamber will embellish. After all, it is their business.

A man or a woman, it is all the same to her: a kind word for everybody and pass on. But I do really think she likes her own side of the house a trifle the best."

"And there you don't agree with her, Jane?"

"Well, mum, — being as we are alone, — now is it natural? But Mr. Thomas, he says, 'the cold ones take the first offer that comes when there is money ahind it. It isn't us they wants,' says he, — I told him I should think not the likes of him, — 'but our house and land,' says he, 'and hopera box and cetera.' 'But I don't think that of our one,' says I, 'bless you, she is too high-minded.' But what I think, mum, is, she wouldn't say 'no' to her uncle; her mouth don't seem made for saying no, especially to him; and he is bent on Talboys, mum, you take my word."

To return to the drawing-room, Mrs. Bazalgette after the above delicate discussion sat there in ambush, knowing more of Lucy's affairs than Lucy knew. Her next point was to learn Lucy's sentiments and to find whether she was deliberately playing false and breaking her promise, vide p. 19.

"Well, Lucy, any lovers yet?"

"No, aunt."

"Take care, Lucy, a little bird whispers in my ear."

"Then it is a humming-bird," and Lucy pouted. "Now, aunt, did you really come to Font Abbey to tease me about such nonsense as — as — gentlemen?" and Lucy looked hurt.

"Here's an actress for you," thought Mrs. Bazalgette, but she calmly dropped the subject, and never recurred to it openly all the evening, but lay secretly in watch, and put many subtle but seeming innocent questions to her niece about her habits, her uncle's guest, whether her uncle kept a horse for her, whether he bought it for her? etc., etc.

The next morning Mrs. Bazalgette breakfasted in bed, during which process she rang her bell seven times. Lucy received at the breakfast-table a letter from her uncle.

My dear Niece, — The funeral was yesterday, and, I flatter myself, well performed ; there were five and twenty carriages. After that a luncheon in the right style, and then to the reading of the will. And here I shall surprise you, but not more than I was myself: I am left five thousand pounds consols. My worthy friend, whose loss we are called on so suddenly to deplore, accompanied this bequest in his will with many friendly expressions of esteem, which I have always studied and shall study to deserve. He bequeathed to me also during minority the care of his boy, the heir to this fine property, which far exceeds the value I had imagined. There is a letter attached to the will; in compliance with it Arthur is to go to Cambridge, but not until he has been well prepared. He will therefore accompany me to Font Abbey to-morrow, and I must contrive somehow or other to find him a mathematical tutor in the neighborhood. There is a handsome allowance made out of the estate for his board, etc., etc.

He is an interesting boy, and has none of the rudeness and mischievousness they generally have. Blue eyes, soft, silky, flaxen hair, and as modest as a girl. His orphaned state merits kindness, and his prospects entitle him to consideration. I mention this because I fancy when we last discussed this matter I saw a little disposition on your part to be satirical at the poor boy's expense. I am sure, however, that you will restrain this feeling at my request, and treat him like a younger brother — I only wish he was three or four years older — you understand me, miss.

To-morrow afternoon then we shall be at Font Abbey. Let him have the east room, and tell Brown to light a blazing fire in my bedroom and warm and air every mortal thing, on pain of death.

Your affectionate uncle,

John Fountain.

On reading this letter Lucy formed an innocent scheme.

It had long been matter of regret to her that Aunt Bazalgette could not see the good qualities of Uncle Fountain, and Uncle Fountain of Aunt Bazalgette. "It must be mere prejudice," said she, "or why do I love them both?" She had often wished she could bring them together and make them know one another better; they would find out one another's good qualities then, and be friends. But how? As Shakespeare says, "Oxen and wain ropes would not haul them together."

At last chance aided her. Mrs. Bazalgette was at Font Abbey, actually. Lucy knew that if she announced Mr. Fountain's expected return the B. would fly off that minute; so she suppressed the information, and, giving up to young Arthur as she had to Mrs. B., moved into a still smaller room than the east room.

And now her heart quaked a little; "but after all, Uncle Fountain is a gentleman," thought she, "and not capable of showing hostility to her under his own roof. Here she is safe, though nowhere else; only I must see him, and explain to him before he sees her." With this view Lucy declined demurely her aunt's proposal for a walk. No, she must be excused; she had work to do in the drawing-room, that could not be postponed.

"Work! that alters the case; let me see it." She took for granted it was some useful work, something that could be worn when done. "What! is this it? these dirty parchments? Oh! I see, it is for that selfish old man; who but he would set a lady to parchments?"

"A bad guess!" cried Lucy, joyously; "I found them myself, and set myself to work on them."

"Don't tell me! He is at the bottom of it. If it was for yourself you would give it up directly. How amusing for me to see you work at that!" Lucy rose and brought her the new novel. Mrs. Bazalgette took it and sat down to it. But she could not fix her attention

long on it. Ladies whose hearts are in dress, have no taste for books, however frivolous; can't sit them for above a second or two. Mrs. Bazalgette fidgeted and fidgeted, and at last rose and left the room, book in hand.

"How unkind I am," said Lucy to herself. She was sitting sentinel till the carriage should arrive; then she could run down and prepare her uncle for his innocent and accidental visitor; it would not be prudent to let him receive the information from a servant, or without the accompanying explanation. This it was that made her so unnaturally firm, when the little idle B. pressed her to waste in play the shining hours.

Mrs. Bazalgette went, book in hand, to her bedroom, and she had not been there long before she found employment. Many of Lucy's things were still in the wardrobes. Mrs. B. rummaged them, inspected them at the window, and ended by ringing for her maid and trying divers of her niece's dresses on. "They make her dresses better than they do mine; they take more pains." At last she found one that was new to her, though Lucy had worn it several times at Font Abbey. "Where did she get this, Jane?"

"Present from the old gentleman, mum; he had it down from London for her all at one time with this shawl and twelve puragloves."

Lucy looked two inches taller than Mrs. B., but somehow, I can't tell how, this dress of hers fitted the latter like a glove. It embraced her; it held her tenderly but tight, as gowns and lovers should; the poor dear could not get out of it. "I *must* wear it an hour or two," said she. "Besides it will save my own, knocking about in these country lanes." Thus attired she went into the drawing-room to surprise Lucy. Now Lucy was determined not to move; so, not to be enticed, she did not

even look up from her work; on this the other took a mild huff and whisked out. So keen are the feminine senses that Lucy on reflection recognized something brusque, perhaps angry, in the rustle of that retiring dress, and soon after rang the bell and inquired where Mrs. Bazalgette was? John would make henquiries.

"Your haunt is in the back garden, miss."

"Walking? or what?"

John would make henquiries.

"She is reading, miss; and she is sitting on the seat master 'ad made for *you*, miss."

"Very well, thank you."

"Any more commands, miss?"

"Not at present." John retired with a regretful air, as one capable of executing important commissions, but lost for lack of opportunity. All the servants in this house liked to come into contact with Lucy; she treated them with a dignified kindness and reserved politeness that wins these good creatures more than either arrogance or familiarity. "Jeames is not such a fool as he looks."

Lucy was glad. Her aunt had got her book. "It is an interesting story; she will not miss me now, and the carriage will soon be here, and then I will make up for my unkindness." Curiously enough, at this very juncture the fair student found something in her parchment which gave her some little hopes of a favorable result.

She was following this clew eagerly when all of a sudden she started. Her ear had caught the rattle of a carriage over the stones of the stable-yard. She rang the bell and inquired if that was not the carriage.

"Yes, miss."

"My uncle has sent it back then. He is not coming to-day." John would inquire of the coachman.

"Oh, yes, miss, master is come; but he got out at the

foot of the hill and walked up through the shrubbery with the young gentleman to show him the grounds." On this news Lucy rose hastily, snatched up a garden-hat, and, without any other preparation, went out to intercept her uncle. As she stepped into the garden she heard a loud scream followed by angry voices: she threw her hands up to heaven in dismay, and ran towards the sounds. They came from the back garden. She went like lightning round the corner of the house, and came plump upon an agitated group, of whom she made one directly spell-bound. Here stood Aunt Bazalgette, her head turned haughtily, her cheeks scarlet. There stood Mr. Fountain on the other side of the rustic seat, red as fire too, but wearing a hang-dog look: and behind him young Arthur pale, with two eyes like saucers, gazing awe-struck at the first row he had ever seen between a full-grown lady and gentleman.

Our narrative must take a step to the rear, as an excellent writer, Private ——,[1] phrases it; otherwise you might be misled to suppose that Uncle Fountain was quarrelling with Mrs. B. for having set her foot in sacred Font Abbey.

No! the pudding was richer than that. Mr. Fountain had young Arthur in charge; and, not being an ill-natured old gentleman, he pitied the boy and did all he could to make him feel he was coming among friends. He sent the carriage on and showed Arthur the grounds, and covertly praised the place and all about it, Lucy included, for was not she an appendage of his abbey? "You will see my niece, a charming young lady who will be kind to you, and you must make friends with her: she is very accomplished — paints. She plays like an angel, too. Ah! there she is — she has got the gown on

[1] "I had an escape myself. As I opened the door of a house a black fellow was behind waiting for me, and made a chop. I took a step to the rear, fired through the door, and cooked his goose." — *Times*.

I gave her; a compliment to me, a very pretty attention, Arthur, the day of my return. What is she doing?"

Arthur with his young eyes settled this question: "The lady is asleep — see, she has dropped her book." And in fact the whole attitude was lax, and not ungraceful. Her right hand hung down, and the domestic story, its duty done, reposed beneath.

"Now, Arthur," said the senior, making himself young to please the boy, and to show him that if he looked old he was not worn out, "would you like a bit of fun? we will startle her: we'll give her a kiss." Arthur hung back irresolute, and his cheeks were dyed with blushes.

"Not you, you young rogue: you are not her uncle." The old gentleman then stole up at the back of the seat, followed with respectful curiosity by Arthur. She happened to move as the senior got near, so, for fear she was going to wake of herself and baffle the surprise, he made a rush, and rubbed his beard a little roughly against Mrs. Bazalgette's cheek. Up starts that lady, who was not fast asleep, but only under the influence of the domestic tale, utters a scream, and, when she sees her ravisher, goes into a passion.

"How dare you? What is the meaning of this insult?"

"How came you here?" was the reply in an equally angry tone.

"Can't a lady come into your little misery of a garden without being outraged?"

"It isn't the garden, it is only the back garden," cried the proprietor of Font Abbey (*blessé*). "I'll swear that is my niece's gown: so you've invaded that too."

"Aunt Bazalgette — Uncle Fountain, it was my fault," sighed a piteous voice. This was Lucy, who had just come on the scene. "Dear uncle, forgive me: it was I who invited her."

Lucy's pathetic tones, which were fast degenerating into sobs, were agreeably interrupted.

At one and the same moment the man and woman of the world took a new view of the situation, looked at one another, and burst out laughing. Both these carried a safety-valve against choler — a trait that takes us into many follies, but keeps us out of others — a sense of humor. The next thing to relieve the situation was the senior's comprehensive vanity. He must recover young Arthur's reverence, which was doubtless dissolving all this time. "Now, Arthur," he whispered, "take a lesson from a gentleman of the old school. I hate this she-devil; but this is my house, so — observe!" He then strutted jauntily and feebly up to Mrs. Bazalgette. "Madam, my niece says you are her guest; but permit me to dispute her title to that honor." Mrs. Bazalgette smiled agreeably. She wanted to stay a day or two at Font Abbey. The senior flourished out his arm. "Let me show you what *we* call the garden here." She took his arm graciously. "I shall be delighted, sir [pompous old fool!"]

Mrs. Bazalgette steeled her mind to admire the garden, and would have done so with ease if it had been hideous. But unfortunately it was pretty, prettier than her own: had grassy slopes, a fountain, a grotto, variegated beds, and beds a blaze of one color (a fashion not common at that time), item, a brook with water-lilies on its bosom. "This brook is not mine, strictly speaking," said her host, "I borrowed it of my neighbor." The lady opened her eyes; so he grinned, and revealed a characteristic transaction. A quarter of a century ago he had found the brook flowing through a meadow close to his garden hedge. He applied for a lease of the meadow, and was refused by the proprietor in the following terms: 'What is to become of my cows?' He applied constantly for

ten years and met the same answer. Proprietor died, the cows turned to ox-beef, and were eaten in London along with flour and a little turmeric, and washed down with Spanish licorice, water, salt, gentian, and a little burnt malt: widow inherited, made hay, and refused F. the meadow, because her husband had always refused him. But in the tenth year of her siege she assented, for the following reasons: *primo*, she had said "no" so often, the word gave her a sense of fatigue; *secundo*, she liked variety, and thought a change for the worse must be better than no change at all.

Her tenant instantly cut a channel from the upper part of the stream into his garden, and brought the brook into the lawn, made it write an S upon his turf, then handed it out again into the meadow "none the worse," his own comment. These things could be done in the country — *jadis*.

It cost Mrs. Bazalgette a struggle to admire the garden and borrowed stream; they were so pretty. She made the struggle, and praised all. Lucy walking behind the pair, watched them with innocent satisfaction. "How fast they are making friends," thought she, mistaking an armistice for an alliance.

"Since the place is so fortunate as to please you, you will stay a week with me, madam, at least."

"A week! No, Mr. Fountain, I really admire your courtesy too much to abuse it."

"Not at all: you will oblige me."

"I cannot bring myself to think so."

"You may believe me. I have a selfish motive."

"Oh, if you are in earnest."

"I will explain. If you are my guest for a week, that will give me a claim to be yours in turn;" and he bent a keen look upon the lady as much as to say, Now I shall see whether you dare let me spy on you as you are doing on me.

"I propose an amendment," said Mrs. Bazalgette with a merry air of defiance; "for every day I enjoy here, you must spend two beneath my roof. On this condition I will stay a week at Font Abbey."

"I consent," said Mr. Fountain, a little sharply: he liked the bargain. "I must leave you to Lucy for a minute. I have some orders to give: I like *my* guests to be comfortable." With this he retired to his study and pondered. "What is she here for? it is not affection for Lucy: that is all my eye, a selfish toad like her. (How agreeable she can make herself, though!) She heard I was out and came here to spy directly. That was sharp practice. Better not give her a chance of seeing my game. I disarmed her suspicion by asking her to stay a week, aha! Well, during that week Talboys must not come, that is all: aha, my lady, I won't give those cunning eyes of yours a chance of looking over my hand." He then wrote a note to Talboys telling him there was a guest at Font Abbey, a disagreeable woman "who makes mischief whenever she can. She would be sure to divine our intentions, and use all her influence with Lucy to spite me. You had better stay away till she is gone." He sent this off by a servant, then pondered again.

"She suspects something: then that is a sign she has her own designs on Lucy. Hum! No. If she had, she would not have invited me to her house. She invited me directly and cheerfully. Hum!"

Mrs. Bazalgette walked and sat with an arm round Lucy's waist, and told her seven times before dinner how happy she was at the prospect of a quiet week with her. In the evening she yawned eleven times. Next day she asked Lucy who was coming to dinner?

"Nobody, dear."

"Nobody at all?"

"I thought you would perhaps not care to have our *tête-à-tête* interrupted yet."

"Oh! but I should like to explore the natives too."

"I will give uncle a hint, dear." The hint was given very delicately, but the malicious senior had a perverse construction ready immediately. "So this is her mighty affection for you; can't get through two days without strangers."

"Uncle," said Lucy imploringly, "she is so used to society, and she has me all day. We ought to give her some little amusement at night."

"Well, I can't make up parties now; my friends are all in London. She only wants something to flirt with. Send for David Dodd."

"What, for her to flirt with?"

"Yes, he is a handsome fellow; he will serve her turn."

"For shame, uncle; what would Mr. Bazalgette say? Poor aunt, she is a coquette now."

"And has been this twenty years."

"Now I was thinking — Mr. Talboys?"

"Talboys is not at home; she must be content with lower game. She shall bring down David."

Lucy hesitated. "I don't think she will like Mr. Dodd, and I am sure he will not like her."

"How can you know that?"

"He is so honest. He will not understand a woman of the world, and her little in—sin — no, I don't mean that."

"Well, if he does not understand her, he may like her."

"Aunt, he has made me ask the Dodds to tea, and I am afraid you will not like them."

"Well, if I don't, we must try some more natives to-morrow. Who are they?" Lucy told her. "Pretty people to ask to meet me," said she loftily. This scorn

dissolved in the course of the evening. Lucy, anxious her guests should be pleased with one another, drew the Dodds out, especially David; made him spin a yarn. With this and his good looks he so pleased Mrs. Bazalgette that it was the last yarn he ever span during her stay; she took a fancy to him, and set herself to captivate him with sprightly ardor.

David received her advances politely, but a little coldly; the lady was very agreeable, but she kept him from Lucy. He hardly got three words with her all the evening. As they went home together Eve sneered. "Well, you managed nicely; it was your business to make friends with that lady."

"With all my heart."

"Then why didn't you do what she bid you?"

"She gave me no orders that I heard," said the literal first mate.

"She gave you a plain hint, though."

"To do what?"

"To do what, stupid? why, to make love to her, to be sure."

"Why, she is a married woman."

"If she chooses to forget that, is it your business to remember it?"

"And if she was single, and the loveliest in the world, how could I court her when my heart is full of an angel?"

"If your heart is full, your head is empty. Why, you see nothing."

"I can't see why I should belie my heart."

"Can't you? Then I can. David, in less than a month Miss Fountain goes to this lady and stays a quarter of a year. She told me so herself. Oh, my ears are always open in your service, ever since I did agree to be as great a fool as you are. Now, don't you see, that if you

can't get Mrs. Bazalgette to invite you to her house, you must take leave of the other here forever."

"I see what you mean. Eve, how wise you are! It is wonderful. But what is to be done? I am bad at feigning. I can't make love to her."

"But you can let her make love to you. Is that an effort you feel equal to? and I must do the rest. Oh, we have a nice undertaking before us. But if boys will cry for fruit that is out of their reach, and their silly sisters will indulge them — don't slobber *me*."

"You are such a dear girl to fight for me so, a little against your judgment."

"A little, eh? Dead against it, you mean. Don't look so blank, David, you are all right as far as me; when my heart is on your side, you can snap your fingers at my judgment."

David was cheered by this gracious revelation.

Eve was a tormenting little imp. She could not help reminding him every now and then that all her manœuvres and all his love were to end in disappointment.

These discouraging comments had dashed poor David's spirits more than once; but he was beginning to discover that they were invariably accompanied or followed by an access of cheerful zeal in the desperate cause; a pleasing phenomenon, though somewhat unintelligible to this honest fellow, who had never microscoped the enigmatical sex.

Mrs. Bazalgette reproached Lucy. "You never told me how handsome Mr. Dodd was!"

"Didn't I?"

"No. He is the handsomest man I ever saw."

"I have not observed that, but I think he is one of the worthiest."

"I should not wonder," said the other lady carelessly. "It is clear you don't appreciate him here. You half apologized to me for inviting him."

"That was because you are such a fashionable lady, and the Dodds have no such pretensions."

"All the better; my taste is not for sophisticated people; I only put up with them because I am obliged. Why, Lucy, you ought to know how my heart yearns for nature and truth; I am sure I have told you so often enough. An hour spent with a simple, natural creature, like Captain Dodd, refreshes me as a cooling breeze after the heat and odors of a crowded room."

"Miss Dodd is very natural, too, is she not?"

"Very. Pertness and vulgarity are natural enough — to some people."

"My uncle likes her the best of the two."

"Then your uncle is mad. But the fact is, men are no judges in such cases; they are always unjust to their own sex, and as blind to the faults of ours as beetles."

"But surely, aunt, she is very arch and lively."

"Pert and fussy, you mean."

"Pretty, at all events — rather?"

"What, with that snub nose?"

Lucy offered to invite other neighbors. Mrs. Bazalgette replied she didn't want to be bothered with rurality. "You can ask Captain Dodd, if you like; there is no need to invite the sister."

"Oh, yes, I must; my uncle likes her the best."

"But *I* don't; and I am only here for a day or two."

"Miss Dodd would be hurt. It would be unkind, discourteous."

"No, no. She watches him all the time like a little dragon."

"*Après?* We have no sinister designs on Mr. Dodd, have we?" and something unusually keen flashed upon Aunt Bazalgette out of the tail of the quiet Lucy's eye.

Mrs. Bazalgette looked cross. "Nonsense, Lucy; so tiresome! Can't we have an agreeable person without tacking on a disagreeable one?"

"Aunt," said Lucy pathetically, "ask me anything else in the world; but don't ask me to be rude, for *I can't.*"

"Well, then, you are bound to entertain her, since she is your choice, and leave me mine."

Lucy acquiesced softly.

David, tutored by his sister, now tried to seem interested in her who came between him and Lucy; and a miserable hand he made of this his first piece of acting. Luckily for him Mrs. Bazalgette liked the sound of her own voice; and his good looks, too, went a long way with the mature woman. Lucy and Eve sat together at the tea-table; Mr. Fountain slumbered below; Arthur was in the study nailed to a novel; Eve, under a careless exterior, watched intently to find out if Lucy under her calm surface cared for David at all or not, and also watched for a chance to serve him. She observed a certain languor about the young lady, but no attempt to take David from the coquette. At last, however, Lucy did say demurely, "Mr. Dodd seems to appreciate my aunt."

"Don't you think it is rather the other way?"

"That is an insidious question, Miss Dodd. I shall make no admissions; but I warn you, she is a very fascinating woman."

"My brother is greatly admired by the ladies, too."

"Oh, since I praised my champion, you have a right to praise yours. But he will get the worst in that little encounter."

"Why so?"

"Because my sprightly aunt forgets the very names of her conquests when once she has thoroughly made them."

"She will never make this one. My brother carries an armor against coquettes."

"Ay, indeed, and pray what may that be?" inquired Lucy a little quizzingly.

"A true and deep attachment."

"Ah!"

"And if you look at him a little closer you will see that he would be glad to get away from that old flirt; but David is very polite to ladies."

Lucy stole a look from under her silken lashes, and it so happened that at that very moment she encountered a sorrowful glance from David, that said plainly enough: I am obliged to be here, but I long to be there. She received this glance full in her eyes, absorbed it blandly, then lowered her lashes a moment, then turned her head with a sweet smile towards Eve. "I think you said your brother was engaged."

"No."

"I misunderstood you, then."

"Yes." Eve uttered this monosyllable so dryly that Lucy drew back, and immediately turned the conversation into chit-chat.

It had not trickled above ten minutes when an exclamation from David interrupted it; the young ladies turned instinctively, and there was David flushing all over, and speaking to Mrs. Bazalgette with a tremulous warmth, that, addressed as it was to a pretty woman, sounded marvellously like love-making.

Lucy turned her crest round a little haughtily, and shot such a glance on Eve. Eve read in it a compound of triumph and pique.

David came to Eve one morning with parchments in his hand, and a merry smile. "Eureka."

"You're another," said Eve, as quick as lightning, and upon speculation.

"I have made Mr. Fountain's pedigree out," explained David.

"You don't say so: won't he be pleased!"

"Yes. Do you think *she* will be pleased?"

"Why not? She will look pleased anyway. I say, don't you go and tell them the whole county was owned by the Dodds before Fountain or Funteyn or Font was ever heard of."

"Hardly. I have my own weaknesses, my lass. I've no need to adopt another man's."

"Bless my soul, how wise you are got! So sudden, too! You shouldn't surprise a body like that. Lucky I'm not hysterical. Now let me think, David — Solomon, I mean: no, you shall keep this discovery back awhile: it may be wanted." She then reminded him that the Fountains were capricious, that they had dropped him for a week and might again: if so, this might be useful to unlock their street door to him at need.

"Good heavens, Eve; what cunning!"

"David, when I have a bad cause in hand, I do one of two things, I drop it, or I go into it heart and soul. If my zeal offends you, I can retire from the contest with great pleasure."

"No! no! no! no! no! If you leave the helm I shall go ashore directly" — dismay of David: grim satisfaction of his imp.

This matter settled, David asked Eve if she did not think Master Nelson (Mr. Fountain's new ward) was a very nice boy.

"Yes, and I see he has taken a wonderful fancy to you."

"And so have I to him: we have had one or two walks together. He is to come here at twelve o'clock to-day."

"Now why couldn't you have asked me first, David? The painters are coming into the house to-day, and the paperers and all: and we can't be bothered with mathematics. You must do them at Font Abbey." Eve was

a little cross. David only laughed at her: but he hesitated about making a schoolhouse of Font Abbey, it would look like intruding.

"Pooh, nonsense," said Eve, "they will only be too glad to take advantage of your good nature."

"He is an orphan," said David, doggedly.

However, the lesson was given at Font Abbey, and, after it, Master Nelson came bounding into the drawing-room to the ladies.

"Oh, Lucy, Mr. Dodd is such a beautiful geometrician! He has been giving me a lesson: he is going to give me one every day. — He knows a great deal more than my last tutor." On this Master Nelson was questioned, and revealed that a friendship existed between him and Mr. Dodd, such as girls are incapable of (this was levelled at Lucy); being cross-examined as to the date of this friendship, he was obliged to confess that it had only existed four days; but was to last to death.

"But, Arthur," said Lucy, "will not this take up too much of Mr. Dodd's time? I think you had better consult Uncle Fountain before you make a positive arrangement of the kind."

"Oh, I have spoken to my guardian about it, and he was *so* pleased. He said that would save him a mathematical tutor."

"Oh, then," said Mrs. Bazalgette, "Mr. Dodd is to teach mathematics gratis."

"My friend is a gentleman," was the tumid reply. (Juveniles have a pomposity all their own, and exquisitely delicious:)[1] "we read together because we like one another, and that is why we walk together and play together: if we were to offer him money he would throw it at our heads:" Mr. Arthur then relaxed his severity, and condescending once more to the familiar, added —

[1] Read the Oxford Essays.

"And he has made me a kite, on mathematical principles, such a whacker: those in the shops are no use: and he has sent his mother's Bath-chair on to the Downs, and he is going to show me the kite draw him ten knots an hour in it: a knot means a mile, Lucy: so I can't stay wasting my time here; only, if you want to see some fun for once in your lives, come on the Downs in about an hour — will you? Oh, yes! do come!"

"Certainly not," said Mrs. Bazalgette, sharply.

"Excuse us, dear," said Lucy in the same breath.

"Well, Lucy," said Mrs. Bazalgette, "am I wrong about your uncle's selfishness? I have tried in vain ever since I came here to make you see it where *you* were the only sufferer."

"Not quite in vain, aunt," said Lucy sadly; "you have shown me defects in my poor uncle that I should never have discovered."

Mrs. Bazalgette smiled grimly.

"Only as you hate him, and I love him, and always mean to love him, permit me to call his defects 'thoughtlessness.' *You* can apply the harsh term 'selfishness' to the most good-natured, kind, indulgent — oh!"

"Ha! ha! Don't cry, you silly girl. Thoughtless? a calculating old goose, who is eternally aiming to be a fox — never says or does anything without meaning something a mile off. Luckily his veil is so thin that everybody sees through it but you. What do you think of his thought-less-ness in getting a tutor gratis? Poor Mr. Dodd!"

"I will answer for it, it is a pleasure to Mr. Dodd to be of service to his little friend," said Lucy, warmly.

"How do you know a bore is a pleasure to Mr. Dodd?"

"Mr. Dodd is a new acquaintance of yours, aunt, but I have had opportunities of observing his character: and I assure you all this pity is wasted."

"Why, Lucy, what did you say to Arthur just now? You are contradicting *yourself*."

"What a love of opposition I must have! Are you not tired of in-doors? Shall we go into the village?"

"No! I exhausted the village yesterday."

"The garden?

"No."

"Well then, suppose we sketch the church together. There is a good light."

"No. Let us go on the Downs, Lucy."

"Why, aunt, it — it is a long walk."

"All the better."

"But we said 'No.'"

"What has that to do with it?"

Arthur was right: the kites that are sold by shops of prey are not proportioned nor balanced; that is probably in some way connected with the circumstance that they are made to sell, not fly. The monster kite constructed by the light of Euclid rose steadily into the air like a balloon, and eventually, being attached to the chair, drew Mr. Arthur at a reasonable pace about half a mile over a narrow but level piece of turf that was on the top of the Downs; Q.E.D. This done, these two patient creatures had to wind the struggling monster in and go back again to the starting-point. Before they had quite achieved this, two petticoats mounted the hill and moved towards them across the plateau. At sight of them David thrilled from head to foot, and Arthur cried, "Oh, bother!" an unjust ejaculation; since it was by his invitation they came. His alarms were verified. The ladies made themselves number one directly, and the poor kite became a shield for flirtation. Arthur was so cross.

At last the B.'s desire to occupy attention brought her to the verge of trouble. Seeing David saying a word to Lucy, she got into the chair and went gayly off drawn

by the kite, which Arthur with a mighty struggle succeeded in hooking to the car for her. Now the plateau was narrow, and the chair wanted guiding; it was easy to guide it, but Mrs. Bazalgette did not know how; so it sidled in a pertinacious and horrid way towards a long and steepish slope on the left side. She began to scream, Arthur to laugh: the young are cruel; and, I am afraid, though he stood perfectly neutral to all appearance, his heart within nourished black designs. But David came flying up at her screams — just in time. He caught the lady's shoulders as she glided over the brow of the slope, and lifted her by his great strength up out of the chair, which went the next moment bounding and jumping athwart the hill and soon rolled over and grovelled in rather an ugly way.

Mrs. Bazalgette sobbed and cried so prettily on David's shoulder, and had to be petted and soothed by all hands. Inward composure soon returned, though not outward, and in due course histrionics commenced. First the sprain business; none of you do it better, ladies, whatever you may think. David had to carry her a bit. But she was too wise to be a bore. Next the heroic business; *would* be put down, *would* walk, possible or not, *would* not be a trouble to her kind friends. Then the martyr smiling through pain. David was very attentive to her; for while he was carrying her in his arms she had won his affection, all he could spare from Lucy. Which of you can tell all the consequences if you go and carry a pretty woman with her little insinuating mouth close to your ears?

Lucy and Arthur walked behind. Arthur sighed. Lucy was *rêveuse*. Arthur broke silence first. "Lucy!"

"Yes, dear."

"When is she going?"

"Arthur, for shame! I won't tell you. To-morrow."

"Lucy," said Arthur with a depth of feeling, "she spoils everything!"

Next morning——— *Come back?* What for? *I will have the goodness to tell you what she said in his ear?* Why, nothing.

You are a female reader? Oh! that alters the case: to attempt to deceive you would be cowardly, immoral, it would fail. She sighed "My preserver!" at which David had much ado not to laugh in her face. Then she murmured still more softly, "You must come and see me at my home before you sail — will you not? I insist (in the tone of a supplicant) come! promise me!"

"That I will — with pleasure," said David, flushing.

"Mind! it is a promise. Put me down! Lucy, come here and make him put me down. I *will not* be a burden to my friends."

CHAPTER VIII.

THAT same evening, Mrs. Bazalgette, being alone with Lucy in the drawing-room, put her arm round that young lady's waist, and lovingly, not seriously, as a man might have been apt to do, reminded her of her honorable promise — not to be caught in the net of matrimony at Font Abbey. Lucy answered, without embarrassment, that she claimed no merit for keeping her word: no one had had the ill taste to invite her to break it.

"You are either very sly, or very blind," replied Mrs. Bazalgette quietly.

"Aunt!" said Lucy piteously.

Mrs. Bazalgette, who, by many a subtle question and observation during the last week, had satisfied herself of Lucy's innocence, now set to work and laid Uncle Fountain bare.

"I do not speak in a hurry, Lucy; a hint came round to me a fortnight ago that you had an admirer here — and it turns out to be this Mr. Talboys."

"Mr. Talboys?"

"Yes. Does that surprise you? Do you think a young gentleman would come to Font Abbey three nights a week without a motive?"

Lucy reflected.

"It is all over the place that you two are engaged."

Lucy colored, and her eyes flashed with something very like anger; but she held her peace.

"Ask Jane else."

"What, take my servant into my confidence?"

"Oh, there is a way of setting that sort of people

chattering, without seeming to take any notice. To tell the truth, I have done it for you. It is all over the village, and all over the house."

"The proper person to ask must have been Uncle Fountain himself."

"As if he would have told me the truth."

"He is a gentleman, aunt, and would not have uttered a falsehood."

"Doctrine of chivalry! He would have uttered half a dozen in one minute. Besides, why should I question a person I can read without? Your uncle, with his babyish cunning that everybody sees through, has given me the only proof I wanted. He has not had Mr. Talboys here once since I came."

"Cunning little aunt! Mr. Talboys happens not to be at home: uncle told me so himself."

"Simple little niece — uncle told you a fib; Mr. Talboys is at home. And observe! until I came to Font Abbey, he was here three times a week. You admit that. I come; your uncle knows I am not so unobservant as you. Mr. Talboys is kept out of sight."

"The proof that my uncle has deceived me?" said Lucy coldly, and with lofty incredulity.

"Read that note from Miss Dodd."

"What! you in correspondence with Miss Dodd?"

"That is to say, she has thrust herself into correspondence with me; just like her assurance."

The letter ran thus: —

DEAR MADAM, — My brother requests me to say that in compliance with your request he called at the lodge of Talboys Park, and the people informed him Mr. Talboys has not left Talboys Park at all since Easter. I remain

Yours, etc.

Lucy was dumfounded.

"I suspected something, Lucy, so I asked Mr. Dodd to inquire."

"It was a singular commission to send him on."

"Oh, he takes long walks, cruises he calls them, and he is so good-natured. Well, what do you think of your uncle's veracity now?"

Lucy was troubled and distressed; but she mastered her countenance. "I think he has sacrificed it for once to his affection for me. I fear you are right; my eyes are opened to many circumstances. But do, oh, pray do, see his goodness in all this!"

"The goodness of a story-teller."

"He admires Mr. Talboys. He reveres him. No doubt he wished to secure his poor niece what he thinks a great match, and now you assign ill motives to him. Yes, I confess he has deviated from truth: cruel! cruel! what can you give me in exchange, if you rob me of my esteem for those I love?"

This innocent distress with its cause was too deep for a lady whose bright little intelligence leaned towards cunning rather than wisdom; in spite of her niece's trouble, and the brimming eyes that implored forbearance, she drove the sting merrily in again and again, till at last Lucy, who was not defending herself, but an absent friend, turned a little suddenly on her, and said, —

"And do you think he says nothing against you?"

"Oh! he is a backbiter too, is he? I didn't know he had that vice. Ah! and pray what can he find to say against me?"

"Oh! people that hate one another can always find something ill-natured to say," retorted Lucy, with a world of meaning.

Mrs. Bazalgette turned red, and her little nose went up into the air at an angle of forty-five. She said with

majestic disdain, "I don't hate the man. I don't condescend to *hate* him."

"Then don't condescend to *backbite* him, dear."

This home-thrust coming from such a quarter took away my Lady Disdain's very breath. She sat transfixed; then upon reflection got up a tear, and had to be petted.

This sweet lady departed, flinging down her fire-brand on those hospitable boards.

Lucy, though she had defended her uncle, was not a little vexed that he had managed matters so as to get her talked of with Mr. Talboys. Her natural modesty and reserve prevented her from remonstrating. Nor was there any positive necessity. She was one of those young ladies who seem born mistresses of the art of self-defence. Deriving the art, not from experience but from instinct, they are as adroit at seventeen as they are at twenty-seven: even so a last year's bird constructs her first nest as cunningly as can a veteran feathered architect.

Therefore, without a grain of discourtesy or tangible ill-temper, she quietly froze, and a small family with her, they could not tell how or why: for they had never suspected this girl's power; you would have seemed to them as one that mocketh had you told them they owed their gayety, their good-humor, their happiness, and their conversational powers, to her.

Of these Talboys suffered the most. She brought him to a stand-still by a very simple process. She no longer patted or spurred him: to vary the metaphor, a man that has no current must be stirred or stagnate; Lucy's light hand stirred Talboys no more; Talboys stagnated. Mr. Fountain suffered next in proportion. He began to find that something was the matter, but what he had no idea. He did not observe that, though Lucy answered him as

kindly as ever, she did not draw him out as heretofore, far less that she was vexed with him, and on her guard against him and everybody, like a *maitresse d'armes.* No! "the days were drawing in. The air was heavy; no carbon in it. Wind in the east again!" etc. So subtle is the influence of these silly little creatures upon creation's lords.

Mr. Talboys did not take delicate hints: he continued his visits three times a week, and the coast was kept clear for him. On this, Miss Fountain proceeded to overt acts of war. She brought a champion on the scene, a terrible champion, a champion so irresistible that I set any woman down as a coward who lets him loose upon a sex already so unequal so the contest as ours. What that champion's real name is, I have in vain endeavored to discover; but he is *called* "Headache." When this terrible ally mingled in the game — on the Talboys nights, — dismay fell upon the wretched males that abode in and visited the once cheerful, cosey Font Abbey. Messrs. Fountain and Talboys put their heads together in grave, anxious consultations, and Arthur vented a yell of remonstrance. He found the lady one afternoon preparing indisposition. She was leaning languidly back, and the fire was dying out of her eye, and the color out of her cheek, and the blinds were drawn down. The poor boy burst in upon this prologue. "Oh, Lucy," he cried, in piteous, foreboding tones, "don't go and have a headache to-night. It was so jolly till you took to these *stupid* headaches."

"I am so sorry, Arthur," said Lucy, apologetically, but at bottom she was inexorable. The disease reached its climax just before dinner; all remedies failed, and there was nothing for it but to return to her own room, and read the last new tale of domestic interest — and principle — till sleep came to her relief.

After dinner, Arthur shot out with the retiring servants, and interred himself in the study, where he sought out with care such wild romances as give entirely false views of life — and found them, "and so shut up in measureless content" — Macbeth.

The seniors consulted at their ease. They both appreciated the painful phenomenon. But they differed *toto cœlo* as to the cause. Mr. Fountain ascribed it to the sombre influence of Mrs. Bazalgette; and miscalled her till Jane's hair stood on end: she happened to be the one at the keyhole that night. Mr. Talboys laid all the blame on David Dodd: the discussion was vigorous, and occupied more than two hours, and each party brought forward good and plausible reasons; and, if neither made any progress towards converting the other, they gained this at least, that each corroborated himself. Now Mrs. Bazalgette was gone: no direct reprisals on her were possible. Registering a vow that one day or other he would be even with her, the senior consented, though not very willingly, to co-operate with his friend against an imaginary danger. In answer to his remark that the Dodds were never invited to tea now, Mr. Talboys had replied, "But I find from Mr. Arthur he visits the house every day on the pretence of teaching him mathematics; a barefaced pretence, a sailor teach mathematics!" Mr. Fountain had much ado to keep his temper at this pertinacity in a jealous dream. He gulped his ire down, however, and said somewhat sullenly, "I really cannot consent to send my poor friend's son to the university a dunce, and there is no other mathematician near."

"If I find you one," said Talboys, hastily, "will you relieve Mr. Dodd of his labors, and me of his presence?"

"Certainly," sighed the other. Poor David!

"Then there is my friend Bramby; he is a second wrangler; he shall take Arthur, and keep him till Miss

Fountain leaves us. Bramby will refuse me nothing. I have a living in my gift, and the incumbent is eighty-eight."

The senior consented with a pitying smile.

"Bramby will take him next week," said Talboys, severely.

Mr. Fountain nodded his head. It was all the assent he could effect; and at that moment there passed through him the sacrilegious thought, that the Conqueror must have imported an ass or two among his other forces; and that one of these, intermarrying with Saxon blood, had produced a mule, and that mule was his friend.

The same uneasy jealousy, which next week was to expel David from Font Abbey, impelled Mr. Talboys to call the very next day at one o'clock to see what was being done under cover of trigonometry. He found Mr. and Miss Fountain just sitting down to luncheon. David and Arthur were actually together somewhere, perhaps going through the farce of geometry. He was half vexed at finding no food for his suspicions. Presently, so spiteful is chance, the door opened, and in marched Arthur and David.

"I have made him stay to luncheon for once," said Arthur; "he couldn't refuse me, we are to part so soon." Arthur got next to Lucy, and had David on his left. Mr. Talboys gave Mr. Fountain a look, and very soon began to play his battery upon David.

"How do you naval officers find time to learn geometry?"

"What, don't you know it is a part of our education, sir?"

"I never heard that before."

"That is odd; but perhaps you have spent all your life ashore." (This in commiserating accents.) David then politely explained to Mr. Talboys that a man who

looked one day to command a ship must not only practise seamanship but learn navigation, and that navigation was a noble art founded on the exact sciences, as well as on practical experiences; that there did still linger upon the ocean a few of the old captains, who, born at a period when a ship in making a voyage used to run down her longitude first, and then begin to make her latitude, could handle a ship well and keep her off a lee shore *if they saw it in time*, but were in truth hardly to be trusted to take her from port to port. "We get a word with these old salts now and then when we are becalmed alongside, and the questions they put make us quite feel for them. Then they trust entirely to their instruments. They can take an observation, but they can't verify one. They can tack her and wear her (I have seen them do one when they should have done the other), and they can read the sky and the water better than we young ones, and while she floats they stick to her, and the greater the danger the louder the oaths — but that is all." He then assured them with modest fervor that much more than that was expected of the modern commander, particularly in the two capital articles of exact science and gentlemanly behavior. He concluded with considerable grace by apologizing for his enthusiastic view of a profession that had been too often confounded with the faults of its professors, faults that were curable, and that they would all, he hoped, live long enough to see cured. Then turning to Miss Fountain he said, "And if I began by despising my business, and taking a small view of it, how should I ever hold sticks with my able competitors, who study it with zeal and admiration?"

Lucy. "I don't quite understand all you have said, Mr. Dodd, but that last I think is unanswerable."

Fountain. "I am sure of it. As the Duke of Well-

ington said the other day in the House of Lords, 'that is a position I defy any noble lord to assault with success!' haw! ho!"

Mr. Talboys diverted his attack. "Pray, sir," said he with a sneer, "may I ask, have nautical commanders a particular taste for education as well as science?"

"Not that I know of. If you mean me, I am hungry to learn, and I find few but what can teach me something, and what little I know I am willing to impart, sir; give and take!"

"It is the direction of your teaching that seems to me so singular. Mathematics are horrible enough, and greatly to be avoided."

"That is news to me."

"On *terra firma* I mean."

At this opening of the case Talboys *versus* Newton, Arthur shrugged his shoulders to Lucy and David, and went swiftly out as from the presence of an idiot. It was abominably rude. But besides being ill-natured and a little shallow, Mr. Talboys was drawling out his words, and Arthur was sixteen, candid epoch, at which affectation in man or woman is intolerable to us; we get a little hardened to it long before sixty. Mr. Talboys bit his lip at this boyish impertinence, but he was too proud a man to notice it otherwise than by quietly incorporating the offender into his satire. "But the enigma is why you read them with a stripling, of whose breeding we have just had a specimen; mathematics with a hob-bade-hoy? *Grand Dieu!* Do pray tell us, Mr. Dodd, why you come to Font Abbey every day; is it really to teach Master Orson mathematics and manners?"

David did not sink into the earth as he was intended to.

"I come to teach him algebra and geometry, — what little I know."

"But your motive, Mr. Dodd?"

David looked puzzled, Lucy uneasy at seeing her guest badgered.

"Ask Miss Fountain why she thinks I do my best for Arthur?" said David, lowering his eyes.

Talboys colored and looked at Fountain.

"I think it must be out of pure goodness," said Lucy sweetly.

Mr. Talboys ignored her calmly: "Pray enlighten us, Mr. Dodd. Now, what is the real reason you walk a mile every day to do mathematics with that interesting and well-behaved juvenile?"

"You are very curious, sir," said David grimly, his ire rising unseen.

"I am, on this point."

"Well, since you must be told what most men could see without help, it is — because he is an orphan, and because an orphan finds a brother in every man that is worth the shoe-leather he stands in; can ye read the riddle now, ye lubber?" And David started up haughtily, and, with contempt and wrath on his face, marched through the open window and joined his little friend on the lawn, leaving Fountain red with anger and Talboys white.

The next thing was, Lucy rose and went quietly out of the room by the door.

"It is the last time he shall set his foot within my door: provoking cub!"

"You are convinced at last that he is a dangerous rival."

"A rival? nonsense and stuff!"

"Then why was she so agitated? She went out with tears in her eyes: I saw them."

"The poor girl was frightened, no doubt. We don't have fracas at Font Abbey. On this one spot of earth

comfort reigns, and balmy peace, and shall reign unruffled while I live. The passions are not admitted here, sir. Gracious heaven forbid! I'd as soon see a bonfire in the middle of my dining-room, as Jealousy and Co."

"In that case you had better exclude the cause."

"The cause is your imagination, my good friend; but I will give it no handle. I will exclude David Dodd until she has accepted you in form."

With this understanding the friends parted.

After dinner that same day, Arthur sat in the drawing-room with Lucy. He was reading: she working placidly. She looked off her work demurely at him several times. He was absorbed in a flighty romance. "I have dropped my worsted, Arthur. It is by you."

Arthur picked the ball up and brought it her; then back to his romance, heart and soul. Another sidelong glance at him. Then, after a long silence, "Your book seems very interesting."

"I'll fling it against the wall if it doesn't mind," was the infuriated reply. "Here are two fools quarrelling, page after page, and can't see, or won't see, what everybody else can see, that it is all an absurd misunderstanding. One word of common-sense would put it all right."

"Then why not put the book down and talk to me?"

"I can't. It won't let me. I must see how long the two fools will go on not seeing what everybody else sees."

"Will not the number of volumes tell you that?"

"Signorina, don't you try to be satirical," said the sprightly youth: "you'll only make a mess of it. What is the use dropping one drop of vinegar into such a great big honey-pot?"

"You are a saucy boy," retorted Lucy, in tones of gentle approbation.

A long silence.

"Arthur, will you hold this skein for me?"

Arthur groaned.

"Never mind, dear. I will try and manage with a chair."

"No, you won't now: there."

The victim was caught by the hands. But, with fatal instinctive perverseness, he sat in silent amazement watching Lucy's supple white hand disentangling impossibilities, instead of chattering as he was intended to. Lucy gave a little sigh. Here was a dreadful business: obliged to elicit the information she had resolved should be forced upon her.

"By-the-by, Arthur," said she carelessly, "did Mr. Dodd say anything to you on the lawn?"

"What about?"

"About what was said after you went out so ru—so suddenly."

"No; why? what was said? Something about me? tell me."

"Oh no, dear, as Mr. Dodd did not mention it, it is not worth while. You must not move your hands, please."

"Now, Lucy, that is too bad. It is not fair to excite one's curiosity, and then stop directly."

"But it is nothing. Mr. Talboys teased Mr. Dodd a little, that is all; and Mr. Dodd was not so patient as I have seen him on like occasions. There, *you* are disentangled at last."

"Now, signorina, let us talk sense. Tell me, which do you like the best of all the gentlemen that come here?"

"You, dear: only keep your hands still."

"None of your chaff, Lucy."

"Chaff: what is that?"

"Flattery, then. I hope it isn't that affected fool Talboys; for I hate him."

"I cannot undertake to share your prejudices, Mr. Arthur."

"Then you actually like him."

"I don't dislike him."

"Then I pity your taste, that is all."

"Mr. Talboys has many good qualities; and if he was what you describe him, Uncle Fountain would not prize him as he does."

"There is something in that, Lucy; but I think my guardian and you are mad upon just that one point. Talboys, he is a fool and a snob."

"Arthur," said Lucy, severely, "if you speak so of my uncle's friends, you and I shall quarrel."

"You won't quarrel just now, if you can help it."

"Won't I though? why not, pray?"

"Because your skein is not wound yet."

"Oh, you little black-hearted thing!"

"I know human nature, miss," said the urchin pompously. "I have read Miss Edgeworth!"

He then made an appeal to her candor and good sense. "Now don't you see my friend Mr. Dodd is worth them all put together?"

"I can't quite see that."

"He is so noble, so kind, so clever."

"You must own he is a little brusque."

"Never. And if he is, that is not like hurting people's feelings on purpose, and saying nasty, ill-natured things wrapped up in politeness that you daren't say out like a man, or you'd get kicked. He is a gentleman inside: that Talboys is only one outside; but you girls can't look below the surface."

"We have not read Miss Edgeworth. His hands are not so white as Mr. Talboys'."

"Nor his liver either — oh, you goose! which has the finest eyes? why, you don't see such eyes as Mr. Dodd's

every day. They are as large as yours, only his are dark."

"Don't be angry, dear. You must admit his voice in very loud."

"He can make it loud; but it is always low and gentle whenever he speaks to you. I have noticed that: so that is monstrous ungrateful of you."

"There, the skein is wound. Arthur!"

"Well?"

"I have a great mind to tell you something your friend Mr. Dodd said while you were out of the room; but no, you shall finish your story first."

"No, no! hang the story."

"Ah, you only say that out of politeness. I have taken you from it so long already."

The impetuous boy jumped up, seized the volumes, dashed out, and presently came running back crying, "There, I have thrown them behind the bookcase for ever and ever. Now will you tell me what he said?"

Lucy smiled triumphantly. She could relish a bloodless victory over an inanimate rival. Then she said softly, "Arthur, what I am going to tell you is in confidence."

"I will be torn in pieces before I betray it," said the young chevalier.

Lucy smiled at his extravagance, then began again very gravely, "Mr. Talboys, who, with many good qualities, has, what shall I say, — narrow and artificial views compared with your friend" —

"Ah! now you are talking sense."

"Then why interrupt me, dear — began teasing him and wanting to know the real reason he comes here."

"The real reason? What did the fool mean?"

"How can I tell, Arthur, any more than you? Mr. Dodd evidently thought that some slur was meant on the purity of his friendship for you."

"Shame! shame! oh!"

"I saw his anger rising; for Mr. Dodd, though not irritable, is passionate — at least I think so. I tried to smooth matters. But no; Mr. Talboys persisted in putting this ungenerous question, when all of a sudden Mr. Dodd burst out, 'You wish to know why I love Arthur? because he is an orphan, and because an orphan finds a brother in every man who is worth the shoe-leather he stands in. That is all the riddle, you lubber!' It was terribly rude; but oh, Arthur! I must tell you your friend looked noble: he seemed to swell and rise to a giant as he spoke, and we all felt such little shrimps around him; and his lip trembled, and fire flashed from his eyes. How *you* would have admired him then! And he swept out of the room and left us for his little friend, who is worthy of it all, since he stands up for him against us all. Arthur! why, he is crying! poor child! and do you think those words did not go to *my* heart as well? I am an orphan, too. Arthur, don't cry, love! oh! oh! oh!"

Oh, magic of a word from a great heart! such a word, uncouth and simple, but hot from a manly bosom, pierced silk and broadcloth, as if they had been calico and fustian, and made a fashionable young lady and a bold schoolboy take hands and cry together. But such sweet tears dry quickly: they dry almost as they flow.

"Hallo!" cried the mercurial prince, "a sudden thought strikes me. You kept running him down a minute ago."

"Me?" said Lucy, with a look of amazement.

"Why, you know you did: now tell me, what was that for?"

"To give you the pleasure of defending him."

"Oh. Hum? — Lucy, you are not quite so simple as

the others think; sometimes I can't make you out myself."

"Is it possible? well, you know what to do, dear."

"No, I don't."

"Why, read Miss Edgeworth over again."

CHAPTER IX.

Arthur was bundled off to a private tutor, and the Dodds invited to Font Abbey no more; and Talboys dined there three days a week. So far, David Dodd was in a poor and miserable position compared with Talboys, who visited Lucy at pleasure, and could close the very street door against a rival, real or imaginary. But the street door is not the door of the heart, and David had one little advantage over his powerful antagonist: it was a slender one, and he owed it to a subtle source — female tact. His sister and ally had long been aware of Talboys. The gossip of the village had enlightened her as to his visits and supposed pretensions. She had deliberately withheld this information from her brother, for she said to herself, "Men always make *such* fools of themselves when they are jealous. No. David shan't even know he has got a rival: if he did he would be wretched and live on thorns, and then he would get into passions and either make a fool of himself in her eyes, or do something rash and be shown to the door." Thus far Eve, defending her brother. And with this piece of shrewdness she did a little more for him than she intended or was conscious of: for Talboys, either by feeble calculation or instinct of petty rivalry, constantly sneered at David before Lucy; David never mentioned Talboys' name to her. Now superior ignores, inferior detracts. Thus Talboys lowered himself and rather elevated David: moreover, he counteracted his own strongest weapon, the street-door. After putting David out of sight, this judicious rival could not let him fade out of

mind too: he found means to stimulate the lady's memory, and, as far as in him lay, made the absent present. May all my foes unweave their webs as cleverly! David knew nothing of this. He saw himself shut out from Paradise, and he was sad. He felt the loss of Arthur, too. The orphan had been medicine to him. When a man is absorbed in a hopeless passion, to be employed every day in a good action has a magical soothing influence on the racked heart. Try this, instead of suicide, despairing lover! It is a quack remedy: no M.D. prescribes it. Never you mind; in desperate ills a little cure is worth a deal of etiquette. Poor David had lost this innocent comfort, lost too the pleasure of going every day to the house she lived in. To be sure, when he used to go he seldom caught a glimpse of her, but he did now and then, and always enjoyed the hope.

"I see how it is," said he, to Eve one day; "I am not welcome to the master of the house. Well, he is the master: I shall not force my way where I am not welcome;" but after these spirited words he hung his head.

"Oh, nonsense," said Eve. "It isn't him. There are mischief-makers behind."

"Ay? just you tell me who they are! I'll teach them to come across my hawse," and David's eyes flashed.

"Don't you be silly," said Eve, and turned it off; "and don't be so down-hearted; why, you are not half a man."

"No more I am, Eve. What has come to me?"

"What indeed? just when everything goes swimmingly."

"Eve, how can you say so!"

"Why, David, she leaves this in a few days for Mrs. Bazalgette's house. You tell me you have got a warm

invitation there. Then make the play there, and, if you can't win her, say you don't deserve her, twiddle your thumb and see a bolder lover carry her off. You foolish boy, she is only a woman, she is to be won. If you don't mind, some man will show you it was as easy as you think it is hard; timid wooers make a mountain of a mole-hill."

"Why, it is you who have kept me backing and filling all this time, Eve."

"Of course. Prudence at first starting; but that isn't to say courage is never to come in: first creep within the fortification-wall; but, once inside, if you don't storm the city that minute, woe be unto you; come, cheer up! it is only for a few days, and then she goes where you will have her all to yourself; besides, you shall have one sweet delicious evening with her all alone before she goes. What, have you forgotten the pedigree? Wasn't I right to keep that back? and now march and take a good long walk."

Her tongue was a spur: it made David's drooping manhood rear and prance — a trumpet and pealed victory to come. David kissed her warmly, and strode away radiant. She looked sadly after him.

She had never spoken so hopefully, so encouragingly. The reason will startle such of my readers as have not taken the trouble to comprehend her. It was that she had never so thoroughly desponded; such was Eve; when matters went smoothly, she itched to torment and take the gloss off David; but now the affair looked really desperate; so it would have been unkind not to sustain him with all her soul. The cause of her despondency and consequent cheerfulness, shall now be briefly related. Scarce an hour ago she had met Miss Fountain in the village and accompanied her home. For David's sake she had diverted the conversation by easy degrees

to the subject of marriage, in order to sound Miss Fountain. "You would never give your hand without your heart, I am sure."

"Heaven forbid," was the reply.

"Not even to a coronet?"

"Not even to a crown."

So far so good, but Miss Fountain went on to say that the heart was not the only thing to be consulted in a matter so important as marriage.

"It is the only thing I would ever consult," said Eve. As Lucy did not reply, Eve asked her next what she would do if she loved a poor man? Lucy replied coldly, that it was not her present intention to love anybody but her relations; that she should never love any gentleman until she had been married to him, or, correcting herself, at all events, been some time engaged to him, and she should certainly never engage herself to any one who would not rather improve her position in society than deteriorate it. Eve met these pretty phrases with a look of contempt, as much as to say, "While you speak I am putting all that into plain vulgar English." The other did not seem to notice it. "To leave this interesting topic for a while," said she languidly, "let me consult you, Miss Dodd. I have not, as you may have noticed, great abilities, but I have received an excellent education. To say nothing of those *soi-disant* accomplishments with which we adorn, and sometimes weary, society, my dear mother had me well grounded in languages and history. Without being eloquent I have a certain fluency, in which, they tell me, even members of parliament are deficient, smoothly as their speeches read made into English by the newspapers. Like yourself, Miss Dodd, and all our sex, I am not destitute of tact; and tact, you know, is 'the talent of talents.' I feel," here she bit her lip, "myself fit for public life. I am ambitious."

"Oh, you are, are you?"

"Very; and perhaps you will kindly tell me how I had best direct that ambition; the army? no; marching against daisies, and dancing and flirting in garrison towns, is frivolous and monotonous too. It isn't as if war was raging, trumpets ringing and squadrons charging. Your brother's profession? Not for the world. I am a coward [consistent]. Shall I lower my pretensions to the learned professions?"

"I don't doubt your cleverness, but the learned professions?"

"A woman has a tongue, you know, and that is their grand requisite. I interrupted you, Miss Dodd, pray forgive me."

"Well, then let us go through them. To be a clergyman, what is required? to preach, and visit the sick, and feel for them, and understand what passes in the sorrowful hearts of the afflicted. Is that beyond our sex?"

"That last is far more beyond a man at most times; and oh, the discourses one has to sit out in church! Portia made a very passable barrister, Miss Dodd."

"Oh, did she?"

"Why, you know she did; and as for medicine, the great successes there are achieved by honeyed words with a long word thrown in here and there. I've heard my own mamma say so, — now which shall I be?"

"I suppose you are making fun of me," said Eve, "but there is many a true word spoken in jest. You could be a better parson, lawyer, or doctor than nine out of ten; but they won't let us; they know we could beat them into fits at anything but brute strength and wickedness. So they have shut all those doors in us poor girls' faces."

"There, you see," said Lucy archly; "but two lines are open to our honorable ambition, marriage and — water-

colors. I think marriage the more honorable of the two; above all, it is the more fashionable. Can you blame me then if my ambition chooses the altar and not the easel?"

"So that is what you have been bringing me to."

"You came of your own accord," was the sly retort. "Let me offer you some luncheon."

"No, thank you. I could not eat a morsel just now."

Eve went away, her bright little face visibly cast down. It was not Miss Fountain's words only, and that new trait of hard satire, which she had so suddenly produced from her secret recesses; her very tones were cynical and worldly to Eve's delicate sense of hearing.

"Poor, poor David!" she thought, and when she got to the door of the room she sighed; and as she went home she said more than once to herself, "no more heart than a marble statue. Oh! how true our first thought is. I come back to mine" . . .

Lucy (*sola*). "*Then* what right had she to come here and try to turn me inside out?"

CHAPTER X.

As the hour of Lucy's departure drew near, Mr. Fountain became anxious to see her betrothed to his friend, for fear of accidents. "You had better propose to her in form, or authorize me to do so, before she goes to that Mrs. Bazalgette."

This time it was Talboys that hung back. He objected that the time was not opportune. "I make no advance," said he; "on the contrary, I seem of late to have lost ground with your niece."

"Oh, I've seen the sort of distance she has put on. All superficial, my dear sir. I read it in your favor. I know the sex; they can't elude me. Pique, sir, nothing on earth but female pique. She is bitter against us for shilly-shallying. These girls hate shilly-shally in a man. They are monopolists, severe monopolists. Shilly-shally is one of their monopolies. Throw yourself at her feet, and press her with ardor; she will clear up directly." The proposed attitude did not tempt the stiff Talboys. His pride took the alarm.

"Thank you, it is a position in which I should not care to place myself unless I was quite sure of not being refused. No, I will not risk my proposal while she is under the influence of this Dodd; he is, somehow or other, the cause of her coldness to me."

"Good heavens! why, she has been hermetically sealed against him ever so long!" cried Fountain almost angrily.

"I saw his sister come out of your gate only the other day. Sisters are emissaries; dangerous ones, too. Who

knows, her very coldness may be vexation that this man is excluded. Perhaps she suspects me as the cause."

"These are chimeras, wild chimeras. My niece cares nothing for such people as the Dodds."

"I beg your pardon, these low attachments are the strongest. It is a notorious fact."

"There is no attachment; there is nothing but civility, and the affability of a well-bred superior to an inferior. Attachment! Why, there is not a girl in Europe less capable of marrying beneath her, and she is too cool to flirt — but with a view to a matrimonial position. The worst of it is, that while you fear an imaginary danger you are running into a real one. If we are defeated it will not be by Dodd, but by that Mrs. Bazalgette. Why, now I think of it, whence does Lucy's coldness date? from that viper's visit to my house. Rely on it, if we are suffering from any rival influence, it is that woman's. She is a dangerous woman, she is a character I detest; she is a schemer."

"Am I to understand that Mrs. Bazalgette has views of her own for Miss Fountain?" inquired Talboys, his jealousy half inclined to follow the new lead.

"In all probability."

"Oh! then it is mere surmise."

"No, it is not mere surmise; it is the reasonable conjecture of a man who knows her sex, and human nature, and life. Since I have my views, what more likely than that she has hers, if only to spite me? Add to this her strange visit to Font Abbey, and the sombre influence she has left behind. And to this woman Lucy is going unprotected by any positive pledge to you. Here is the true cause for anxiety. And, if you do not share it with me, it must be that you do not care about our alliance."

Mr. Talboys was hurt. "Not care for the alliance?

It was dear to him; all the dearer for the difficulties. He was attached to Miss Fountain, warmly attached; would do anything for her, except run the risk of an affront — a refusal." Then followed a long discussion, the result of which was that he would not propose in form now, but *would* give proofs of his attachment such as no lady could mistake; *inter alia*, he would be sure to spend the last evening with her, and would ride the first stage with her next day, squeeze her hand at parting, and look unutterable. And, as for the formal proposal, that was only postponed a week or two. Mr. Fountain was to pay his visit to Mrs. Bazalgette, and secretly prepare Miss Fountain; then Talboys would suddenly pounce, and — pop. The grandeur and boldness of this strategy staggered rather than displeased Mr. Fountain.

"What, under her own roof?" and he could not help rubbing his hands with glee and spite, "under her own eye and *malgré* her personal influence? Why, you are Nap. I.!"

"She will be quite out of the way of the Dodds there," said Talboys slyly.

The senior groaned. ("'Mule I.,' I should have said.")

And so they cut and dried it all.

The last evening came, and with it, just before dinner, a line by special messenger from Mr. Talboys. "He could not come that evening. His brother had just arrived from India; they had not met for seven years. He could not set him to dine alone."

After dinner, in the middle of her uncle's nap, in came Lucy, and, unheard-of occurrence, deed of dreadful note, woke him. She was radiant, and held a note from Eve. "Good news, uncle — those good kind Dodds! They are coming to tea."

"What?" and he wore a look of consternation. Recollecting, however, that Talboys was not to be there, he

was indifferent again. But when he read the note he longed for his self-invited visitors. It ran thus: —

DEAR MISS FOUNTAIN, — David has found out the genealogy. He says there is no doubt you came from the Fountains of Melton, and he can prove it. He has proved it to me, and I am none the wiser. So, as David is obliged to go away to-morrow, I think the best way is for me to bring him over with the papers to-night. We will come at eight, unless you have company.

"He is a worthy young man," shouted Mr. Fountain. "What o'clock is it?"

"Very nearly eight. O uncle! I am so glad. How pleased you will be!"

The Dodds arrived soon after, and while tea was going on David spread his parchments on the table, and submitted his proofs. He had eked out the other evidence by means of a series of leases. The three fields that went with Font Abbey had been let a great many times, and the landlord's name, Fountain in the latter leases, was Fontaine in those of remoter date. David even showed his host the exact date at which the change of orthography took place. "You are a shrewd young gentleman," cried Mr. Fountain gleefully. David then asked him what were the names of his three meadows. The names of them? he didn't know they had any.

"No names? why, there isn't a field in England that hasn't its own name, sir. I noticed that before I went to sea." He then told Mr. Fountain the names of his three meadows, and curious names they were; two of them were a great deal older than William the Conqueror. David wrote them on a slip of paper. He then produced a chart.

"What is that, Mr. David?"

"A map of the Melton estate, sir."

"Why, how on earth did you get that?"

"An old shipmate of mine lives in that quarter; got him to make it for me. Overhaul it, sir; you will find the Melton estate has got all your three names within a furlong of the mansion-house."

"From this you infer" —

"That one of that house came here and brought the *e* along with him, that has got dropped somehow since, and being so far from his birthplace, he thought he would have one or two of the old names about him. What will you bet me he hasn't shot more than one brace of partridges on those fields about Melton, when he was a boy? So he christened your three fields afresh, and the new names took: likely he made a point of it with the people in the village. For all that, I have found one old fellow who stands out against them to this day; his name is Newel. He will persist in calling the field next to your house Snap Witcheloe. 'That is what my grand-dad allus named it,' says he, 'and that is the name it went by afore there was ever a Fountain in this ere parish.' I have looked in the parish register, and I see Newel's grandfather was born in 1690. Now, sir, all this is not mathematical proof; but when you come to add it to your own direct proofs that carry you within a cable's length of port Fontaine, it is very convincing; and, not to pay out too much yarn, I'll bet — my head — to a china orange" —

"David, don't be vulgar."

"Never mind, Mr. Dodd; be yourself."

"Well, then, to serve Eve out, I'll bet her head (and that is a better one than mine), to a china orange, that Fontaine and Fountain are one, and that the first Fontaine came over here from Melton more than a hundred and thirty years ago, and less than a hundred and forty, when Newel's grandfather was a young man."

"*Probatum est,*" shouted old Fountain, his eyes sparkling, his voice trembling with emotion. "Miss Fontaine," said he, turning to Lucy, throwing a sort of pompous respect into his voice and manner, "you shall never marry any man that cannot give you as good a home as Melton, and quarter as good a coat of arms with you as your own, the Founteyns'." David's heart took a chill, as if an ice-arrow had gone through it. "So join me to thank our young friend here."

Mr. Fountain held out his hand. David gave his mechanically in return, scarcely knowing what he did. "You are a worthy and most intelligent young man, and you have made an old man as happy as a lord," said the old gentleman, shaking him warmly.

"And there is my hand, too," said Lucy, putting out hers with a blush, "to show you I bear you no malice — for being more unselfish and more sagacious than us all." Instantly David's cold chill fled unreasonably: his cheeks burned with blushes, his eyes glowed, his heart thumped, and the delicate, white, supple, warm, velvet hand, that nestled in his, shot electric tremors through his whole frame; when glided, with well-bred noiselessness, through the open door — Mr. Talboys — and stood looking yellow at that ardent group, and the massive yet graceful bare arm stretched across the table, and the white hand melting into the brown one.

Whilst he stood staring, David looked up and caught that strange, that yellow look. Instantly a light broke in on him. "So I should look," felt David, "if I saw her hand in his." He held Lucy's hand tight (she was just beginning to withdraw it), and glared from his seat on the new-comer like a lion ready to spring. Eve read and turned pale; she knew what was in the man's blood.

Lucy now quietly withdrew her hand, and turned

with smiling composure towards the new-comer, and Mr. Fountain thrust a minor anxiety between the passions of the rivals. He rose hastily and went to Talboys, and under cover of a warm welcome, took care to let him know Miss Dodd had been kind enough to invite herself and David. He then explained with uneasy animation what David had done for him.

Talboys received all this with marked coldness; but it gave him time to recover his self-possession. He shook hands with Lucy, all but ignored David and Eve, and quietly assumed the part of principal personage: he then spoke to Lucy in a voice tuned for the occasion to give the impression that confidential communication was not unusual between him and her. He apologized, scarce above a whisper, for not having come to dinner on her last day.

"But after dinner," said he, "my brother seemed fatigued. I treacherously recommended bed. You forgive me? The nabob instantly acted on my selfish hint; I mounted my horse, and *me voilà*." In short, in two minutes he had retaliated ten-fold on David. As for Lucy, she was a good deal amused at this sudden public assumption of a tenderness the gentleman had never exhibited in private; but a little mortified at his parade of mysterious familiarity; still, for a certain female reason, she allowed neither to appear, but wore an air of calm cordiality, and gave Talboys his full swing.

David, seated sore against his will at another table, whither Mr. Fountain removed him and parchments, on pretence of inspecting the leases, listened with hearing preternaturally keen — listened and writhed.

His back was towards them. At last he heard Talboys propose in murmuring accents to accompany her the first stage of her journey. She did not answer directly, and that second was an age of anguish to poor David.

When she did answer, as if to compensate for her hesitation, she said with alacrity, "I shall be delighted; it will vary the journey most agreeably; I will ride the pony you were so kind as to give me."

The letters swam before David's eyes.

Lucy came to the table, and standing close behind David, so close that he felt her pure cool breath mingle with his hair, said to her uncle, "Mr. Talboys proposes to me to ride the first stage to-morrow: if I do, you must be of the party."

"Oh! must I? well, I'll roll after you in my phaeton."

At this moment, Eve could bear no longer the anguish on David's beloved face. It made her hysterical, she could hardly command herself; she rose hastily, and saying, "We must not keep you up, the night before a journey," took leave with David. As he shook hands with Lucy, his imploring eye turned full on hers, and sought to dive into her heart. But that soft sapphire eye was unfathomable; it was like those dark-blue southern waters that seem to reveal all, yet hide all, so deep they are though clear.

Eve. "Thank heaven we are safe out of the house."

David. "I have got a rival."

Eve. "A pretty rival: she doesn't care a button for him."

David. "He rides the first stage with her."

Eve. "Well, what of that?"

David. "I have got a rival."

David was none of your lie-a-beds. He rose at five in summer, six in winter, and studied hard till breakfast-time. After that he was at every fool's service. This morning he did not appear at the breakfast-table, and the servant had not seen him about. Eve ran up-stairs

full of anxiety. He was not in his room. The bed had not been slept in: the impress of his body outside showed, however, that he had flung himself down on it to snatch an uneasy slumber.

Eve sent the girl into the village to see if she could find him, or hear tidings of him. The girl ran out without her bonnet, partaking her mistress's anxiety, but did not return for nearly half an hour, that seemed an age to Eve. The girl had lost some time by going to Josh Grace for information. Grace's house stood in an orchard; so he was the unlikeliest man in the village to have seen David. She set against this trivial circumstance the weighty one that he was her sweetheart, and went to him first.

"I han't a-sin him, Sue; thee hadst better ask at the blacksmith's shop," said Joshua Grace.

Susan profited by this hint, and learned at the blacksmith's shop, that David had gone by up the road about six in the morning, walking very fast. She brought the news to Eve.

"Towards Royston?"

"Yes, miss, but la! he won't ever think to go all the way to Royston, — without his breakfast."

"That will do, Susan. I think I know what he is gone for."

On the servant retiring, her assumed firmness left her.

"On the road *she* is to travel! and his rival with her. What mad act is he going to do? Heaven have mercy on him, and me, and her!"

Eve knew what was in the man's blood. She sat trembling at home till she could bear it no longer: she put on her bonnet and sallied out on the road to Royston, determined to stop the carriage, profess to have business at Royston, and take a seat beside Mr. Fountain. She felt that the very sight of her might prevent David from

committing any great rashness or folly. On reaching the high road, she observed a fresh track of narrow wheels that her rustic experience told her could only be those of a four-wheeled carriage; and, making inquiries, she found she was too late: carriage and riders had gone on before.

Her heart sank. Too late by a few minutes; but somehow she could not turn back: she walked as fast as she could after the gay cavalcade, a prey to one of those female anxieties we have all laughed at as extravagant, proved unreasonable, and sometimes found prophetic.

Meantime Lucy and Mr. Talboys cantered gayly along. Mr. Fountain rolled after in a phaeton: the travelling-carriage came last. Lucy was in spirits: motion enlivens us all, but especially such of us as are women. She had also another cause for cheerfulness, that may perhaps transpire. Her two companions and unconscious dependents were governed by her mood: she made them larks to-day, as she had owls for some weeks past, last night excepted. She would fall back every now and then and let Uncle Fountain pass her; then come dashing up to him, and either pull up short with a piece of solemn information like an *aide-de-camp* from headquarters, or pass him shooting a shaft of raillery back into his chariot, whereat he would rise with mock fury and yell a repartee after her. Fountain found himself good company, — Talboys himself. It was not the lady: oh, dear no! it never is.

At last all seemed so bright, and Mr. Talboys found himself so agreeable, that he suddenly recalled his high resolve not to pop in a county desecrated by Dodds. "I'll risk it now," said he, and he rode back to Fountain and imparted his intention, and the senior nearly bounded off his seat; he sounded the charge in a stage whisper, because of the coachman, — "At her at once!"

"Secret conference? hum!" said Lucy, twisting her pony, and looking slyly back.

Mr. Talboys rejoined her, and after a while began in strange, melodious accents, "You will leave a blank" —

"Shall we canter?" said Lucy, gayly; and off went the pony. Talboys followed, and at the next hill resumed the sentimental cadence.

"You will leave a sad blank here, Miss Fountain."

"No greater than I found," replied the lady, innocently (?). "Oh, dear!" she cried, with sudden interest, "I am afraid I have dropped my comb." She felt under her hat. [No, viper! you have not dropped your comb, but you are feeling for a large black pin with a head to it: there, you have found it, and taken it out of your hair, and got it hid in your hand — what is that for?]

"Ten times greater," moaned the honeyed Talboys: "for then we had not seen you. Ah! my dear Miss Fountain — the devil! wo-ho, Goliah!"

For the pony spilt the treacle. He lashed out both heels with a squeak of amazement within an inch of Mr. Talboys' horse, who instantly began to rear, and plunge, and snort. While Talboys, an excellent horseman, was calming his steed, Lucy was condoling with hers. "Dear little naughty fellow!" said she, patting him. ["I did it too hard."]

"As I was saying, the blessing we have never enjoyed, we do not miss; but now that you have shone upon us, what can reconcile us to lose you, unless it be the hope that —— hallo!"

Lucy. "Ah!"

The pony was off with a bound like a buck. She had found out the right depth of pin this time. "Ah! where is my whip? I have dropped it: how careless." Then they had to ride back for the whip, and by this means joined Mr. Fountain. Lucy rode by his side, and

got the carriage between her and her beau. By this plan she not only evaded sentiment, but matured by a series of secret trials her skill with her weapon. Armed with this new science she issued forth, and whenever Mr. Talboys left off indifferent remarks and sounded her affections, she probed the pony, and he kicked or bolted as the case might require.

"Confound that pony," cried Talboys; "he used to be quiet enough."

"Oh, don't scold him, dear playful little love. He carries me like a wave."

At this simple sentence, Talboys' dormant jealousy contrived to revive. He turned sulky, and would not waste any more tenderness, and presently they rattled over the stones of Royston. Lucy commended her pony with peculiar earnestness to the ostler. "Pray groom him well and feed him well, sir; he is a love." The ostler swore he would not wrong her ladyship's nag for the world.

Lucy then expressed her desire to go forward without delay. "Aunt will expect me." She took her seat in the carriage, bade a kind farewell to both the gentlemen now that no tender answer was possible, and was whirled away.

Thus the coy virgin eluded the pair.

Now her manner in taking leave of Talboys was so kind, so smiling (in the sweet consciousness of having baffled him), that Fountain felt sure it all had gone smoothly. They were engaged.

"Well?" he cried, with great animation.

"No," was the despondent reply.

"Refused?" screeched the other; "impossible!"

"No, thank you," was the haughty reply.

"What, then? did you change your mind, didn't you propose after all?"

"I *couldn't*. That —— pony wouldn't keep still!"

Fountain groaned.

Lucy, left to herself, gave a little sigh of relief. She had been playing a part for the last twenty-four hours. Her cordiality with Mr. Talboys naturally misled Eve and David, and perhaps a male reader or two. Shall I give the clew? it may be useful to you young gentlemen. Well, then, her sex are compounders. Accustomed from childhood never to have anything entirely their own way, they are content to give and take. And these terms once accepted, it is a point of honor and tact with them not to let a creature see the irksome part of the bargain is not as delicious as the other — one coat of their own varnish goes over the smooth and the rough, the bitter and the sweet.

Now Lucy, besides being singularly polite and kind, was *femme jusqu'au bout des ongles*. If her instincts had been reasons, and her vague thoughts could have been represented by anything so definite as words, the result might have appeared thus:

"A few short hours, and you can bore me no more, Mr. Talboys. Now what must I do for you in return? *Seem not to be bored to-day?* mais c'est la moindre des choses. *Seem to be pleased with your society?* Why not? it is only for an hour or two, and my seeming to like it will not prolong it. My heart swells with happiness at the thought of escaping from you, good bore! you shall share my happiness, good bore. It is so kind of you not to bore me to all eternity."

This was why the last night she sat like Patience on an ottoman smiling on Talboys, and racking David's heart. And this was why she made the ride so pleasant to those she was at heart glad to leave, till they tried sentiment on, and then she was an eel directly, pony and all.

Lucy (*sola*). "That is over. Poor Mr. Talboys! Does he fancy he has an attachment? No; I please and I am courted wherever I go, but I have never been loved. If a man loved me, I should see it in his face: I should feel it without a word spoken. Once or twice I fancied I saw it in one man's eyes; they seemed like a lion's that turned to a dove's as they looked at me." Lucy closed her own eyes, and recalled her impression: "It must have been fancy: ought I to wish to inspire such a passion as others have inspired? No! for I could never return it. The very language of passion in romances seems so extravagant to me. Yet so beautiful. It is hard I should not be loved merely because I cannot love. Many such natures have been adored. I could not bear to die, and not be loved as deeply as ever woman was loved. I must be loved, adored, worshipped: it would be so sweet — sweet!" She slowly closed her eyes, and the long, lovely lashes drooped, and a celestial smile parted her lips as she fell into a vague, delicious reverie. Suddenly the carriage stopped at the foot of a hill. She opened her eyes, and there stood David Dodd at the carriage window.

Lucy put her head out. "Why, it is Mr. Dodd. Oh, Mr. Dodd, is there anything the matter?"

"No."

"You look so pale."

"Do I?" and he flushed faintly.

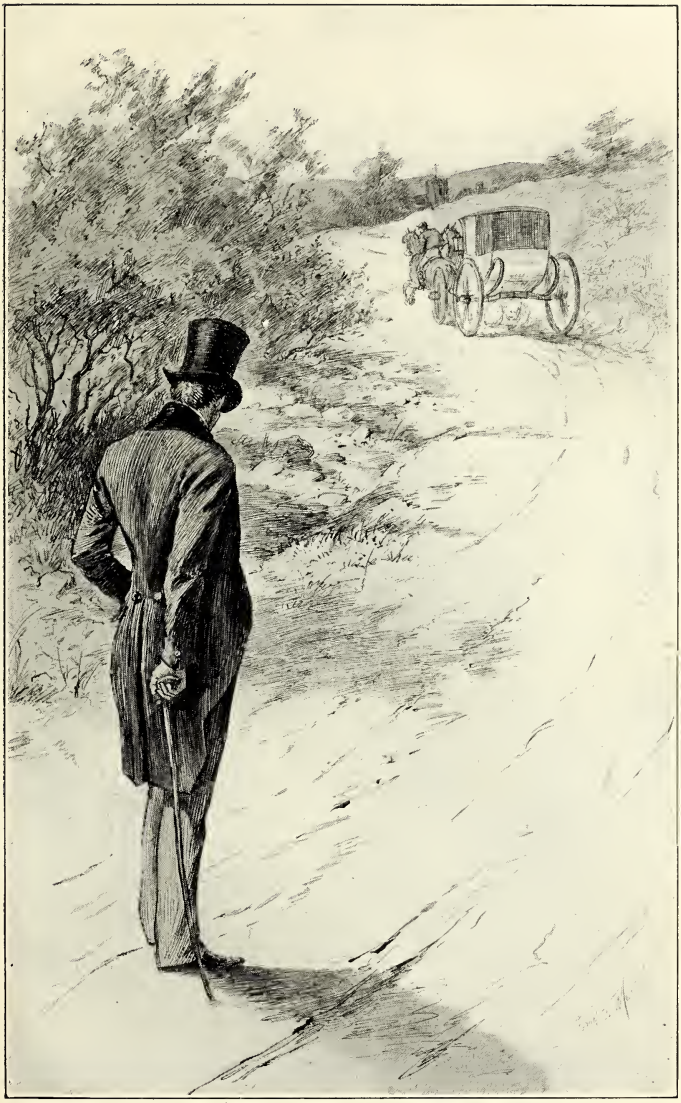
"Which way are you going?"

"I am going home again now," said David, sorrowfully.

"You came all this way to bid me good-by?" and she arched her eyebrows and laughed, — a little uneasily.

"It didn't seem a step. It will seem longer going back."

"No, no; you shall ride back: my pony is at the White Horse; will you not ride my pony back for me?



THE CARRIAGE WENT ON, AND LEFT HIM STANDING IN THE ROAD.

then I shall know he will be kindly used; a stranger would whip him."

"I should think my arm would wither if I ill-used him."

"You are very good. I suppose it is because you are so brave."

"Me brave? I don't feel so. Am I to tell him to drive on?" and he looked at her with haggard and imploring eyes.

Her eyes fell before his.

"Good-by, then," said she.

He cried with a choking voice to the postilion, "Go ahead."

The carriage went on, and left him standing in the road, his head upon his breast.

At the steepest part of the hill a trace broke, and the driver drew the carriage across the hill, and shouted to David. He came running up, and put a large stone behind each wheel.

Lucy was alarmed. "Mr. Dodd, let me out!"

He handed her out. The post-boy was at a *non-plus*, but David whipped a piece of cord and a knife out of his pocket, and began, with great rapidity and dexterity, to splice the trace.

"Ah! now you are pleased, Mr. Dodd; our misfortune will elicit your skill in emergencies."

"Oh, no! it isn't that: it is — I never hoped to see you again so soon."

Lucy colored, and her eyes sought the ground: the splice was soon made.

"There," said David, "I could have spent an hour over it; but you would have been vexed, and the bitter moment must have come at last."

"God bless you, Miss Fountain — oh! mayn't I say Miss Lucy to-day?" he cried imploringly.

"Of course you may," said Lucy, the tears rising in her eyes at his sad face and beseeching look. "Oh, Mr. Dodd, parting with those we esteem is always sad enough; I got away from the door without crying — for once; don't *you* make me cry!"

"Make you cry?" cried David, as if he had been suspected of sacrilege. "God forbid!" He muttered in a choking voice, "You give the word of command, for I can't."

"You can go on," said her soft, clear voice: but first she gave David her hand with a gentle look, — "good-by."

But David could not speak to her; he held her hand tight in both his powerful hands: they seemed iron to her, shaking, trembling, grasping iron. The carriage went slowly on, and drew her hand away. She shrank into a corner of the carriage: he frightened her.

He followed the carriage to the brow of the hill, then sat down upon a heap of stones, and looked despairingly after it.

Meantime Lucy put her head in her hands and blushed, though she was all alone. "How dare he forget the distance between us? Poor fellow! have not I at times forgotten it? I am worse than he. I lost my self-possession; I should have checked his folly; he knows nothing of *les convenances*. He has hurt my hand, he is so rough; I feel his clutch now: there, I thought so, it is all red — poor fellow! Nonsense; he is a sailor; he knows nothing of the world and its customs. Parting with a pleasant acquaintance forever made him a little sad.

"He is all nature; he is like nobody else: he shows every feeling instead of concealing it, that is all. He has gone home, I hope." She glanced hastily back. He was sitting on the stones, his arms drooping, his

head bowed, a picture of despondency. She put her face in her hands again and pondered, blushing higher and higher. Then the pale face that had always been ruddy before, the simple grief and agitation, the manly eye that did not know how to weep, but was so clouded and troubled, and wildly sad; the shaking hands that had clutched hers like a drowning man's (she felt them still), the quivering features, choked voice, and trembling lip, — all these recoiled with double force upon her mind: they touched her far more than sobs and tears would have done, her sex's ready signs of shallow grief.

Two tears stole down her cheeks.

"If he would but go home and forget me!" she glanced hastily back. David was climbing up a tree, active as a cat. "He is like nobody else, — he, he! Stay, is that to see the last of me? the very last — poor soul! Madman! How will this end? What can come of it but misery to him, remorse to me?

"This is love." She half-closed her eyes and smiled; repeating, "This is love.

"Oh! how I despise all the others, and their feeble flatteries!

"Heaven forgive me my mad, my wicked wish!

"I *am* beloved.

"I am adored.

"I am miserable!"

As soon as the carriage was out of sight, David came down and hurried from the place. He found the pony at the inn. The ostler had not even removed his saddle.

Methought that ostler did protest too much.

David kissed the saddle and the pommels, and the bridle her hand had held, and led the pony out. After walking a mile or two he mounted the pony: to sit in her seat,

not for ease; walking thirty miles was nothing to this athlete; sticking on and holding on with his chin on his knee was rather fatiguing.

Meantime, Eve walked on till she was four miles from home. No David. She sat down and cried a little space: then on again. She had just reached an angle in the road, when — clatter; clatter! David came cantering round with his knee in his mouth. Eve gave a joyful scream, and up went both her hands with sudden delight. At the double shock to his senses, the pony thought his end was come, and perhaps the world's: he shied slap into the hedge and stuck there — alone: for his rider swaying violently the reverse way, the girths burst, the saddle peeled off the pony's back, and David sat gripping the pommel in the middle of the road at Eve's feet, looking up in her face with an uneasy grin, while dust arose around him in a little column. Eve screeched, and screeched, and screeched; then fell to with a face as red as a turkey-cock's, and beat David furiously, and hurt — her little hands.

David laughed. This incident did him good; shook him up a bit. The pony grovelled out of the ditch and cantered home, squeaking at intervals and throwing his heels.

David got up, twisted the side-saddle on to his square shoulders, and keeping it there by holding the girths, walked with Eve towards Font Abbey. She was now a little ashamed of her apprehensions; and, besides, when she leathered David, she was, in her own mind, serving him out for both frights. At all events, she did not scold him, but kindly inquired his adventures, and he told her what he had done and said, and what Miss Fountain had said.

The account disappointed Eve. "All this is just a pack of nothing," said she. "It is two lovers parting,

or it is two common friendly acquaintances; all depends on *how* it was done, and that you don't tell me." Then she put several subtle questions as to the looks and tones and manner of the young lady. David could not answer them: on this she informed him he was a fool.

"So I begin to think," said he.

"There, be quiet," said she, "and let me think it over."

"Ay! ay!" said he.

Whilst he was being quiet and letting her think, a carriage came rapidly up behind them, with a horseman riding beside it, and as the pedestrians drew aside, an ironical voice fell upon them, and the carriage and horseman stopped, and floured them with dust.

Messrs. Talboys and Fountain took a stroll to look at the new jail that was building in Royston, and as they returned, Talboys, whose wounded pride had now fermented, told Mr. Fountain plainly that he saw nothing for it but to withdraw his pretensions to Miss Fountain.

"My own feelings are not sufficiently engaged for me to play the up-hill game of overcoming her disinclination."

"Disinclination? the mere shyness of a modest girl. If she was to be 'won unsought,' she would not be worthy to be Mrs. Talboys."

"Her worth is indisputable," said Mr. Talboys, "but that is no reason why I should force upon her my humble claims."

The moment his friend's pride began to ape humility, Fountain saw the wound it had received was incurable. He sighed and was silent. Opposition would only have set fire to opposition.

They went home together in silence. On the road, Talboys caught sight of a tall gentleman carrying a side-saddle, and a little lady walking beside him. He recog-

nized his *bête noir* with a grim smile. Here at least was one he had defeated and banished from the fair. What on earth was the man doing? Oh, he had been giving his sister a ride on a donkey, and they had met with an accident. Mr. Talboys was in a humor for revenge; so he pulled up, and in a somewhat bantering voice inquired where was the steed?

"Oh, he is in port by now," said David.

"Do you usually ease the animal of that part of his burden, sir?"

"No," said David, sullenly.

Eve, who hated Mr. Talboys, and saw through his sneers, bit her lip, and colored, and kept silence.

But Mr. Talboys, unwarned by her flashing eye, proceeded with his ironical interrogatory, and then it was that Eve, reflecting that both these gentlemen had done their worst against David, and that henceforth the battlefield could never again be Font Abbey, decided for revenge. She stepped forward like an airy sylph between David and his persecutor, and said, with a charming smile, "I will explain, sir."

Mr. Talboys bowed, and smiled.

"The reason my brother carries this side-saddle is, that it belongs to a charming young lady — you have some little acquaintance with her — Miss Fountain."

"Miss Fountain?" cried Talboys, in a tone from which all the irony was driven out by Eve's *coup*.

"She begged David to ride her pony home; she would not trust him to anybody else."

"Oh?" said Talboys, stupefied.

"Well, sir, owing to — to — an accident, the saddle came off, and the pony ran home; so then David had only her saddle to take care of for her."

"Why, we escorted Miss Fountain to Royston, and we never saw Mr. Dodd."

"Ay, but you did not go beyond Royston," said Eve, with a cunning air.

"Beyond Royston? where? and what was he doing there? did he go all that way to take her orders about her pony?" said Talboys, bitterly.

"Oh, as to that you must excuse me, sir," cried Eve, with a scornful laugh; "that is being too inquisitive: good-morning;" and she carried David off in triumph.

The next moment, Mr. Talboys spurred past her again, followed by the phaeton. Talboys' face was yellow.

"*La langue d'une femme est son épée.*"

"Sheer off and repair damages, ye lubber," said David, dryly, "and don't come under our guns again, or we shall blow you out of the water — hum! Eve, wasn't your tongue a little too long for your teeth just now?"

"Not an inch."

"She might be vexed: it is not for me to speak of her kindness to others."

"Temper won't let a body see everything. I'll tell you what I have done, too; I've declared war."

"Have you? then run the Jack up to the mizzen-top, and let us fight it out."

"That is the way to look at it, David: now don't you speak to me till we get home: let me think."

At the gate of Font Abbey they parted, and Eve went home. David came to the stable-yard, and hailed, "Stable a-hoy!" Out ran a little bandy-legged groom. "The craft has gone adrift," cried David, "but I've got the gear safe: stow it away;" and as he spoke he chucked the saddle a distance of some six yards on to the bandy-legged groom, who instantly staggered back, and sank on a little dunghill, and there sat, saddled, with two eyes like saucers, looking stupefied surprised between the pommels.

"It is you for capsizing in a calm," remarked David,

with some surprise, and went his way. "Well, Eve, have you thought?"

"Yes, David, I was a little hasty; that puppy would provoke a saint. After all there is no harm done, they can't hurt us much, now. It is not here the game will be played out. Now tell me, when does your ship sail?"

"It wants just five weeks to a day."

"Does she take up her passengers at —— as usual?"

"Yes, Eve, yes."

"And Mrs. Bazalgette lives within a mile or two of ——. You have a good excuse for accepting her invitation. Stay your last week in her house. There will be no Talboys to come between you. Do all a man can do to win her in that week."

"I will."

"And if she says 'no,' be man enough to tear her out of your heart."

"I can't tear her out of my heart, but I will win her, I must win her. I can't live without her. A month to wait!"

Mr. Talboys. "Well, sir, what do you say now?"

Mr. Fountain (hypocritically). "I say that your sagacity was superior to mine: forgive me if I have brought you into a mortifying collision. To be defeated by a merchant-sailor" — He paused to see the effect of his poisoned shaft.

Talboys. "But I am not defeated. I will not be defeated. It is no longer a personal question. For your sake, for her sake, I must save her from a degrading connection: I will accompany you to Mrs. Bazalgette's. When shall we go?"

"Well, not immediately, it would look so odd. The old one would smell a rat directly. Suppose we say in a month's time."

"Very well, I shall have a clear stage."

"Yes, and I shall then use all my influence with her. Hitherto I have used none."

"Thank you. Mr. Dodd cannot penetrate there, I conclude."

"Of course not."

"Then she will be Mrs. Talboys."

"Of course she will."

Lucy cried a little over David's ardent, despairing passion, and his pale and drawn face. Her woman's instinct enabled her to comprehend in part a passion she was at this period of her life incapable of feeling, and she pitied him. He was the first of her admirers she had ever pitied. She sighed a little, then fretted a little, then reproached herself vaguely. "I must have been guilty of some imprudence: given some encouragement. Have I failed in womanly reserve? or is it all his fault? He is a sailor. Sailors are like nobody else. He is so simple-minded. He sees, no doubt, that he is my superior in all sterling qualities, and that makes him forget the social distance between him and me. And yet, why suspect him of audacity? poor fellow, he had not the courage to *say* anything to me after all. No: he will go to sea, and forget his folly before he comes back." Then she had a gust of egotism. It was nice to be loved ardently and by a hero, even though that hero was not a gentleman of distinction, scarcely a gentleman at all. The next moment she blushed at her own vanity. Next she was seized with a sense of the great indelicacy and unpardonable impropriety of letting her mind run at all upon a person of the other sex; and, shaking her lovely shoulders, as much as to say, "away, idle thoughts," she nestled and fitted with marvellous suppleness into a corner of the carriage; and sank into

a sweet sleep, with a red cheek, two wet eyelashes, and a half smile of the most heavenly character imaginable. And so she glided along, till at five in the afternoon the carriage turned in at Mr. Bazalgette's gates. Lucy lifted her eyes, and there was quite a little group standing on the steps to receive her, and waving welcome to the universal pet. There was Mr. Bazalgette, Mrs. Bazalgette, and two servants; and a little in the rear a tall stranger of gentleman-like appearance.

The two ladies embraced one another so rapidly yet so smoothly, and so dove-tailed and blended, that they might be said to flow together and make one in all but color, like the Saone and the Rhone. After half a dozen kisses given and returned with a spirit and rapidity, from which, if we male spectators of these ardent encounters were wise, we might slyly learn a lesson, Aunt Bazalgette suddenly darted her mouth at Lucy's ear, and whispered a few words with an animation that struck everybody present. Lucy smiled in reply. After the "meeting of the muslins," Mr. Bazalgette shook hands warmly, and at last Lucy was introduced to his friend Mr. Hardie, who expressed in courteous terms his hopes that her journey had been a pleasant one.

The animated words Mrs. Bazalgette whispered into Lucy's ear at that moment of burning affection were as follows:

"You have had it washed."

Lucy (unpacking her things in her bedroom). "Who is Mr. Hardie, dear?"

"What! don't you know? Mr. Hardie is the great banker."

"Only a banker? I should have taken him for something far more distinguished. His manner is good. There is a suavity without feebleness or smallness."

Mrs. Bazalgette's eye flashed, but she answered with apparent nonchalance, "I am glad you like him; you will take him off my hands now and then. He must not be neglected; Bazalgette would murder us: *àpropos*, remind me to ask him to tell you Mr. Hardie's story, and how he comes to be looked up to like a prince in this part of the world though he is only a banker — with only ten thousand a year."

"You make me quite curious, aunt. Cannot you tell me?"

"Me? oh, dear, no; paper currency! foreign loans! government securities! gold mines! ten per cents! Mr. Peel! and why *one* breaks and *another* doesn't! all that is quite beyond me. Bazalgette is your man; I had no idea your mousseline-de-laine would have washed so well. Why it looks just out of the shop; it" — Come away, reader, for Heaven's sake!

CHAPTER XI.

The man whom Mr. Bazalgette introduced so smoothly and off-hand to Lucy Fountain exercised a terrible influence over her life, as you will see by and by. This alone would make it proper to lay his antecedents before the reader. But he has independent claims to this notice, for he is a principal figure in my work. The history of this remarkable man's fortunes is a study. The progress of his mind is another, and its past as well as its future are the very corner-stone of that capacious story which I am now building brick by brick, after my fashion where the theme is large. I invite my reader, therefore, to resist the natural repugnance delicate minds feel to the ring of the precious metals, and for the sake of the coming story to accompany me into An Old Bank.

The Hardies were goldsmiths in the seventeenth century; and when that business split, and the deposit and bill of exchange business went one way, and the plate and jewels another, they became bankers from father to son. A peculiarity attended them: they never broke, nor even cracked. Feu James Hardie conducted for many years a smooth, unostentatious, and lucrative business. It professed to be a bank of deposit only, and not of discount. This was not strictly true. There never was a bank in creation that did not discount under the rose, when the paper represented commercial effects, and the indorsers were customers and favorites. But Mr. Hardie's main business was in deposits bearing no interest. It was of that nature known as "the legiti-

mate banking business," a title not, I think, invented by the customers, since it is a system destitute of that reciprocity which is the soul of all just and legitimate commercial relations.

You shall lend me your money gratis, and I will lend it out at interest: such is legitimate banking — in the opinion of bankers.

This system, whose decay we have seen and whose death my young readers are like to see, flourished under old Hardie, green — as the public in whose pockets its roots were buried.

Country gentlemen and noblemen, and tradesmen well-to-do, left floating balances varying from seven, five, three thousand pounds, down to a hundred or two, in his hands. His art consisted in keeping his countenance, absorbing them with the air of a person conferring a favor, and investing the bulk of them in government securities, which in that day returned four and five per cent. As he did not pay one shilling for the use of the capital, he pocketed the whole interest. A small part of the aggregate balance was not invested, but remained in the bank coffers, as a reserve to meet any accidental drain. It was a point of honor with the squires and rectors, who shared their incomes with him in a grateful spirit, never to draw their balances down too low; and, more than once in this banker's career, a gentleman has actually borrowed money for a month or two of the bank at four per cent, rather than exhaust his deposit; or, in other words, paid his debtor interest for the temporary use of his own everlasting property. Such capitalists are not to be found in our day; they may reappear at the millennium.

The banker had three clerks: one a youth and very subordinate; the other two steady old men, at good salaries, who knew the affairs of the bank, but did not

chatter them out of doors, because they were allowed to talk about them to their employer; and this was a vent. The tongue must have a regular vent, or random explosions — choose! Besides the above compliment paid to years of probity and experience, the ancient regime bound these men to the interest and person of their chief by other simple customs now no more.

At each of the four great festivals of the church they dined with Mr. and Mrs. Hardie, and were feasted, and cordially addressed as equals, though they could not be got to reply in quite the same tone. They were never scorned, but a peculiar warmth of esteem and friendship was shown them on these occasions. One reason was, the old-fangled banker himself aspired to no higher a character than that of a man of business, and were not these clerks men of business, good and true? his staff, not his menials!

And since I sneered just now at avital simplicity, let me hasten to own that here at least it was wise, as well as just and worthy. Where men are forever handling heaps of money, it is prudent to fortify them doubly against temptation, with self-respect, and a sufficient salary.

It is one thing not to be led into temptation (accident on which half the virtue in the world depends), another to live in it, and overcome it. And in a bank it is not the conscience only that is tempted, but the senses; piles of glittering gold, amiable as Hesperian fruit; heaps of silver paper that seem to whisper as they rustle, "think how great we are, yet see how little;" we are fifteen thousand pounds, yet we can go into your pocket; whip us up, and westward ho! If you have not courage for that, at all events wet your finger; a dozen of us will stick to it; that pen in your hand has but to scratch that book there, and who will know? Besides, you can always put us back, you know.

Hundreds of men take a share in the country's public morality, legislate, build churches, and live and die respectable, who would be jail-birds sooner or later if their sole income was the pay of a banker's clerk, and their eyes and hands and souls rubbed daily against hundred-pound notes as his do. I tell you it is a temptation of forty-devil power.

Not without reason then did this ancient banker bestow some respect and friendship on those who, tempted daily, brought their hands pure, Christmas after Christmas, to their master's table. Not without reason did Mrs. Hardie pet them like princes at the great festivals, and always send them home in the carriage as persons their entertainers delighted to honor. Herein I suspect she looked also, woman-like, to their security: for they were always expected to be solemnly, not improperly, intoxicated by the end of supper; nowise fuddled, but muddled. For the graceful superstition of the day suspected severe sobriety at solemnities as churlish and ungracious.

The bank itself was small, and grave, and a trifle dingy, and bustle there was none in it: but if the stream of business looked sluggish and narrow, it was deep, and quietly incessant, and tended all one way, to enrich the proprietor without a farthing risked.

Old Hardie had sat there forty years with other people's money overflowing into his lap as it rolled deep and steady through that little counting-house, when there occurred, or rather recurred, in this nation a phenomenon which comes round with some little change of features, in a certain cycle of commercial changes, as regularly as the month of March in the year, or the neap tides, or the harvest moon; and at each visit takes the country by surprise.

CHAPTER XII.

The nation had passed through the years of exhaustion and depression that follow a long war; its health had returned, and its elastic vigor was already reviving, when two remarkable harvests in succession, and an increased trade with the American continent, raised it to prosperity. One sign of vigor, the roll of capital, was wanting; speculation was fast asleep.

The government of the day seems to have observed this with regret. A writer of authority on the subject says, that to stir stagnant enterprise, they directed "the Bank of England to issue about four millions in advances to the state, and in enlarged discounts." I give you the man's words: they doubtless carry a signification to you, though they are jargon in a fog to me. Some months later the government took a step upon very different motives, which incidentally had a powerful effect in loosening capital and setting it in agitation. They reduced to four per cent. the navy five per cents., a favorite national investment, which represented a capital of two hundred millions. Now when men have got used to five per cent. from a certain quarter, they cannot be content with four, particularly the small holders: so this reduction of the navy five per cents. unsettled several thousand capitalists and disposed them to search for an investment. A flattering one offered itself in the nick of time. Considerable attention had been drawn of late to the mineral wealth of South America, and one or two mining companies existed, but languished in the hands of professed speculators. The public now broke like a

sudden flood into these hitherto sluggish channels of enterprise, and up went the shares to a high premium. Almost contemporaneously numerous joint stock companies were formed, and directed towards schemes of internal industry. The small capitalists that had sold out of the navy five per cents. threw themselves into them all, and being *bonâ fide* speculators drew hundreds in their train. Adventure, however, was at first restrained in some degree by the state of the currency. It was low, and rested on a singularly sound basis. Mr. Peel's currency bill had been some months in operation; by its principal provision, the Bank of England was compelled on and after a certain date to pay gold for its notes on demand. The bank, anticipating a consequent rush for gold, had collected vast quantities of sovereigns, the new coin; but the rush never came, for a mighty simple reason: Gold is convenient in small sums, but a burden and a nuisance in large ones. It betrays its presence, and invites robbers; it is a bore to lug it about, and a fearful waste of golden time to count it. Men run upon gold only when they have a reason to distrust paper. But Mr. Peel's bill, instead of damaging Bank of England paper, solidified it, and gave the nation a just and novel confidence in it. Thus, then, the large hoard of gold, fourteen to twenty millions, that the caution of the bank directors had accumulated in their coffers, remained uncalled for. But so large an abstraction from the specie of the realm contracted the provincial circulation. The small business of the country moved in fetters, so low was the metal currency. The country bankers petitioned government for relief, and government listening to representations that were, no doubt, supported by facts, and backed by other interests, tampered with the principle of Mr. Peel's bill, and allowed the country bankers to issue one-pound and two-

pound notes for eleven years to come. To this step there were but six dissentients in the House of Commons, so little was its importance seen, or its consequence foreseen. This piece of inconsistent legislation removed one restraint, irksome but salutary, from commercial enterprise at a moment when capital was showing some signs of a feverish agitation. Its immediate consequences were very encouraging to the legislator; the country bankers sowed the land broadcast with their small paper, and this, for the cause above adverted to, took, *pro tem.*, the place of gold, and was seldom cashed at all except where silver was wanted. On this enlargement of the currency the arms of the nation seemed freed, enterprise shot ahead unshackled, and unwonted energy and activity thrilled in the veins of the kingdom. The rise in the prices of all commodities which followed, inevitable consequence of every increase in the currency, whether real or fictitious, was, in itself, adverse to the working classes; but the vast and numerous enterprises that were undertaken, some in the country itself, some in foreign parts to which English workmen were conveyed, raised the price of labor higher still in proportion; so no class was out of the sun.

Men's faces shone with excitement and hope. The dormant hoards of misers crept out of their napkins and sepulchral strong boxes into the warm air of the golden time. The mason's chisel chirped all over the kingdom, and the shipbuilders'[1] hammers rang all round the coast; corn was plenty, money became a drug, labor wealth, and poverty and discontent vanished from the face of the land. Adventure seemed all wings, and no lumbering carcass to clog it. New joint-stock companies were started in crowds as larks rise and darken the air

[1] Two hundred new vessels are said to have been laid on the stocks in one year.

in winter;[1] hundreds came to nothing, but hundreds stood, and of these nearly all reached a premium, small in some cases, high in most, fabulous in some; and the ease with which the first calls for cash on the multitudinous shares were met, argued the vast resources that had hitherto slumbered in the nation for want of promising investments suited to the variety of human likings and judgments.

The mind can hardly conceive any species of earthly enterprise that was not fitted with a company, oftener with a dozen, and with fifty or sixty where the proposed road to metal was direct. Of these the mines of Mexico still kept the front rank, but not to the exclusion of European, Australian, and African ore.

That masterpiece of fiction, "the Prospectus,"[2] diffused

[1] In two years six hundred and twenty-four new companies were projected.

[2] There is a little unlicked anonymuncule going scribbling about, whose creed seems to be that a little camel to be known must be examined and compared with other quadrupeds; but that the great arts can be judged out of the depths of a penny-a-liner's inner consciousness, and to be rated and ranked need not be compared *inter se*. Applying the microscope to the method of the novelist, but diverting the glass from the learned judge's method in biography, the learned historian's method in history, and the daily chronicler's method in dressing *res gestæ* for a journal, this little addle-pate has jumped to a comparative estimate not based on comparison: so that all his blindfold vituperation of a noble art is chimera, not reasoning: it is, in fact, a retrograde step in science and logic. This is to evade the Baconian method, humble and wise, and crawl back to the lazy and self-confident system of the ancients that kept the world dark so many centuries. It is Κεφαλομαντεια *versus* Induction. "Κεφαλομαντεια," ladies, is "divination by means of an ass's skull." A pettifogger's skull, however, will serve the turn, provided that pettifogger has been bitten with an insane itch for scribbling about things so infinitely above his capacity as the fine arts. Avoid this sordid dreamer: and follow in letters as in science the Baconian method. Then you will find that all uninspired narratives are more or less inexact, and that one and one only, fiction proper, has the honesty to antidote its errors by professing inexactitude. You will find that the historian, biographer, novelist, and chronicler are all obliged *to paint upon their data* with colors the imagination alone can supply, and all do it—alive or dead. You will find that fiction, as distinguished from neat mendacity, has not one form upon earth, but a dozen of them; you will find the most habitually, wilfully, and inexcusably inaccurate, with the means of accuracy under its nose, is the form of fiction called "anonymous criticism," political and literary: the most equivocating, perhaps, is the "imaginavit," better known at Lincoln's Inn as the "affidavit."

its gorgeous light far and near, lit up the dark mine, and showed the minerals shining and the jewels peeping; shone broad over the smiling fields, soon to be ploughed, reaped, and mowed, by machinery; and even illumined the depths of the sea, whence the buried treasures of ancient and modern times were about to be recovered by the Diving-Bell Company.

"One mine was announced with a vein of ore as pure and solid as a tin flagon."

In another the prospectus offered mixed advantages. The ore lay in so romantic a situation, and so thick, that the eye could be regaled with a heavenly landscape, while the foot struck against neglected lumps of gold weighing from two pounds to fifty.

This put the Bolanos mine on its mettle, and it announced "not mines, but mountains of silver." Here, then, men might chip metal instead of painfully digging it. With this up went the shares till they reached 500 premium.

Tlalpuxahua was done at 199 premium.

	£		£	
Anglo Mexican	10 paid,	went to	158	prem.
United Mexican	10 "	" "	155	"
Colombian	10 "	" "	82	"

But the Real del Monte, a mine of longer standing, on which £70 was paid up, went to 550 prem., and at a later period, for I am not following the actual sequence of events, reached the enormous height of 1350 premium.

The prospectus of the Equitable Loan Company, lamented, in paragraph one, the imposition practised on

In the article of exaggeration, the mildest and tamest are, perhaps, history and the novel, the boldest and most sparkling is the advertisement: but the grandest, ablest, most gorgeous, and plausibly exaggerating, is surely the grave commercial prospectus, drawn up and signed by potent, grave and reverend seniors, who fear God, worship Mammon, revere big wigs right or wrong, and never read romances.

the poor; and denounced the pawnbrokers' 15 per cent. In paragraph four, it promised 40 per cent to its shareholders.

Philanthropy smiled in the heading, and Avarice stung in the tail. No wonder a royal duke and other good names figured in this concern. Another eloquent sheet appealed to the national dignity. Should a nation that was just now being intersected by forty canal companies, and lighted by thirty gas companies, and every life in it worth a button insured by a score of insurance companies — dwell in hovels? Here was a country that, after long ruling the Sea, was now mining the Earth, and employing her spoils nobly, lending money to every nation and tribe that would fight for constitutional liberty. Should the principal city of so sovereign a nation be a collection of dingy dwellings made with burnt clay? No! let these perishable and ignoble materials give way, and London be granite, or at least wear a granite front — with which up went the Red Granite Company.

A railway was projected from Dover to Calais, but the shares never came into the market.

The Rhine Navigation shares were snapped up directly. The original holders having no faith in their own paper sold large quantities directly for the account. But they had underrated the ardor of the public. At settling day the shares were at 28 premium, and the sellers found they had made a most original hedge. For the "hedge" is not a daring operation that grasps at large gains: it is a timid and cautious manœuvre whose humble aim is to lower the figures of possible loss or gain. To be ruined by a stroke of caution so shocked the directors' sense of justice, that they forged new coupons in imitation of the old, and tried to pass them off. The fraud was discovered; a committee sat on it.

Respectables quaked. Finally a scape-goat was put forward, and expelled the Stock Exchange, and with that the inquiry was hushed. It would have let too much daylight in on a host of "good names" in the City and on Change.

At the same time the country threw itself with ardor into transatlantic loans. This however was an existing speculation vastly dilated at the period we are treating, but created about five years earlier. Its antecedent history can be despatched in a few words.

England is said to be governed by a limited monarchy; but in case of a conflict her heart goes more with unlimited republic than with genuine monarchy. The Spanish colonies in South America found this out, and in their long battle for independence came to us for sympathy and cash. They often obtained both; and in one case something more: we lent Chili, a million at six per cent.; but we lent her ships, bayonets, and Cochrane, gratis. This last, a gallant and amphibious dragoon, went to work in a style the slow Spaniard was unprepared for, blockaded the coast, overawed the royalist party, and wrenched the state from the mother country and settled it a republic. One of the first public acts of this Chilian republic was to borrow a million of us to go on with. Peru took only half a million at this period. Colombia, during the protracted struggle her independence cost her, obtained a sort of *carte blanche* loan from us at 10 per cent. We were to deliver the stock in munitions of war, as called for, which, you will observe, was selling our loan; for, at the bottom of all our romance lies business, business, business. Her freedom secured, the new state accommodated us by taking two millions at five per cent. stock at 84. In all, about ten millions nominal capital, eight millions cash, crossed the Atlantic while we were cool; but now that we were

heated by three hundred joint stock companies, and the fire fanned by seven hundred prospectuses, fresh loans were effected with a wider range of territory and on a more important scale.

Brazil now got	£3,200,000 in two loans.
Colombia	4,750,000
Peru	1,366,000 in two loans.
Mexico	6,400,000 in two loans.
Buenos Ayres	1,000,000

and Guatemala, a state we never heard of till she wanted money, took a million and a half. Besides these there were smaller loans lent not to nations but to tribes. So hot was our money in our pockets, that we tried £200,000 on Patagonia. But the savages could not be got to nail us; which was the more to be regretted as we might have done a good stroke with them; could have sent the stock out in fishermen's boots, cocked hats, beads, Bibles, and army misfits. Europe found out there existed an island overflowing with faith and overburdened with money; she ran at us for a slice of the latter. We lent Naples two millions and a half at five per cent. stock 92½. Portugal a million and a half at 87. Austria three millions and a half at 82½. Denmark three millions and a half at three per cent. stock 75½. Then came a *bonne bouche*. The subtle Greek had gathered from his western visitors a notion of the contents of Thucydides; and he came to us for sympathy and money to help him shake off the barbarians and their yoke, and save the wreck of the ancient temples. The appeal was shrewdly planned. England reads Thucydides, and skims Demosthenes, though Greece, it is presumed, does not. The impressions of our boyhood fasten upon our hearts, and our mature reason judges them like a father, not like a judge. To sweep the Tartar out of the Peloponnese, and

put in his place a free press, that should recall from the tomb that soul of freedom and revive by degrees that tongue of music — who can play Solomon when such a proposal comes up for judgment?

"Give yourself no further concern about the matter," said the lofty Burdett with a gentleman-like wave of the hand, "your country shall be saved."

"In a few weeks," said another statesman, "Cochrane will be at Constantinople and burn the port and its vessels. Having thus disarmed invasion he will land in the Morea and clear it of the Turks."

Greece borrowed in two loans £2,800,000 at five per cent. Russia (droll juxtaposition!) drew up the rear. She borrowed three millions and a half, but upon far more favorable terms than, with all our romance, we accorded to "Græculus esuriens." The Greek stock ruled from 56½ to 59. Into all these loans and the multitudinous mines and miscellaneous enterprises, gas, railroad, canal, steam, dock, provision, insurance, milk, water, building, washing, money-lending, fishing, lottery, annuities, herring-curing, poppy-oil, cattle, weaving, bog-draining, street-cleaning, house-roofing, old clothes exporting, steel-making, starch, silk-worm, etc., etc., etc., companies, all classes of the community threw themselves either for investment, or temporary speculation on the fluctuations of the share-market. One venture was ennobled by a prince of the blood figuring as a director, another was sanctified by an archbishop, hundreds were solidified by the best mercantile names in the cities of London, Liverpool, and Manchester. Princes, dukes, duchesses, stags, footmen, poets, philosophers, divines, lawyers, physicians, maids, wives, widows, tore into the market and choked the Exchange up so tight that the brokers could not get in or out, and a bare passage had to be cleared by force and fines through a mass of velvet, fustian, plush,

silk, rags, lace, and broadcloth, that jostled and squeezed each other in the struggle for gain. The shop-keeper flung down his scales and off to the share-market; the merchant embarked his funds and his credit; the clerk risked his place and his humble respectability. High and low, rich and poor, all hurried round the Exchange like midges round a flaring gaslight, and all were to be rich in a day.

And, strange to say, all seemed to win and none to lose; for nothing was at a discount — except toil and self-denial, and the patient industry that makes men rich — but not in a day. One cold misgiving fell. The vast quantities of gold and silver that Mexico, mined by English capital and machinery, was about to pour into our ports, would so lower the price of those metals, that a heavy loss must fall on all who held them on a considerable scale at their present values in relation to corn, land, labor, and other properties and commodities.

"We must convert our gold," was the cry. Others more rash said, "This is premature caution; timidity; there is no gold come over yet; wait till you learn the actual bulk of the first metallic imports." "No, thank you," replied the prudent ones, "it will be too late then: when once they have touched our shores, the fall will be rapid." So they turned their gold, whose value was so precarious, into that unfluctuating material, paper. The solitary fear was soon swallowed up in the general confidence. The King congratulated Parliament, and Parliament the King. Both houses rang with trumpet-notes of triumph, a few of which still linger in the memories of living men.

1. "The cotton trade and iron trade were never so flourishing."

2. "The exports surpassed by millions the highest figure recorded in history."

3. "The hum of industry was heard throughout the fields."

4. "Joy beamed in every face."

5. "The country now reaped in honor and repose all it had sown in courage, constancy, and wisdom."

6. "Our prosperity extended to all ranks of men, enhanced by those arts which minister to human comfort, and those inventions by which man seems to have obtained a mastery over nature through the application of her own powers."

But one honorable gentleman informed the Commons that "distress had vanished from the land,"[1] and, in addressing the throne, acknowledged a novel embarrassment. "Such," said he, "is the general prosperity of the country, that I feel at a loss how to proceed; whether to give precedence to our agriculture, which is the main support of the country, to our manufactures, which have increased to an unexampled extent, or to our commerce, which distributes them to the ends of the earth, finds daily new outlets for their distribution, and new sources of national wealth and prosperity."

Our old bank did not profit by the golden shower. Mr. Hardie was old, too, and the cautious and steady habits of forty years were not to be shaken readily. He declined shares, refused innumerable discounts and loans upon scrip and invoices, and, in short, was behind the time. His bank came to be denounced as a clog on commerce. Two new banks were set up in the town to oil the wheels of adventure on which he was a drag, and Hardie fell out of the game.

He was not so old nor cold as to be beyond the reach of mortification, and these things stung him. One day he said fretfully to old Skinner, "It is hardly worth our while to take down the shutters now for anything we do."

[1] "The poor ye shall have always with you." — *Chimerical Evangelist.*

One afternoon two of his best customers, who were now up to their chins in shares, came and solicited a heavy loan on their joint personal security. Hardie declined. The gentlemen went out. Young Skinner watched them, and told his father they went into the new bank, stayed there a considerable time, and came out looking joyous. Old Skinner told Mr. Hardie. The old gentleman began at last to doubt himself and his system.

"The bank would last my time," said he, "but I must think of my son. I have seen many a good business die out because the merchant could not keep up with the times; and here they are inviting me to be director in two of their companies, — good mercantile names below me. It is very flattering. I'll write to Dick. It is just he should have a voice; but, dear heart, at his age we know beforehand he will be for galloping faster than the rest. Well, his old father is alive to curb him."

It was always the ambition of Mr. Richard Hardie to be an accomplished financier. For some years past he had studied money at home and abroad — scientifically. His father's connection had gained him a footing in several large establishments abroad, and there he sat and worked *en amateur* as hard as a clerk. This zeal and diligence in a young man of independent means soon established him in the confidence of the chiefs, who told him many a secret. He was now in a great London bank pursuing similar studies practical and theoretical.

He received his father's letters sketching the rapid decline of the bank, and finally a short missive inviting him down to consider an enlarged plan of business. During the four days that preceded the young man's visit, more than one application came to Hardie senior for advances on scrip, cargoes coming from Mexico, and joint personal securities of good merchants that were in

the current ventures. Old Hardie now, instead of refusing, detained the proposals for consideration. Meantime he ordered five journals daily instead of one, sought information from every quarter, and looked into passing events with a favorable eye. The result was that he blamed himself, and called his past caution timidity. Mr. Richard Hardie arrived, and was ushered into the bank parlor. After the first affectionate greetings, old Skinner was called in, and in a little pompous, good-hearted speech invited to make one in a solemn conference. The compliment brought the tears into the old man's eyes. Mr. Hardie senior opened, showed by the books the rapid decline of business, pointed to the rise of two new banks owing to the tight hand he had held unseasonably, then invited the other two to say whether an enlarged system was not necessary to meet the times, and submitted the last proposals for loans and discounts. "Now, sir, let me have your judgment."

"After my betters, sir," was old Skinner's reply.

"Well, Dick, have you formed any opinion on this matter?"

"I have, sir."

"I am extremely glad of it," said the old gentleman very sincerely, but with a shade of surprise; "out with it, Dick."

The young man thus addressed by his father would not have conveyed to us the idea of "Dick." His hair was brown, there were no wrinkles under his eyes, or lines in his cheek, but in his manner there was no youth whatever. He was tall, commanding, grave, quiet, cold, and even at that age almost majestic. His first sentence, slow and firm, removed the paternal notion that a cipher or a juvenile had come to the council-table.

"First, sir, let me return you my filial thanks for that caution which you seem to think has been excessive. There I beg respectfully to differ with you."

"I am glad of it, Dick, but now you see it is time to relax, eh?"

"No, sir."

The two old men stared at one another.

The senile youth proceeded: "That some day or other our system will have to be relaxed, is probable; but just now all it wants is — tightening."

"Why, Dick? Skinner, the boy is mad. You can't have watched the signs of the times."

"I have, sir, and looked below the varnish."

"To the point then, Dick. There is a general proposal to 'relax our system'; the boy uses good words, Skinner, don't he? and here are six particulars over which you can cast your eye. Hand them to him, Skinner."

"I will take things in that order," said Richard, quietly running his eye over the papers. There was a moment's silence. "It is proposed to connect the bank with the speculations of the day."

"That is not fairly stated, Dick: it is too broad. We shall make a selection: we won't go in the stream above ankle deep."

"That is a resolution, sir, that has been often made but never kept, for this reason: you can't sit on dry land and calculate the force of the stream. It carries those who paddle in it off their feet, and then they must swim with it, or sink."

"Dick, for heaven's sake, no poetry here."

"Nay, sir," said old Skinner, "remember 'twas you brought the stream in."

"More fool I. 'Flow on thou shining Dick,' only the more figures of arithmetic, and the fewer figures of speech, you can give old Skinner and me, the more weight you will carry with us."

The young man colored a moment, but never lost his ponderous calmness.

"I will give you figures in their turn. But we were to begin with the general view. Half measures then are no measures: they imply a vacillating judgment; they are a vain attempt to make a pound of rashness and a pound of timidity into two pounds of prudence. You permit me that figure, sir: it comes from the summing-book. The able man of business never fidgets. He keeps quiet, or carries something out."

Old Skinner rubbed his hands. "These are wise words, sir."

"No, only clever ones. This is book-learning. It is the sort of wisdom you and I have outgrown these forty years. Why, at his age I was chock-full of maxims. They are good things to read, but act proverbs, and into the Gazette you go. My faith in any general position has melted away with the snow of my seventy winters."

"What, then, if it was established that all adders bite, would you refuse to believe this adder would bite you, sir?"

"Dick, if a single adder bit me, it would go farther to convince me the next adder would bite me too, than if fifty young buffons told me all adders bite."

The senile youth was disconcerted for a single moment. He hesitated. The keys that the old man had himself said would unlock his judgment lay beside him on the table; he could not help glancing slyly at them, but he would not use them before their turn. His mind was methodical. His will was strong in all things. He put his hand in his side pocket and drew out a quantity of papers neatly arranged, tied and indorsed.

The old men instantly bestowed a more watchful sort of attention on him.

"This, gentlemen, is a list of the joint stock companies created last year. What do you suppose is their number?"

"Fifty, I'll be bound, Mr. Richard."

"More than that, Skinner. Say eighty."

"Two hundred and forty-three, gentlemen. Of these some were still-born, but the majority hold the market. The capital proposed to be subscribed on the sum total is two hundred and forty-eight millions."

"Pheugh! — Skinner!"

"The amount actually paid at present (chiefly in bank-notes) is stated at £43,062,608, and the balance due at the end of the year on this set of ventures will be £204,-937,392, or thereabouts. The projects of this year have not been collected, but they are on a similar scale. Full a third of the general sum total is destined to foreign countries, either in loans or to work mines, etc., the return for which is uncertain and future. All these must come to nothing, and ruin the shareholders that way, or else must sooner or later be paid in specie, since no foreign nation can use our paper, but must sell it to the Bank of England. We stand then pledged to burst like a bladder, or to *export* in a few months thrice as much specie as we possess. To sum up, if the nation could be sold to-morrow, with every brick that stands upon it, the proceeds would not meet the engagements into which these joint stock companies have inveigled her in the course of twenty months. Viewed then in gross under the test not of poetry and prospectus, but of arithmetic, the whole thing is a bubble."

"A bubble?" uttered both the seniors in one breath, and almost in a scream.

"But I am ready to test it in detail. Let us take three main features, — the share-market, the foreign loans, and the inflated circulation caused by the provincial banks. Why do the public run after shares? Is it in the exercise of a healthy judgment? No: a cunning bait has been laid for human weakness. Transferable

shares valued at a hundred pounds can be secured and paid for by small instalments of five pounds or less. If then his hundred-pound shares rise to a hundred and thirty pounds each, the adventurer can sell at a nominal profit of thirty per cent, but a real profit of six hundred per cent on his actual investment. This intoxicates rich and poor alike. It enables the small capitalist to operate on the scale that belongs, in healthy times, to the large capitalist; a beggar can now gamble like a prince: his farthings are accepted as counters for sovereigns: but this is a distinct feature of all the more gigantic bubbles recorded. Here too, you see, is illusory credit on a vast scale, with its sure consequence, inflated and fictitious values: another bit of soap that goes to every bubble in history. Now for the trans-Atlantic loans. I bring them to a fair test. Judge nations as you would individuals. If you knew nothing of a man but that he had set up a new shop, would you lend him money? Then why lend money to new republics, of whom you know nothing but that born yesterday they may die to-morrow, and that they are exhausted by recent wars, and that where responsibility is divided conscience is always subdivided?"

"Well said, Richard, well said."

"If a stranger offered you thirty per cent, would you lend him your money?"

"No; for I should know he didn't mean to pay."

"Well, these foreign negotiators offer nominally five per cent, but, looking at the price of the stock, thirty, forty, and even fifty per cent. Yet they are not so liberal as they appear, they could afford ninety per cent; you understand me, gentlemen. Would you lend to a man that came to you under an alias like a Newgate thief? Cast your eye over this prospectus. It is the Poyais loan. There is no such place as Poyais."

"Good heavens! no such place?"

"It is a loan to an anonymous swamp by the Mosquito River. But Mosquito suggests a bite. So the vagabonds that brought the proposal over put their heads together as they crossed the Atlantic, and christened the place Poyais; and now fools, that are not fools enough to lend sixpence to Zahara, are going to lend two hundred thousand pounds to rushes and reeds."

"Why, Richard, what are you talking about? 'The air is soft and balmy; the climate fructifying; the soil is spontaneous.' What does that mean? mum! mum! 'The water runs over sands of gold.' Why, it is a description of Paradise. And, now I think of it, is not all this taken from John Milton?"

"Very likely. It is written by thieves."

"It seems there are tortoise-shell, diamonds, pearls"—

"In the prospectus, but not in the morass. It is a good straightforward morass with no pretensions but to great damp. But don't be alarmed, gentlemen, our countrymen's money will not be swamped there. It will all be sponged up in Threadneedle Street by the poetic swindlers whose names, or aliases, you hold in your hand. The Greek, Mexican, and Brazilian loans may be translated from Prospectish into English, thus: At a date when every sovereign will be worth five to us in sustaining shrivelling paper and collapsing credit, we are going to chuck a million sovereigns into the Hellespont, five million sovereigns into the Gulf of Mexico, and two millions into the Pacific Ocean. Against the loans to the old monarchies there is only this objection, that they are unseasonable: will drain out gold when gold will be life-blood: which brings me, by connection, to my third item, the provincial circulation. Pray, gentlemen, do you remember the year 1793?"

For some minutes past a dead silence and a deep

absorbed attention had received the young man's words: but that quiet question was like a great stone descending suddenly on a silent stream. Such a noise, agitation, and flutter. The old banker and his clerk both began to speak at once.

"Don't we?"

"O Lord! Mr. Richard, don't talk of 1793."

"What do you know about 1793? you weren't born."

"Oh, Mr. Richard, such a to-do, sir! Eighteen hundred firms in the Gazette. Seventy banks stopped."

"Nearer a hundred, Mr. Skinner. Seventy-one stopped in the provinces, and a score in London."

"Why, sir, Mr. Richard knows everything, whether he was born or not."

"No, he doesn't, you old goose; he doesn't know how you and I sat looking at one another and pretending to fumble, and counting out slowly, waiting sick at heart for the sack of guineas that was to come down by coach. If it had not come, we should not have broken, but we should have suspended payment for twenty-four hours, and I was young enough then to have cut my throat in the interval."

"But it came, sir, it came, and you cried, 'Keep the bank open till midnight!' and when the blackguards heard that, and saw the sack full of gold, they crept away; they were afraid of offending us. Nobody came a-nigh us next day. Banks smashed all round us like glass bottles, but Hardie and Co. stood, and shall stand for ever and ever. Amen."

"Who showed the white feather, Mr. Skinner? who came creeping and snivelling, and took my hand under the counter, and pressed it to give me courage, and then was absurd enough to make apologies as if sympathy was as common as dirt? Give me your hand directly, you old — hallo!"

"God bless you, sir! God bless you! It is all right, sir. The bank is safe for another fifty years. We have got Master Richard, and he has got a head; oh, Gemini, what a head he has got, and the other day playing marbles!"

"Yes, and we are interrupting him with our nonsense: go on, Richard."

Richard had secretly but fully appreciated the folly of the interruption. His was a great mind, and moved in a sort of pecuniary æther high above the little weaknesses my reader has observed in Hardie senior and old Skinner. Being, however, equally above the other little infirmities of fretfulness and fussiness, he waited calmly and proceeded coolly.

"What was the cause of the distress in 1793?"

"Ah, that was the puzzle: wasn't it, Skinner? We were never so prosperous as that year. The distress came over us like a thunder-storm all in a moment. Nobody knows the exact cause."

"I beg your pardon, sir, it is as well known as any point of history whatever. Some years of prosperity had created a spawn of country banks, most of them resting on no basis; these had inflated the circulation with their paper. A panic and a collapse of this fictitious currency was as inevitable as the fall of a stone forced against nature into the air."

"There *were* a great many petty banks, Richard, and, of course, plenty of bad paper. I believe you are right. The causes of things were not studied in those days as they are now."

"All that we know now, sir, is to be found in books written long before 1793."

"Books! books!"

"Yes, sir; a book is not dead paper except to sleepy minds. A book is a man giving you his best thought

in his very best words. It is only the shallow reader that can't learn life from genuine books. I'll back him who studies them, against the man who skims his fellow-creatures — and *vice versa*. A single page of Adam Smith studied, understood, and acted on by the statesmen of your day, would have averted the panic of 1793. I have the paragraph in my note-book. He was a great man, sir; oblige me, Mr. Skinner."

"Certainly, Mr. Richard, certainly. 'Should the circulation of paper exceed the value of the gold and silver of which it supplies the place, many people would immediately perceive they had more of this paper than was necessary for transacting their business at home: and, as they could not send it abroad, bank paper only passing current where it is issued, there would be a run upon the banks to the extent of this superfluous paper.'"

Richard Hardie resumed. "We were never so overrun with rotten banks as now. Shoemakers, cheesemongers, grocers, write up 'Bank' over one of their windows, and deal their rotten paper by the foolscap ream. The issue of their larger notes is colossal, and renders a panic inevitable soon or late: but, to make it doubly sure, they have been allowed to utter £1 and £2 notes. They have done it, and on a frightful scale. Then to make it trebly sure, the balance between paper and specie is disturbed in the other scale as well, by foreign loans to be paid in gold. In 1793 the candle was left unsnuffed; but we have lighted it at both ends, and put it down to roast. Before the year ends every sovereign in the banks of this country may be called on to cash £30 of paper, bank-paper, share-paper, foolscap-paper, waste-paper. In 1793 a small excess of paper over specie had the power to cause a panic, and break some ninety banks. But our excess of paper is far larger, and with that fatal error we have combined foreign loans

and three hundred bubble companies. Here, then, meet three bubbles, each of which unaided secures a panic. Events revolve, gentlemen, and reappear at intervals. The great French bubble of 1719 is here to-day with the addition of two English tom-fooleries, foreign loans and £1 notes. Mr. Law was a great financier: Mr. Law was the first banker and the greatest. All mortal bankers are his pupils, though they don't know it. Mr. Law was not a fool: his critics are. Mr. Law did not commit one error out of six that are attributed to him by those who judge him without reading, far less studying, his written works. He was too sound and sober a banker to admit small notes. They were excluded from his system. He found France on the eve of bankruptcy: in fact, that state had committed acts of virtual bancruptcy. He saved her with his bank. Then came his two errors, one remediable, the other fatal. No. 1: he created a paper company, and blew it up to a bubble. When the shares had reached the skies, they began to come down like stones by an inevitable law. No. 2: to save them from their coming fate, he propped them with his bank. Overrating the power of governments, and underrating natures, he married the Mississippi shares (at forty times their value) to his bank-notes by edict. What was the consequence? The bank-paper, sound in itself, became rotten by marriage. Nothing could save the share-paper. The bank-paper, making common cause with it, shared its fate. Had John Law let his two tubs stand each on its own bottom, the shares would have gone back to what they came from — nothing: the bank, based as it was on specie, backed stoutly by the government, and respected by the people for great national services, would have weathered the storm and lasted to this day. But he tied his rickety child to his healthy child, and flung them into a stormy sea, and told them to swim together: they

sank together. Now observe, sir, the fatal error that ruined that great financier in 1720 is this day proposed to us. We are to connect our bank with bubble companies by the double tie of loans and liability. John Law was sore tempted; the Mississippi Company was his own child as well as the bank. Love of that popularity he had drunk so deeply, egotism, and parental partiality, combined to obscure that great man's judgment. But with us folly stands naked on one side, bubbles in hand, common-sense and printed experience on the other. These six specimen bubbles here are not *our* children. Let me see whose they are, aliases excepted."

"Very good, young gentleman, very good. Now it is my turn. I have got a word or two to say on the other side. The journals, which are so seldom agreed, are all of one mind about these glorious times. Account for that!"

"How can you know their minds, sir?"

"By their leading columns."

"Those are no clew."

"What! Do they think one thing and print another? Why should the independent press do that? Nonsense."

"Why, sir? Because they are bribed to print it, but they are not bribed to think it."

"Bribed? The English press bribed!"

"Oh! not directly, like the English freeman. Oblige me with a journal or two, no matter which; they are all tarred with the same stick in time of bubble. Here, sir, are £50 worth of bubble advertisements, yielding a profit of say £25 on this single issue. In this one are nearer £100 worth of such advertisements. Now is it in nature that a newspaper, which is a trade speculation, should say the word that would blight its own harvest? This is the oblique road by which the English press is bribed.

These leaders are mere echoes of to-day's advertisement sheet, and bidders for to-morrow's."

"The world gets worse every day, Skinner."

"It gets no better," replied Richard, philosophically.

"But, Richard, here is our county member, and ——, staid sober men both; and both have pledged their honor on the floor of the House of Commons to the sound character of some of these companies."

"They have, sir: but they will never redeem the said honor: for they are known to be bribed, and not obliquely, by those very companies." (The price current of M.P. honor, in time of bubble, ought to be added to the works of arithmetic.) "Those two Brutuses get £500 apiece per annum for touting those companies down at St. Stephen's. —— goes cheaper and more oblique. He touts, in the same place, for a gas company, and his house in the square flares from cellar to garret, gratis."

"Good gracious! and he talked of the light of conscience in his very last speech. But this cannot apply to all. There is the archbishop: he can't have sold his name to that company."

"Who knows? he is over head and ears in debt."

"But the duke, *he* can't have."

"Why not? he is over head and ears in debt. Princes deep in debt by misconduct, and bishops deep in ditto by ditto, are half-honest, needy men: and half-honest, needy men are all to be bought and sold like hogs in Smithfield, especially in time of bubble."

"What is the world come to!"

"What it was a hundred years ago."

"I have got one pill left for him, Skinner. Here is the Chancellor of the Exchequer, a man whose name stands for caution, has pronounced a panegyric on our situation. Here are his words quoted in this leader: now listen. 'We may safely venture to contemplate

with instructive admiration the harmony of its proportions and the solidity of its basis.' What do you say to that?"

"I say it is one man's opinion *versus* the experience of a century. Besides, that is a quotation, and may be a fraudulent one."

"No! no! the speech was only delivered last Wednesday: we will refer to it. Mum! mum! Ah! here it is. 'The Chancellor of the Exchequer rose and' — mum! mum! — ah! 'I am of — o-pinion that — if, upon a fair review of our situation, there shall appear to be nothing hollow in its foundation, artificial in its superstructure, or flimsy in its general results, we may safely venture to contemplate with instructive admiration the harmony of its proportions and the solidity of its basis.'"

"Ha, ha, ha! I quite agree with cautious Bobby. If it is not hollow it may be solid: if it is not a gigantic paper balloon, it may be a very fine globe, and *vice versa*, which *vice versa* he in his heart suspects to be the truth. You see, sir, the mangled quotation was a swindle like the flimsy superstructure it was intended to prop. The genuine paragraph is a fair sample of Robinson and of the art of withholding opinion by means of expression. But, as quoted, by a fraudulent suppression of one-half, the unbalanced half is palmed off as a whole, and an indecision perverted into a decision. I might just as fairly cite him as describing our situation to be 'hollow in its basis, artificial in its superstructure, flimsy in its general result.' Since you value names, I will cite you one man that has commented on the situation, not like Mr. Robinson by misty sentences each neutralizing the other, but by consistent acts: a man, gentlemen, whose operations have always been numerous and courageous in less *prosperous* times, yet now he is *out of everything*, but a single insurance company."

"Who is the gentleman?"

"It is not a gentleman: it is a blackguard," said the exact youth.

"You excite my curiosity. Who is the capitalist, then, that stands aloof?"

"Nathan Meyer Rothschild."

"The devil!"

Old Skinner started sitting. "Rothschild hanging back! Oh, master, for heaven's sake don't let us try to be wiser than those devils of Jews. Mr. Richard, I bore up pretty well against your book-learning, but now you've hit me with a thunderbolt. Let us get in gold, and keep as snug as mice; and not lend one of them a farthing to save them from the gallows. Those Jews smell farther than a Christian can see. Don't let's have any more 1793's, sir, for heaven's sake. Listen to Mr. Richard; he has been abroad and come back with a head."

"Be quiet, Skinner! You seem to possess private information, Richard."

"I employ three myrmidons to hunt it: it will be useful by and by."

"It may be useful now. Remark on these proposals."

"Well, sir, two of them are based on gold-mines, — shares at a fabulous premium. Now no gold-mine can be worked to a profit by a company. *Primo:* Gold is not found in veins like other metals. It is an abundant metal made scarce to man by distribution over a wide surface. The very phrase 'gold-mine' is delusive. *Secundo:* Gold is a metal that cannot be worked to a profit by a company, for this reason: workmen will hunt it for others so long as the daily wages average higher than the amount of metal they find per diem; but, that Rubicon once passed, away they run to find gold for themselves in some spot with similar signs; or, if they stay, it is to murder your overseers and seize your mine. Gold

digging is essentially an individual speculation. These shares sell at seven hundred pounds apiece: a dozen of them are not worth one Dutch tulip-root. Ah! here is a company of another class, in which you have been invited to be director; they would have given you shares and made you liable." Mr. Richard consulted his note-book. "This company, which 'commands the wealth of both Indies'—in perspective—dissolved yesterday afternoon for want of eight guineas. They had rented offices at eight guineas a week, and could not pay the first week. 'Turn out or pay,' said the landlord, a brute absorbed in the present, and with no faith in the glorious future. They offered him fifteen hundred pounds' worth of shares instead of his paltry eight guineas cash. On this he swept his premises of them. What a godsend you would have been to these Jeremy Diddlers, you and the ten thousand they would have bled you of!"

The old banker turned pale.

"Oh, that is nothing new, sir. 'To-morrow the first lord of the treasury calls at my house and brings me £11,261 14*s.* 11¾*d.* which is due to me from the nation at twelve of the clock on that day; you couldn't lend me a shilling till then, could ye?' Now for the loans. Baynes upon Haggart want two thousand pounds at five per cent."

"Good names, Richard, surely," said old Hardie faintly.

"They were, but there are no good names in time of bubble: the operations are so enormous that in a few weeks a man is hollowed out, and his frame left standing. In such times capitalists are like filberts: they look all nut, but half of them are dust inside the shell, and only known by breaking. Baynes upon Haggart, and Haggart upon Baynes, the city is full of their paper. I have brought some down to show it you. A discounter,

who is a friend of mine, did it for them on a considerable scale at thirty per cent discount (cast your eye over these bills, Haggart on Baynes). But he has burnt his fingers even at that, and knows it. So I am authorized to offer all these to you at fifty per cent discount."

"Good heavens! Richard!"

"If therefore you think of doing rotten apple upon rotten pear, otherwise Haggart upon Baynes, why do it at five per cent, when it is to be had by the quire at fifty?"

"Take them out of sight," said old Hardie, starting up; "take them all out of my sight. Thank God I sent for you! No more discussion, no more doubt. Give me your hand, my son; you have saved the bank."

The conference broke up with these eager words, and young Skinner retired swiftly from the keyhole.

The next day Mr. Hardie senior came to a resolution which saddened poor old Skinner. He called the clerks in and introduced them to Mr. Richard as his managing partner.

"Every dog has his day," said the old gentleman; "mine has been a long one. Richard has saved the bank from a grave error; Richard shall conduct it as Hardie and Son. Don't be disconsolate, Skinner, I'll look in on you now and then."

Hardie junior sent back all the proposals with a polite negative. He then proceeded on a two-headed plan: not to lose a shilling when the panic he expected should come, and to make twenty thousand pounds upon its subsiding. Hardie and Son held exchequer bills on rather a large scale: they were at half a crown premium. He sold every one and put gold in his coffers. He converted, in the same way, all his other securities except consols. These were low, and he calculated they would rise in any general depreciation of more pretentious

investments. He drew out his balance, a large one, from his London correspondent, and put gold in his coffers. He drew a large deposit from the Bank of England. Whenever his own notes came into the bank he withdrew them from circulation. "They may hop upon Hardie and Son," said he, "but they shan't run upon us, for I'll cut off their legs and keep them in my safe."

One day he invited several large tradesmen in the town to dine with him at the bank. They came full of curiosity. He gave them a luxurious dinner, which pleased them. After dinner he exposed the real state of the nation, as he understood it. They listened politely, and sneered silently, but visibly. He then produced six large packets of his bank-notes; each packet contained three thousand pounds. Skinner, then present, enveloped these packets in cartridge-paper, and the guests were requested to seal them up. This was soon done. In those days a bunch of gigantic seals dangled and danced on the pit of every man's stomach. The sealed packets went back into the safe.

"Show us a sparkle o' gold, Mr. Richard," said Meredith, linen-draper and wag.

"Mr. Skinner, oblige me by showing Mr. Meredith a little of your specie — a few anti-bubble pills, eh! Mr. Meredith."

Omnes. "Ha! ha! ha!"

Presently a shout from Meredith: "Boys, he has got it here by the bushel. All new sovereigns. Don't any of ye be a linen-draper, if you have got a chance to be a banker. How much is there here, Mr. Richard?"

"We must consult the books to ascertain that, sir."

"Must you? then just you turn your head away, Mr. Richard, and I'll put in a claw."

Omnes. "Haw! haw! ho!"

Richard Hardie resumed. "My precautions seem

extravagant to you now, but in a few months you will remember this conversation, and it will lead to business." The rest of the evening he talked of anything, everything, except banking. He was not the man to dilute an impression.

Hardie junior was so confident in his reading and his reasonings, that he looked every day into the journals for the signs of a general collapse of paper and credit. Instead of which, public confidence seemed to increase, not diminish, and the paper balloon, as he called it, dilated, not shrank; and this went on for months. His gold lay a dead and useless stock, while paper was breeding paper on every side of him. He suffered his share of those mortifications, which every man must look to endure, who takes a course of his own and stems a human current. He sat sombre and perplexed in his bank parlor, doing nothing; his clerks mended pens in the office. The national calamity so confidently predicted, and now so eagerly sighed for, came not.

In other words, Richard Hardie was a sagacious calculator, but not a prophet; no man is till afterwards, and then nine out of ten are. At last he despaired of the national calamity ever coming at all. So then, one dark November day, an event happened that proved him a shrewd calculator of probabilities in the gross, and showed that the records of the past "studied" instead of "skimmed," may in some degree counterbalance youth and its narrow experience. Owing to the foreign loans there were a great many bills out against this country. Some heavy ones were presented, and seven millions in gold taken out of the Bank of England and sent abroad. This would have trickled back by degrees. But the suddenness and magnitude of the drain alarmed the bank directors for the safety of the bank, subject as it was by Mr. Peel's bill to a vast demand for gold.

Up to this period, though they had amassed specie themselves, they had rather fed the paper fever in the country at large; but now they began to take a wide and serious view of the grave contingencies around them. They contracted their money operations, refused in two cases to discount corn, and in a word put the screw on as judiciously as they could. But time was up. Public confidence had reached its culminating point. The sudden caution of the bank could not be hidden: it awoke prudence, and prudence after imprudence drew terror at its heels. There was a tremendous run upon the country banks. The smaller ones "smashed all around like glass bottles," as in 1793; the larger ones made gigantic and prolonged efforts to stand, and generally fell at last.

Many, whose books showed assets forty shillings in the pound, suspended payment. For in a violent panic the bank creditors can all draw their balances in a few hours or days, but the poor bank cannot put a similar screw on its debtors. Thus no establishment was safe. Honor and solvency bent before the storm, and were ranked with rottenness: and, as at the same time the market-price of securities sank with frightful rapidity, scarcely any amount of invested capital was safe in the unequal conflict.

Exchequer bills went down to sixty shillings discount, and the funds rose and fell like waves in a storm.

London bankers were called out of church to answer despatches from their country correspondents.

The mint worked day and night, and coined a hundred and fifty thousand sovereigns per diem for the Bank of England; but this large supply went but a little way, since that firm had in reality to cash nearly all the country notes that were cashed.

Post chaises and four stood like hackney coaches in Lombard Street, and every now and then went rattling

off at a gallop into the country with their golden freight. In London, at the end of a single week, not an old sovereign was to be seen, so fiercely was the old coinage swept into the provinces, so active were the mint and the smashers: these last drove a roaring trade. For paper now was all suspected: and anything that looked like gold was taken recklessly in exchange.

Soon the storm burst on the London banks. A firm known to possess half a million in undeniable securities could not cash them fast enough to meet the checks drawn on their counter, and fell. Next day, a house whose very name was a rock, suspended for four days. An hour or two later two more went hopelessly to destruction. The panic rose to madness. Confidence had no longer a clew, nor names a distinction. A man's enemies collected three or four vagabonds round his door, and in another hour there was a run upon him, that never ceased till he was emptied or broken. At last, as in the ancient battles armies rested on their arms to watch a duel in which both sides were represented, the whole town watched a run upon the great house of Pole, Thornton, and Co. The Bank of England, from public motives, spiced of course with private interest, had determined to support Pole, Thornton, and Co., and so perhaps stem the general fury, for all things have their turning-point. Three hundred thousand pounds were advanced to Pole and Co., who with this aid and their own resources battled through the week, but on Saturday night were drained so low, that their fate once more depended on the Bank of England. Another large sum was advanced them. They went on; but ere the next week ended they succumbed, and universal panic gained the day. Climax of all, the Bank of England notes lost a share of public confidence, and a frightful run was made on it. The struggle had been prepared for, and was gigantic on both

sides. Here, the great hall of the bank, full of panic-stricken citizens jostling one another to get gold for the notes of the bank: there, foreign nations sending over ingots and coin to the bank, and the mint working night and day, Sunday and week-day, to turn them into sovereigns to meet the run. Sovereigns or else half-sovereigns were promptly delivered on demand. No hesitation or sign of weakness peeped out: but, under this bold and prudent surface, dismay, sickness of heart, and the dread of a great humiliation. At last, one dismal evening this establishment, which at the beginning of the panic had twenty millions specie, left off with about five hundred thousand pounds in coin, and a similar amount in bullion. A large freight of gold was on the seas, coming to their aid, and due, but not arrived; the wind was high: and in a few hours the people would be howling round their doors again. They sent a hasty message to the government, and implored them to suspend, by order in council, the operation of Mr. Peel's bill for a few days. A plump negative from Mr. Canning.

Then being driven to expedients, they bethought them of a chest of one-pound notes that they had luckily omitted to burn. Another message to the government, "May we use these?"

"As a temporary expedient, yes."

The one-pound notes were whirling all over the country before daybreak, and, marvellous anomaly, which took Richard Hardie by surprise, they oiled the waves; the panic abated from that hour.[1] The holders of country notes took the one-pound B. E. notes as cash, with avidity. The very sight of them piled on a counter stopped a run in more than one city.

The demand for gold at the Bank of England continued, but less fiercely, and as the ingots still came

[1] A hair of the dog that bit us.

tumbling in and the mint hailed sovereigns on them, their stock of specie rose as the demand declined, and they came out of their fiercest battle with honor. But ere the tide turned, things in general came to a pass scarcely known in the history of civilized nations.

Ladies and gentlemen took heirlooms to the pawnbrokers, and swept their tills of the last coin. Not only was wild speculation, hitherto so universal and ardent, snuffed out like a candle, but investment ceased, and commerce came to a standstill.

Bank stock, East India stock, and, some days, consols themselves, did not go *down*, they went *out*, were blotted from the book of business. No man would give them gratis, no man would take them on any other terms. The brokers closed their books, there were no buyers nor sellers. Trade was coming to the same pass, except the retail business in eatables; and an observant statesman and economist, that watched the phenomenon, pronounced that in forty-eight hours more all dealings would have ceased between man and man, or returned to the rude and primitive form of barter, or direct exchange of men's several commodities, labor included.

Finally things crept into their places; shades of distinction were drawn between good securities and bad. Shares were forfeited, companies dissolved, bladders punctured, balloons flattened, bubbles burst, and thousands of families ruined, thousands of people beggared: and the nation itself, its paper fever reduced by a severe bleeding, lay sick, panting, exhausted, and discouraged, for a year or two, to await the eternal cycle — torpor, prudence, health, plethora, blood-letting, torpor, prudence, health, plethora, blood-letting, etc., etc., etc., etc., *in secula seculorum.*

The journals pitched into "speculation."

Three banks lay in the dust of the town of ——, and

Hardie and Son stood looking calmly down upon the ruins.

Richard Hardie had carried out his double-headed plan.

There was no run upon him: could not be one in the course of nature, his balances were so low, and his notes were all at home. He created artificially a run of a very different kind. He dined the same party of tradesmen: all but one, who could not come, being at supper after Polonius his fashion. After dinner he showed the packets still sealed, and six more unsealed. "Here, gentlemen, is our whole issue." There was a huge wood fire in the old-fashioned room. He threw a packet of notes into it. A most respectable grocer yelled, and lost color: victim of the senses, he thought sacred money was here destroyed, and his host a well-bred and oh, how plausible, maniac. The others derided him, and packet after packet fed the flames. When two only were left, containing about five thousand pounds between them, Hardie junior made a proposal that they should advertise in their shop windows to receive Hardie's five-pound notes as five guineas in payment for their goods. Observing a natural hesitation, he explained that they would by this means crush their competitors, and could easily clap a price on their goods to cover the odd shillings. The bargain was soon struck. Mr. Richard was a great man. All his guests felt in their secret souls, and pockets — excuse the tautology — that some day or the other they should want to borrow money of him. Besides, "crush their competitors!"

Next day, Mr. Richard loosed his hand, and let a flock of his own bank-notes fly (they were asked for earnestly every day). Some soon found their way to the shops in question. The next day still more took wing and buzzed about the shops. Presently other tradesmen, finding peo-

ple rushed to the shops in question, began to bid against them for Hardie's notes, a result the long-headed youth had expected; and said notes went up to ten shillings premium. Too calm and cold to be betrayed into deserting his principles, he confined the issue within the bounds he had prescribed, and when they were all out seldom saw one of them again. By this means he actually lowered the Bank of England notes in public estimation, and set his own high above them, in the town of ——. Deposits came in. Confidence unparalleled took the place of fear so far as he was concerned, and he was left free to work the other part of his plan.

To the amazement and mystification of old Skinner, he laid out ten thousand pounds in exchequer bills: and followed this up by other large purchases of paper, paper, nothing but paper.

Hardie senior was nervous.

"Are you true to your own theory, Richard?"

The youth explained to him that blind confidence always ends in blind distrust; and then all paper becomes depreciated alike: but good paper is sure to recover. "Sixty-two shillings discount, sir, is a ridiculous decline of exchequer bills; we are at peace, and elastic, and the government is strong. My other purchases all rest upon certain information, carefully and laboriously amassed while the world was so busy blowing bubbles. I am now buying paper that is unjustly depreciated in panic, i.e., in the second act of that mania of which bubble is the first act." He added: "When the herd buy, the price rises: when they sell, it falls. To buy with them and sell with them is therefore to buy dear and sell cheap. My game — and it is a game that reduces speculation to a certainty — is threefold: —

"First, never at any price, or under any temptation, buy anything that is not as good as gold.

"Secondly, buy that sound article when the herd sells it.

"Thirdly, sell it when the herd buys it."

"Richard," said the old man, "I see what it is — you are a genius."

"No."

"It is no use your denying it, Richard."

"Common-sense, sir, common-sense."

"Yes, but common-sense carried to such a height as you do is genius."

"Well, sir; then I own to the genius of common-sense."

"I admire you, Richard, I am proud of you: but the bank has stood a hundred and forty years, and never a genius in it;" the old man sighed.

Hardie senior, having relieved his mind of this vague misgiving, never returned to it: probably never felt it again. It was one of those strange flashes that cross a mind as a meteor the sky.

The old gentleman, having little to do, talked more than heretofore, and, like fathers, talked about his son, and, unlike sons, cried him up at his own expense. The world is not very incredulous: above all, it never disbelieves a man who calls himself a fool. Having then gained the public ear by the artifice of self-depreciation, he poured into it the praises of Hardie junior. He went about telling how he, an old man, was all but drawn into the bubbles, till this young Daniel came down and foretold all. Thus paternal garrulity combined for once with a man's own ability to place Richard Hardie on the pinnacle of provincial grandeur.

A few years more, and Hardie senior died. (His old clerk Skinner followed him a month later.)

Richard Hardie, now sole partner and proprietor, assumed a mode of living unknown to his predecessors.

He built a large commodious house, and entertained in the first style. The best families in the neighborhood visited a man whose manner was quiet and stately, his income larger than their own, and his house and table luxurious without vulgar pretension and the red-hot gilding and glare with which the injudicious parvenu brands himself and furniture. The bank itself put on a new face. Twice as much glass fronted the street, and a skylight was let into the ceiling: there were five clerks instead of three; the new ones at much smaller salaries than the pair that had come down from antiquity.

CHAPTER XIII.

Such was Mr. Hardie at twenty-five, and his townspeople said, "If he is so wise now he is a boy, what in heaven's name will he be at forty?" To sixty the imagination did not attempt to follow his wisdom. He was now past thirty, and behind the scenes of his bank was still the same able financier I have sketched. But in society he seemed another man. There his characteristics were quiet courtesy, imperturbability, a suave but impressive manner, vast information on current events, and no flavor whatever of the shop.

He had learned the happy art, which might be called "the barrister's art," "*hoc agendi*," of throwing the whole man into a thing at one time, and out of it at another. In the bank and in his own study he was a devout worshipper of Mammon; in society, a courteous, polished, intelligent gentleman, always ready to sift and discuss any worthy topic you could start, except finance. There was some affectation in the cold and immovable determination with which he declined to say three words about money. But these great men act habitually on a preconceived system; this gives them their force.

If Lucy Fountain had been one of those empty girls that were so rife at the time, the sterling value of his conversation would have disgusted her, and his calm silence when there was nothing to be said (sure proof of intelligence), would have passed for stupidity with her. But she was intelligent, well used to bungling straightforward flattery, and to smile with arch contempt at it, and very capable of appreciating the more subtle but

less satirical compliment a man pays a pretty girl by talking sense to her. And, as it happened, her foible favored him no less than did her strong points. She attached too solid a value to manner; and Mr. Hardie's manner was, to her fancy, male perfection. It added to him in her estimation, as much as David Dodd's defects in that kind detracted from the value of his mind and heart.

To this favorable opinion, Mr. Hardie responded in full.

He had never seen so graceful a creature, nor so young a woman so courteous and high-bred.

He observed at once, what less keen persons failed to discover, that she was seldom spontaneous, off her guard. He admired her the more. He had no sympathy with the infantine, in man or woman. "She thinks before she speaks," said he, with a note of admiration. On the other hand he missed a trait or two the young lady possessed; for they happened to be virtues he had no eye for. But the sum total was most favorable. In short, it was esteem at first sight.

As a cobweb to a cabbage-net, so fine was Mrs. Bazalgette's reticulation compared with Uncle Fountain's. She invited Mr. Hardie to stay a fortnight with her, commencing just one day before Lucy's return. She arranged a round of gayety to celebrate the double event. What could be more simple? Yet there was policy below. The whirl of pleasure was to make Lucy forget everybody at Font Abbey, to empty her heart, and pave Mrs. B.'s candidate's way to the vacancy. Then, she never threw Mr. Hardie at Lucy's head, contenting herself with speaking of him with veneration, when Lucy herself or others introduced his name. She was always contriving to throw the pair together, but no mortal could see her hand at work in it. *Bref*, a she-spider.

The first day or two she watched her niece on the sly, just to see whether she regretted Font Abbey, or in other words, Mr. Talboys. Well acquainted with all the subtle signs by which women read one another, she observed with some uneasiness that Lucy appeared somewhat listless and pensive at times, when left quite to herself: once she found her with her cheek in her hand, and, by the way the young lady averted her head, and slid suddenly into distinct cheerfulness, suspected there must have been tears in her eyes, but could not be positive. Next, she noticed with satisfaction that the round of gayety, including, as it did, morning rides as well as evening dances, dissipated these little reveries and languors. She inferred that either there was nothing in them but a sort of sediment of ennui, the natural remains of a visit to Font Abbey, or, that, if there was anything more, it had yielded to the active pleasures she had provided, and to the lady's easy temper, and love of society, "the only thing she loves — or ever will," said Mrs. B., assuming prophecy.

"Aunt, how superior Mr. Hardie's conversation is. He interests one in topics that are unbearable, generally; politics, now. I thought I abhorred them; but I find it was only those little paltry Whig and Tory squabbles that wearied me. Mr. Hardie's views are neither Whig nor Tory; they are patriotic, and sober, and large-minded. He thinks of the country. I can take some interest in what he calls politics."

"And pray what is that?"

"Well, aunt, 'the liberation of commerce from its fetters,' for one thing. I can contrive to be interested in that, because I know England can only be great by commerce. Then 'the education of all classes,' because without that England cannot be enlightened or good."

"He never says a word to me about such things," said

Mrs. Bazalgette; "I suppose he thinks they are above poor me." She delivered this with so admirable an imitation of pique, that the courtier was deceived, and applied butter to "a fox's wound."

"Oh, no, aunt! Consider! if that was it, he would not waste them on me, who am so inferior to you in sagacity. More likely he says, 'This young lady has not yet completed her education; I will sprinkle a little good sense among her frivolous accomplishments.' Whatever the motive, I am very much obliged to Mr. Hardie. A man of sense is *so* refreshing, after all — (full stop). What do you think of his voice?"

"His voice? I don't remember anything about it."

"Yes, you do: you must; it is a very remarkable one; so mellow, so quiet, yet so modulated."

"Well, I do remember now; it is rather a pleasant voice — for a man."

"Rather a pleasant voice!" repeated Lucy, opening her eyes. "Why, it is a voice to charm serpents."

"Ha! ha! It has not charmed him one yet, you see."

This speech was not in itself pellucid; but these sweet ladies, among themselves, have so few topics compared with men, and consequently beat their little manor so often, that they seize a familiar idea under any disguise with the rapidity of lightning.

"Oh! charmers are charm-proof," replied Lucy; "that is the only reason why — I am sure of that." Then she reflected a while. "It is his natural voice, is it not? Did you ever hear him speak in any other? think!"

"Never."

"Then he must be a good man. *Apropos,* is Mr. Hardie a good man, aunt?"

"Why, of course he is."

"How do you know?"

"I never heard of any scandal against him."

"Oh! I don't mean your negative goodness. You never heard anything against *me* out of doors."

"Well, and are you not a good girl?"

"Me, aunt? Why, you know I am not."

"Bless me, what have you done?"

"I have done nothing, aunt," exclaimed Lucy; "and the good are never nullities. Then I am not open, which is a great fault in a character. But I can't help it, I can't! I can't!"

"Well, you need not break your heart for that. You will get over it before you have been married a year. Look at me, I was as sly as any of you at first going off, but now I can speak my mind; and a good thing, too, or what would become of me among the selfish set?"

"Meaning me, dear?"

"No. Divide it amongst you. Come, this is idle talk. Men's voices, and whether they are good, bad, or indifferent; as if that mattered a pin, provided their incomes are good, and their manners endurable. I want a little serious conversation with you."

"Do you?" and Lucy colored faintly. "With all my heart."

"We go to the Hunt's ball the day after to-morrow, Lucy; I suppose you know that? Now what on earth am I to wear, that is the question. There is no time to get a new dress made, and I have not got one."

"That you have not worn once?"

"Many of them twice, and even three times;" and the B. looked aghast at the state of nudity to which she was reduced. Lucy sidled towards the door.

"Since you consult me, dear, I advise you to wear what I mean to wear myself."

"Ah, what a capital idea! then we shall pass for sisters. I dare say I have got some old thing or other that will match yours; but you had better tell me at once what you do mean to wear."

"A gown, a pair of gloves, and a smirk;" and with this heartless expression of nonchalance, Lucy glided away, and escaped the impending shower.

"Oh, the selfishness of these girls!" cried the deserted one. "I have got her a husband to her taste, so now she runs away from me to think of him."

The next moment she looked at the enormity from another point of view, and then the burst of injured virtue gave way to a steady complacency.

"She is caught at last. She notices his very voice. She fancies she cares for politics, ha! ha! She is gone to meditate on him; could not bear any other topic; would not even talk about dress, a thing her whole soul was wrapped up in till now. I have known her go on for hours at a stretch about it."

There are people with memories so constructed that what they said, and another did not contradict or even answer, seems to them upon retrospect to have been delivered by that other person, and received in dead silence by themselves.

Meantime Lucy was in her own room, and the door bolted.

So she was the next day; and uneasy Mrs. Bazalgette came hunting after, and tapped at the door after first trying the handle, which in Lucy's creed was not a discreet and polished act.

"Nobody admitted here till three o'clock."

"It is me, Lucy."

"So I conclude," said Lucy gayly. "'Me' must call again at three, whoever it is."

"Not I," said Aunt Bazalgette, and flounced off in a pet.

At three dignity dissolved in curiosity, and Mrs. Bazalgette entered her niece's room in an ill-temper; it vanished like smoke at the sight of two new dresses.

peach-colored and glacées, just finished, lying on the bed. An eager fire of questions. "Where did you get them? Which is mine? Who made them?"

"A new dressmaker."

"Ah, what a godsend to poor us! Who is she?"

"Let me see how you like her work before I tell you. Try this one on."

Mrs. Bazalgette tried on her dress, and was charmed with it. Lucy would not try on hers. She said she had done so, and it fitted well enough for her.

"Everything fits you, you witch," replied the B. "I must have this woman's address, she is an angel."

Lucy looked pleased. "She is only a beginner; but desirous to please you; and 'zeal goes farther than talent,' says Mr. Dodd."

"Mr. Dodd! ah! by the by, that reminds me, I am so glad you mentioned his name. Where does the woman live?"

"The woman, or, as some consider her, the girl, lives at present with a charming person called by the world Mrs. Bazalgette, but by the dressmaker her sweet little aunt" (kiss) (kiss) (kiss). And Lucy, whose natural affection for this lady was by a certain law of nature heated higher by working day and night for her in secret, felt a need of expansion, and curled round her like a serpent with a dove's heart.

Mrs. Bazalgette did what you and I, manly reader, should have been apt to omit. She extricated herself, not roughly, yet a little hastily, like a water-snake gliding out of the other sweet serpent's folds.[1] Sacred dress being present, she deemed caresses frivolous and ill-timed. "There, there, let me alone, child, and tell me

[1] Here flashes on the cultivated mind the sprightly couplet,—

Oh that I had my mistress at this bay,
To kiss and clip me — till I run away. — SHAKESPEARE.

all about it directly. What put it into your head? Who taught you? Is this your first attempt? Have you paid for the silk, or am I to? Do tell me quick, don't keep me on thorns!"

Lucy answered this fusillade in detail.

"You know, aunt, dressmakers bring us their failures, and we, by our hints, get them made into successes."

"So we do."

"So I said to myself, 'Now why not bring a little intelligence to bear at the beginning, and make these things right at once?' Well, I bought several books and studied them, and practised cutting out, in large sheets of brown paper first: next I ventured a small flight; I made Jane a gown."

"What, your servant?"

"Yes. I had a double motive; first attempts are seldom brilliant; and it was better to fail in merino, and on Jane, than on you, madam, and in silk. In the next place, Jane had been giving herself airs, and objecting to do some work of that kind for me: so I thought it a good opportunity to teach her that dignity does not consist in being disobliging. The poor girl is so ashamed now: she comes to me in her merino frock, and pesters me all day to let her do things for me. I am at my wit's end sometimes to invent unreal distresses, like the writers of fiction, you know: and, aunty dear, you will not have to pay for the stuff: to tell you the real truth, I overheard Mr. Bazalgette say something about the length of your last dressmaker's bill: and as I have been very economical at Font Abbey, I found I had eighteen pounds to spare: so I said nothing, but I thought, We will have a dress apiece that nobody shall have to pay for."

"Eighteen pounds? those two lovely dresses, lace, trimmings, and all for eighteen pounds!"

"Yes, aunt. So you see these good souls that make our dresses, have imposed upon us without ceremony: they would have been twenty-five pounds apiece: now would they not?"

"At least. Well, you are a clever girl. I might as well try on yours, as you won't."

"Do, dear."

She tried on Lucy's gown, and as before, got two looking-glasses into a line, twisted and twirled and inspected herself north, south, east, and west, and in an hour and a half resigned herself to take the dress off. Lucy observed with a sly smile that her gayety declined, and she became silent and pensive.

"In the dead of the night, when with labor oppressed, All mortals enjoy the sweet blessing of rest," a phantom stood at Lucy's bedside, and fingered her. She awoke with a violent scream, the first note of which pierced the night's dull ear, but the second sounded like a wail from a well, being uttered a long way under the bedclothes. "Hush! don't be a fool," cried the affectionate phantom; and kneaded the uncertain form through the bedclothes, "fancy screeching so at sight of me!" Then gradually a single eye peeped timidly between two white hands that held the sheets ready for defence like a shield.

"B—b—but you are all in white," gulped Lucy, trembling all over: for her delicate fibres were set quivering, and could not be stilled by a word: fingered at midnight all in a moment by a shade.

"Why, what color should I be—in my nightgown?" snapped the spectre. "What color is yours?" and she gave Lucy's a little angry pull—"and everybody else's?"

"But at the dead of night, aunt, and without any warning—it's terrible. Oh, dear!" (another little gulp in the throat, exceeding pretty.)

"Lucy, be yourself," said the spectre severely; "you used not to be so selfish as to turn hysterical when your aunt came to you for advice."

Lucy had to do a little "forgive, blest shade!" She apologized: crushed down her obtrusive, egotistical tremors, and vibrated to herself.

Placable Aunt Bazalgette accepted her excuses, and opened the business that had brought her there.

"I didn't leave my bed at this hour for nothing, you may be sure."

"N—no, aunt."

"Lucy," continued Mrs. Bazalgette, deepening, "there is a weight on my mind."

Up sat Lucy in the bed; and two sapphire eyes opened wide and made terror lovely.

"Oh, aunt! what have you been doing? It is remorse, then, that will not let you sleep. Ah! I see! — your flirtations! your flirtations! this is the end of them."

"My flirtations," cried the other, in great surprise. "I never flirt. I only amuse myself with them." [1]

"You — never — flirt? oh! — oh! — oh! Mr. Christopher, Mr. Horne, Sir George Healy, Mr. M'Donnel, Mr. Wolfenton, Mr. Vaughn — there! oh, and Mr. Dodd!"

"Well, at all events it's not for any of those fools I get out of my bed at this time of night. I have a weight on my mind: so do be serious, if you can. Lucy, I tried all yesterday to hide it from myself, but I cannot succeed."

"What, dear aunt?"

"Your gown fits me ever so much better than my own." She sighed deeply.

Lucy smiled slyly: but she replied, "Is not that fancy?"

[1] In strict grammar this "them" ought to refer to "flirtations," but Lucy's aunt did not talk strict grammar. Does yours?

"No! Lucy, no!" was the solemn reply, "I have tried to shut my eyes to it: but I can't."

"So it seems. Ha! ha!"

"Now do be serious! it is no laughing matter: how unfortunate I am!"

"Not at all. Take my gown: I can easily alter yours to fit me, if necessary."

"Oh, you good girl! how clever you are! I should never have thought of that." N.B. She had been thinking of nothing else these six hours.

"Go to bed, dear, and sleep in peace," said Lucy, soothingly. "Leave all to me."

"No! I can't leave all to you. Now I am to have yours, I must try it on." It was hers now; so her confidence in its fitting was shaken.

Mrs. Bazalgette then lighted all the candles in the sconces, and opened Lucy's drawers, and took out linen, and put on the dress with Lucy's aid, and showed Lucy how it fitted, and was charmed, like a child with a new toy.

Presently Lucy interrupted her raptures by an exclamation. Mrs. Bazalgette looked round, and there was her niece inspecting the ghostly robe which had caused her such a fright.

"Here are oceans of yards of lace, on her very nightgown," cried Lucy.

"Well! does not every lady wear lace on her nightgown?" was the tranquil reply. "What is that on yours, pray?"

"A little misery of Valenciennes, an inch broad: but this is Mechlin: superb! delicious! Well, aunt, you are a sincere votary of the Graces: you put on fine things because they are fine things, not with the hollow motive of dazzling society; you wear Mechlin not for éclat, but for Mechlin. Alas! how few, like you, pursue

quite the same course in the dark, that they do in the world's eye."

"Don't moralize, dear! unhook me!"

After breakfast Mrs. Bazalgette asked Lucy how long she could give her to choose which of the two gowns to take, after all.

"Till eight o'clock."

Mrs. Bazalgette breathed again. She had thought herself committed to No. 2, and No. 1 was beginning to look lovely in consequence. At eight, the choice being offered her with impenetrable nonchalance by Lucy, she took Lucy's without a moment's hesitation, and sailed off gayly to her own room to put it on, in which progress the ample peach-colored silk held out in both hands showed like Cleopatra's foresail, and seemed to draw the dame along.

Lucy, too, was happy — demurely; for in all this business the female novice, "*la rusée sans le savoir*," had outwitted the veteran. Lucy had measured her whole aunt. So she made dress A for her, but told her she was to have dress B. This at once gave her desires a perverse bent towards her own property, the last direction they could have been warped into by any other means; and so she was deluded to her good, and fitted to a hair, soul and body.

Going to the ball, one cloud darkened for an instant the matron's mind.

"I am afraid they will see it only cost nine pounds."

"*Enfant!*" replied Lucy, "*ætat.* twenty."

At the ball Mr. Hardie and Lucy danced together, and were the most admired couple.

The next day Mr. Hardie announced that he was obliged to curtail his visit, and go up to London. Mrs. Bazalgette remonstrated. Mr. Hardie apologized, and asked permission to make out the rest of his visit on his

return. Mrs. B. accorded joyfully; but Lucy objected. "Aunt, don't you be deluded into any such arrangement: Mr. Hardie is liable to another fortnight. We have nothing to do with his mismanagement. He comes to spend a fortnight with us: he tries — but fails; I am sorry for Mr. Hardie, but the engagement remains in full force. I appeal to you, Mr. Bazalgette, you are so exact."

"I don't see myself how he can get out of it with credit," said Bazalgette, solemnly.

"I am happy to find that my duty is on the side of my inclination," said Mr. Hardie; smiled well pleased, and looked handsomer than ever.

They all missed him more or less: but nobody more than Lucy. His conversation had a peculiar charm for her. His knowledge of current events was unparalleled; then there was a quiet potency in him she thought very becoming in a man: and then his manner. He was the first of our unfortunate sex who had reached her beau-ideal. One was harsh, another finicking: a third loud: a fourth enthusiastic; a fifth timid; and all failed in tact except Mr. Hardie. Then other male voices were imperfect: they were too insignificant, or too startling, too bass, or too treble, too something or too other. Mr. Hardie's was a mellow tenor, always modulated to the exact tone of good society. Like herself, too, he never laughed loud, seldom out: and even his smiles, like her own, did not come in unmeaning profusion, so told when they did come.

The Bazalgettes led a very quiet life for the next fortnight, for Mrs. Bazalgette was husbanding invitations for Mr. Hardie's return.

Mrs. Bazalgette yawned many times during this barren period; but with considerable benevolence she shielded Lucy from *ennui*. Lucy was a dressmaker, gifted but

inexperienced; well, then, she would supply the latter deficiency by giving her an infinite variety of alterations to make in a multitude of garments. There are egotists, who charge for tuition, but she would teach her dear niece gratis. A mountain of dresses rose in the drawing-room, a dozen metamorphoses were put in hand, and a score more projected.

She pulled down, she built up, she rounded the angular, and squared the round. And here Mr. Bazalgette took perverse views, and misbehaved. He was a very honest man, but not a refined courtier. He seldom interfered with these ladies one way or other, except to provide funds, which interference was never snubbed: for was he not master of the house in that sense? But having observed what was going on day after day, in the drawing-room or workshop, he walked in and behaved himself like a brute.

"How much a week does she give you, Lucy?" said he, looking a little red.

Lucy opened her eyes in utter astonishment, and said nothing: her very needle and breath were suspended.

Mrs. Bazalgette shrugged her shoulders to Lucy, but disdained words. Mr. Bazalgette turned to his wife.

"I have often recommended economy to you, Jane, I need not say with what success. But this sort of economy is not for your credit, or mine. If you want to add a dressmaker to your staff — with all my heart. Send for one when you like, and keep her to all eternity. But this young lady is our ward, and I will not have her made a servant of for your convenience."

"Put your work down, dear," said Mrs. Bazalgette resignedly. "He does not understand our affection; nor anything else except pounds, shillings, and pence."

"Oh, yes; I do. I can see through varnished selfishness, for one thing."

"You certainly ought to be a judge of the unvarnished article," retorted the lady.

"Having had it constantly under my eyes these twenty years," rejoined the gentleman.

"Oh, aunt! — oh, Mr. Bazalgette!" cried Lucy, rising and clasping her hands, "if you really love me, never let me be the cause of a misunderstanding, or an angry word between those I esteem! it would make me too miserable: and, dear Mr. Bazalgette, you must let people be happy in their own way, or you will be sure to make them unhappy. My aunt and I understand one another better than you do."

"She understands you, my poor girl."

"Not so well as I do her. But she knows I hate to be idle, and love to do these bagatelles for her. It is my doing from the first, not hers; she did not even know I could do it till I produced two dresses for the Hunt's ball. So you see."

"That is another matter; all ladies play at work. But you are in for *three months hard labor:* look at that heap of vanity; she is making a lady's-maid of you. It is unjust. It is selfish. It is improper. It is not for my credit, of which I am more jealous than coquettes are of theirs; besides, Lucy, you must not think, because I don't make a parade as she does, that I am not fond of you. I have a great deal more real affection for you than she has; and so you will find if we are ever put to the test."

At this last absurdity Mrs. Bazalgette burst out laughing. But "*la rusée sans le savoir*" turned towards the speaker and saw that he spoke with a certain emotion which was not ordinary in him. She instantly went to him, with both hands gracefully extended. "I do think you have an affection for me. If you really have, show it me some other way, and not by making me unhappy."

"Well, then, I will, Lucy. Look here — if Solomon was such a fool as to argue with one of you young geese, you would shut his mouth in a minute. There, I am going; but you will always be the slave to one selfish person or other; you were born for it."

Thus impotently growling, the merchant prince retired from the field escorted with amenity by the courtier; in the passage she suddenly drooped forward like a cypress-tree, and gave him her forehead to kiss. He kissed it with some little warmth, and confided to her, in friendly accents, that she was a fool: and off he went, grumbling inarticulately, to his foreign loans and things.

The courtier returned to smooth her aunt in turn; but that lady stopped her with a lofty gesture.

"My plan is to look on these monstrosities as horrid dreams, and go on as if nothing had happened."

Happy philosophy!

Lucy acquiesced with a smile, and in an instant both immortal souls plunged, and disappeared in silk, satin, feathers, and point-lace.

The afternoon post brought letters that furnished some excitement. Mr. Hardie announced his return, and Captain Kenealy accepted an invitation that had been sent to him two days before. But this was not all. Mrs. Bazalgette, with something between a laugh and a crow, handed Lucy a letter from Mr. Fountain, in which that diplomatic gentleman availed himself of her kind invitation, and with elephantine playfulness, proposed, as he could not stay a month with her, to be permitted to bring a friend with him, for a fortnight: this friend had unfortunately missed her through absence from his country house, at the period of her visit to Font Abbey, and had so constantly regretted his ill fortune that he (Fountain) had been induced to make this attempt to repair the calamity. His friend's name was Talboys; he was a

gentleman of lineage, and in his numerous travels had made a collection of foreign costumes, which were really worth inspecting, and if agreeable to Mrs. Bazalgette, he should send them on before by wagon, for no carriage would hold them.

Lucy colored on reading this letter; for it repeated a falsehood that had already made her blush. The next moment, remembering how very keenly her aunt must be eying her, and reading her, she looked straight before her, and said coldly, "Uncle Fountain ought to be welcome here, for his courtesy to you at Font Abbey; but I think he takes rather a liberty in proposing a stranger to you."

"Rather a liberty? say a very great liberty."

"Well, then, aunt, why not write back that any friend of his would be welcome, but that the house is full, you have only room for Uncle Fountain?"

"But that is not true, Lucy," said Mrs. Bazalgette, with sudden dignity.

Lucy was staggered and abashed at this novel objection; recovering, she whined humbly, "But it is very nearly true."

It was plain Lucy did not want Mr. Talboys to visit them. This decided Mrs. Bazalgette to let his dresses and him come. He would only be a foil to Mr. Hardie, and perhaps bring him on faster. Her decision once made on the above grounds, she conveyed it in characteristic colors. "No, my love, where I give my affection, there I give my confidence. I have your word not to encourage this gentleman's addresses; so why hurt your uncle's feelings, by closing my door to his friend? It would be an ill compliment to you, as well as to Mr. Fountain; he shall come."

Her postcript to Mr. Fountain ran thus: —

"Your friend would have been welcome independently

of the foreign costumes; but, as I am a very candid little woman, I may as well tell you that now you *have* excited my curiosity, he will be a great deal more welcome with them than without them."

And here I own, that I, the simple-minded, should never have known all that was signified in these words, but for the comment of John Fountain, Esq.

"It is all right, Talboys," said he. "My bait has taken. You must pack up these gimcracks at once, and send them off, or she'll smile like a marble Satan in your face, and stick you full of pins and needles."

The next day Mr. Bazalgette walked into the room, haughtily overlooked the pyramid of dresses, and asked Lucy to come down-stairs and see something: she put her work aside, and went down with him, and lo! two ponies: a cream-colored and a bay. "Oh, you loves!" cried the virgin passionately, and blushed with pleasure. Her heart was very accessible — to quadrupeds.

"Now, you are to choose which of these you will have."

"Oh, Mr. Bazalgette!"

"Have you forgotten what you told me? 'Try and make me happy some other way,' says you. So I remembered hearing you say what a nice pony you had at Font Abbey. So I sent a capable person to collect ponies for you. These have both a reputation. Which will you have?"

"Dear, good, kind uncle Bazalgette! they are ducks."

"Let us hope not: a duck's paces won't suit you, if you are as fond of galloping as other young ladies. Come, jump up, and see which is the best brute of the two."

"What, without my habit?"

"Well, get your habit on, then. Let us see how quick you can be."

Off ran Lucy, and soon returned fully equipped. She mounted the ponies in turn, and rode them each a mile or two in short distances. Finally she dismounted, and stood beaming on the steps of the hall. The groom held the ponies for final judgment.

"The bay is rather the best goer, dear," said she timidly.

"Miss Fountain chooses the bay, Tom."

"No, uncle, I was going to ask you if I might have the cream-colored one: he is so pretty."

"Ha, ha, ha! here's a little goose. Why, they are to ride, not to wear. Come, I see you are in difficulty. Take them both to the stable, Tom."

"No, no, no!" cried Lucy. "Oh, Mr. Bazalgette, don't tempt me to be so wicked." Then she put both her fingers in her ears, and screamed, "Take the bay darling out of my sight, and leave the cream-colored love." And as she persisted in this order, with her fingers in her ears, and an inclination to stamp with her little feet, the bay disappeared, and color won the day.

Then she drooped suddenly like a cypress towards Mr. Bazalgette, which meant "you can kiss me." This time it was her cheek she proffered, all glowing with exercise and innocent excitement.

Captain Kenealy was the first arrival; a well-appointed soldier, eyes equally bright under calm and excitement, mustache always clean and glossy, power of assent prodigious. He looked so warlike, and was so inoffensive, that he was in great request for miles and miles round the garrison town of ——. The girls at first introduction to him admired him, and waited palpitating to be torn from their mammas, and carried, half by persuasion half by force, to their conqueror's tent; but after a bit they always found him out, and talked before, and at,

and across, this ornament, as if it had been a bronze Mars, or a mustache-tipped shadow. This the men, viewing from a little distance, envied the gallant captain; and they might just as well have been jealous of a hair-dresser's dummy.

One eventful afternoon, Mrs. Bazalgette and Miss Fountain walked out, taking the gallant captain between them as escort. Reginald hovered on the rear. Kenealy was charmingly equipped, and lent the party a lustre. If he did not contribute much to the conversation, he did not interrupt it, for the ladies talked through him as if he had been a column of red air. Sing, Muse, how often Kenealy said "yaas" that afternoon; on second thoughts, don't! I can weary my readers without celestial aid. Toot! toot! toot! went a cheerful horn, and the mail-coach came into sight round a corner, and rolled rapidly towards them. Lucy looked anxiously round and warned Master Reginald of the danger now impending over infants. The terrible child went instantly (on the "*vitantes stulti vitia*" principle) clean off the road altogether into the ditch, and clayed (not pipe) his trousers to the knee. As the coach passed, a gentleman on the box took off his hat to the ladies, and made other signs. It was Mr. Hardie.

Mrs. Bazalgette proposed to return home to receive him. They were about a mile from the house. They had not gone far before the rearguard intermitted blackberrying for an instant, and uttered an eldrich screech; then proclaimed, "Another coach! another coach!" It was a light break coming gently along, with two showy horses in it, and a pony trotting behind.

At one and the same moment Lucy recognized a four-footed darling, and the servant recognized her. He drew up, touched his hat, and inquired respectfully whether he was going right for Mr. Bazalgette's. Mrs. Bazalgette

gave him directions while Lucy was patting the pony, and showering on him those ardent terms of endearment some ladies bestow on their lovers, but this one consecrated to her trustees and quadrupeds. In the break were saddles, and a side-saddle, and other caparisons, and a giant box. The ladies looked first at it, and then through Kenealy at one another, and so settled what was inside that box.

They had not walked a furlong before a travelling-carriage and four horses came dashing along, and heads were put out of the window, and the post-boys ordered to stop. Mr. Talboys and Mr. Fountain got out, and the carriage was sent on. Introduction took place. Mrs. Bazalgette felt her spirits rise like a veteran's when line of battle is being formed, She was one of those ladies who are agreeable or disagreeable at will. She decided to charm, and she threw her enchantment over Messrs. Fountain and Talboys. Coming with hostile views, and therefore guilty consciences, they had expected a cold welcome. They received a warm, gay, and airy one. After a while she manœuvred so as to get between Mr. Fountain and Captain Kenealy, and leave Lucy to Mr. Talboys. She gave her such a sly look as she did it. It implied, "You will have to tell me all he says to you, while we are dressing."

Mr. Talboys inquired who was Captain Kenealy. He learned by her answer that officer had arrived to-day, and she had no previous acquaintance with him.

Whatever little embarrassment Lucy might feel, remembering her equestrian performance with Mr. Talboys and its cause, she showed none. She began about the pony, and how kind it was of him to bring it. "And yet," said she, "if I had known, I would not have allowed you to take the trouble, for I have a pony here."

Mr. Talboys was sorry for that; but he hoped she would ride his now and then, all the same.

"Oh, of course. My pony here is very pretty. But a new friend is not like an old friend."

Mr. Talboys was gratified on more accounts than one by this speech. It gave him a sense of security. She had no friend about her now, she had known as long as she had him; and those three months of constant intimacy placed him above competition. His mind was at ease, and he felt he could pop with a certainty of success; and pop he would, too, without any unnecessary delay.

The party arrived in great content and delectation at the gates that led to the house. "Stay," said Mrs. Bazalgette, "you must come across the way, all of you. Here is a view that all our guests are expected to admire. Those that cry out, 'Charming! beautiful! oh, I never!' we take them in and make them comfortable. Those that won't or can't ejaculate" —

"You poison them, and then put them in damp beds," said Mr. Fountain, only half in jest.

"Worse than that, sir. We flirt with them, and disturb the placid current of their hearts for ever and ever. Don't we, Lucy?"

"You know best, aunt," said Lucy, half malice, half pout. The others followed the gay lady, and when the view burst, ejaculated t order.

But Mr. Fountain stood ostentatiously in the middle of the road, with his legs apart, like him of Rhodes. "I choose the alternative," cried he. "Sooner than pretend I admire sixteen ploughed fields and a hill, as much as I do a lawn and flower-beds, I elect to be flirted, and my what do ye call 'em — my stagnant current turned into a whirlpool." Ere the laugh had well subsided, caused by this imitation of Hercules and his choice, he struck up again, "Good news for you, young gentlemen; I smell a ball; here is a fiddle-case making for this hospitable mansion."

"No," said Mrs. Bazalgette, "I never ordered any musician to come here."

A tall but active figure came walking light as a feather, with a large carpet-bag on his back; a boy behind carrying a violin-case.

Lucy colored, and lowered her eyes, but never said a word.

The young man came up to the gate, and then Mr. Talboys recognized him. He hesitated a single moment, then turned and came to the group, and took off his hat to the ladies.

It was David Dodd.

CHAPTER XIV.

The new guest's manner of presenting himself with his stick over his shoulder, and his carpet-bag on his back, subjected him to a battery of stares from Kenealy, Talboys, Fountain, and abashed him sore.

This lasted but a moment. He had one friend in the group, who was too true to her flirtations while they endured, and too strong willed, to let her flirtee be discouraged by mortal.

"Why, it is Mr. Dodd," cried she with enthusiasm, and she put forth both hands to him, the palms downward, with a smiling grace. "Surely you know Mr. Dodd," said she, turning round quickly to the gentlemen with a smile on her lip but a dangerous devil in her eye.

The mistress of the house is all powerful on these occasions. Messrs. Talboys and Fountain were forced to do the amiable, raging within; Lucy anticipated them, but her welcome was a cold one. Says Mrs. Bazalgette, tenderly, "And why do you carry that heavy bag, when you have that great stout lad with you? I think it is his business to carry it, not yours," and her eye scathed the boy, fiddle and all.

All the time she was saying this, David was winking to her, and making faces to her not to go on that tack. His conduct now explained his pantomime. "Here, youngster," said he, "you take these things indoors, and here is your half-crown."

Lucy averted her head, and smiled unobserved.

As soon as the lad was out of hearing, David continued, "It was not worth while to mortify him; the fact is. I

hired him to carry it, but, bless you, the first mile he began to go down by the head, and would have foundered, so we shifted cargoes." This amused Kenealy, who laughed good-humoredly; on this David laughed for company.

"There," cried his inamorata with rapture, "that is Mr. Dodd all over; thinks of everybody, high or low, before himself." There was a grunt somewhere behind her; her quick ear caught it; she turned round like a thing on a pivot, and slapped the nearest face. It happened to be Fountain's. So she continued with such a treacle smile, "Don't you remember, sir, how he used to teach your cub mathematics gratis?"

The sweet smile and the keen contemporaneous scratch confounded Mr. Fountain for a second. As soon as he revived he said stiffly, "We can all appreciate Mr. Dodd."

Having thus established her Adonis on a satisfactory footing, she broke out all over graciousness again, and, smiling and chatting, led her guests beneath the hospitable roof.

But one of these guests did not respond to her cheerful strain. The Norman knight was full of bitterness. Mr. Talboys drew his friend aside, and proposed to him to go back again. The senior was aghast. "Don't be so precipitate," was all he could urge this time. "Confound the fellow! Yes. If that is the man she prefers to you, I will go home with you to-morrow, and the vile hussy shall never enter my doors again."

In this mind the pair went devious to their dressing-rooms.

One day a witty woman said of a man, that "he played the politician about turnips and cabbages." That might be retorted (by a snob and brute) on her own sex in general, and upon Mrs. Bazalgette in particular. This sweet lady manœuvred on a carpet like Marlborough on

the south of France. She was brimful of resources, and they all tended towards one sacred object, getting her own way. She could be imperious at a pinch, and knock down opposition; but she liked far better to undermine it, dissolve it, or evade it. She was too woman to run straight to her *je-le-veux* so long as she could wind thitherwards serpentinely, and by detour. She could have said to Mr. Hardie, "You will take down Lucy to dinner," and to Mr. Dodd, "You will sit next me;" but no, she must mould her males — as per sample.

To Mr. Fountain she said, "Your friend, I hear, is of old family."

"Came in with the Conqueror, madam."

"Then he shall take me down: that will be the first step towards conquering me, ha! ha!" Fountain bowed, well pleased.

To Mr. Hardie she said, "Will you take down Lucy to-day? I see she enjoys your conversation; observe how disinterested I am."

Hardie consented with twinkling composure.

Before dinner she caught Kenealy, drew him aside, and put on a long face. "I am afraid I must lose you to-day at dinner. Mr. Dodd is quite a stranger, and they all tell me I must put him at his ease."

"Yaas."

"Well, then, you had better get next Lucy as you can't have me."

"Yaas."

"And, Captain Kenealy, you are my aide-de-camp. It is a delightful post, you know, and rather a troublesome one."

"Yaas."

"You must help me be kind to this sailor."

"Yaas. He is a good fellaa; carried the baeg for the little caed."

"Oh, did he?"

"And didn't maind been laughed at."

"Now that shows how intelligent you must be," said the wily one: "the others could not comprehend the trait; well, you and I must patronize him. Merit is always so dreadfully modest."

"Yaas."

This arrangement was admirable, but human; consequently not without a flaw. Uncle Fountain was left to chance, like the flying atoms of Epicurus, and chance put him at Bazalgette's right hand, save one. From this point his inquisitive eye commanded David Dodd and Mrs. Bazalgette and raked Lucy and her neighbors, who were on the opposite side of the table. People who look, bent on seeing everything, generally see something; item, it is not always what they would like to see.

As they retired to rest for the night, Mr. Fountain invited his friend to his room.

"We shall not have to go home. I have got the key to our antagonist. Young Dodd is *her* lover." Talboys shook his head with cool contempt. "What I mean is that she has invited him for her own amusement, not her niece's. I never saw a woman throw herself at any man's head as she did at that sailor's all dinner. Her very husband saw it. He is a cool hand, that Bazalgette; he only grinned, and took wine with the sailor. He has seen a good many go the same road; soldiers, sailors, tinkers, tai—"

Talboys interrupted him. "I really must call you to order. You are prejudiced against poor Mrs. Bazalgette, and prejudice blinds everybody. Politeness required that she should show some attention to her neighbor, but her principal attention was certainly not bestowed on Mr. Dodd."

Fountain was surprised. "On whom then?"

"Well, to tell the truth, — on your humble servant."

Fountain stared. "I observed she did not neglect you: but when she turned to Dodd her face puckered itself into smiles like a bag."

"I did not see it, and I was nearer her than you," said Talboys, coldly.

"But I was in front of her."

"Yes, a mile off." There being no juris-consult present to explain to these two magistrates that if fifty people don't see a lady pucker her face like a bag, and one does see her p. h. f. l. a. b., the affirmative evidence preponderates; they were very near coming to a quarrel on this grave point. It was Fountain who made peace; he suddenly remembered that his friend had never been known to change an opinion. "Well," said he, "let us leave that; we shall have other opportunities of watching Dodd and her: meantime I am sorry I cannot convince you of my good news; for I have some bad to balance it. You have a rival, and he did not sit next Mrs. Bazalgette."

"Pray may I ask whom he did sit next?" sneered Talboys.

"He sat — like a man who meant to win — by the girl herself."

"Oh! then it is that sing-song captain you fear, sir?" drawled Talboys.

"No, sir, no more than I dread the epergne. Try the other side."

"What, Mr. Hardie? why, he is a banker."

"And a rich one."

"She would never marry a banker."

"Perhaps not, if she were uninfluenced: but remember we are not at Talboys Court or Font Abbey now. We have fallen into a den of *parvenus*. That Hardie is a great catch according to their views; and all Mrs.

Bazalgette's influence with Lucy will be used in his favor, or I am much mistaken."

"I think not. She spoke quite slightingly of him to me."

"Did she? then that puts the matter quite beyond doubt. Why should she speak slightingly of him? Bazalgette spoke to me of him with awe and grave veneration. He is handsome, well-behaved, and the girl talked to him nineteen to the dozen. Mrs. Bazalgette could not be sincere in underrating him. She undervalued him to throw dust in your eyes."

"It is not so easy to throw dust in my eyes."

"I don't say it is, but this woman will do it: she is as artful as a fox. She hoodwinked even me for a moment. I really did not see through her feigned politeness in letting you take her down to dinner."

"You mistake her character entirely. She is coquettish, and not so well-bred as her niece; but artful she is not. In fact there is almost a childish frankness about her."

At this stroke of observation Fountain burst out laughing bitterly.

Talboys turned pale with suppressed ire, and went on doggedly, "You are mistaken in every particular. Mrs. Bazalgette has no fixed views for her niece, and I by no means despair of winning her to my side. She is anything but discouraging."

Fountain groaned.

"Mr. Hardie is a new acquaintance, and Miss Fountain told me herself she preferred old friends to new. She looked quite conscious as she said it. In a word, Mr. Dodd is the only rival I have to fear — good-night!" and he went out with a stately wave of the hand, like royalty declining further conference. Mr. Fountain sank into an arm-chair and muttered feebly, "Good-

night." There he sat collapsed till his friend's retiring steps were heard no more, then springing wildly to his feet, relieved his swelling mind with a long, loud, articulated roar of Anglo-Saxon. "Fool! dolt! coxcomb! noodle! puppy! ass!!!!"

Did you ever read Tully "de Amicitiâ"?

David Dodd was saved from misery by want of vanity. His reception at the gate by Miss Fountain was cool and constrained; but it did not wound him. For the last month life had been a blank to him. She was his sun. He saw her once more, and the bare sight filled him with life and joy. His was naturally a sanguine, contented mind. Some lovers equally ardent would have seen more to repine at than to enjoy in the whole situation; not so David. She sat between Kenealy and Hardie; but her presence filled the whole room, and he who loved her better than any other had the best right to be happy in the place that held her. He had only to turn his eyes, and he could see her. What a blessing after a month of vacancy and darkness. This simple idolatry made him so happy that his heart overflowed on all within reach. He gave Mrs. Bazalgette answers full of kindness and arch gayety combined. He charmed an old married lady on his right. His was the gay, the merry end of the table; and others wished themselves up at it.

After the ladies had retired, his narrative powers, *bonhommie*, and manly frankness, and good-nature, soon told upon the men, and peals of genuine laughter echoed up to the very drawing-room, bringing a deputation from the kitchen to the key-hole, and irritating the ladies overhead, who sat trickling faint monosyllables about their three little topics and a half.

Lucy took it philosophically. "Now those are the good creatures that are said to be so unhappy without

us. It was a weight off their minds when the door closed on our retiring forms, ha! ha!"

"It was a restraint taken off them, my dear," said Mrs. Mordaunt, a starched dowager, stiffening to the naked eye as she spoke. "When they laugh like that they are always saying something improper."

"Oh! the wicked things," replied Lucy, mighty calmly.

"I wish I knew what they are saying," cried eagerly another young lady; then added, "Oh!" and blushed, observing her error mirrored in all eyes.

Lucy the clement instructed her out of the depths of her own experience in impropriety: "They swear; that is what Mrs. Mordaunt means," — and so to the piano with dignity.

Presently in came Messrs. Fountain and Talboys. Mrs. Bazalgette asked the former a little crossly how he could make up his mind to leave the gay party down stairs.

"Oh, it was only that fellow Dodd. The dog is certainly very amusing; but 'there's metal more attractive here.'"

Coffee and tea were fired successively at the other gentlemen by way of hints; but Dodd prevailed over all, and it was nearly bedtime when they joined the ladies.

Mr. Talboys had an hour with Lucy, and no rival by to ruffle him.

Next day a riding-party was organized. Mr. Talboys decided in his mind that Kenealy was even less dangerous than Hardie, so lent him the quieter of his two nags, and rode a hot rampageous brute, whose very name was Lucifer, so that will give you an idea. The grooms had driven him with a kicking-strap and two pair of reins; and even so, were reluctant to drive him at all; but his steady companion had balanced him a bit. Lucy was to

ride her old pony, and Mrs. Bazalgette the new. The horses came to the door: one of the grooms offered to put Lucy up. Talboys waved him loftily back, and then, strange as it may appear, David, for the first time in his life, saw a gentleman lift a lady into the saddle.

Lucy laid her right hand on the pommel and resigned her left foot: Mr. Talboys put his hand under that foot, and heaved her smoothly into the saddle. "That is clever," thought simple David; "that chap has got more pith in his arm than one would think." They cantered away and left him looking sadly after them. It seemed so hard that another man should have her sweet foot in his hand, should lift her whole glorious person, and smooth her sacred dress, and he stand by helpless; and then the indifference with which that man had done it all. To him it had been no sacred pleasure, no great privilege. A sense of loneliness struck chill on David as the clatter of her pony's hoofs died away. He was in the house; but in that house was a kind of inner circle, of which she was the centre, and he was to be outside it altogether.

Liable to great wrath upon great occasions, he had little of that small irritability that goes with an egotistical mind and a feminine fibre. So he merely hung his head, blamed nobody, and was a little sad in a manly way. While he leaned against the portico in this dejected mood, a little hand pulled his coat-tail. It was Master Reginald, who looked up in his face and said, timidly, "Will you play with me?" The fact is, Mr. Reginald's natural audacity had received a momentary check. He had just put this same question to Mr. Hardie in the library, and been rejected with ignominy, and recommended to go out of doors for his own health and the comfort of such as desired peaceable study of British and Foreign intelligence.

"That I will, my little gentleman," said David, "if I know the game."

"Oh, I don't care what it is, so that it is fun — what is your name?"

"David Dodd."

"Oh!"

"And what is yours?"

"What! don't — you — know? Why, Reginald George Bazalgette. I am seven. I am the eldest. I am to have more money than the others when papa dies, Jane says. I wonder when he will die."

"When he does you will lose his love, and that is worth more than his money: so you take my advice, and love him dearly while you have got him."

"Oh, I like papa very well. He is good-natured all day long. Mamma is so ill-tempered till dinner, and then they won't let me dine with her: and then as soon as mamma has begun to be good-tempered up-stairs in the drawing-room, my bedtime comes directly: it's abominable!" The last word rose into a squeak under his sense of wrong.

David smiled kindly. "So it seems we all have our troubles," said he.

"What! have you any troubles?" and Reginald opened his eyes in wonder. He thought size was an armor against care.

"Not so many as most folk, thank God! but I have some," and David sighed.

"Why, if I was as big as you, I'd have no troubles. I'd beat everybody that troubled me, and I would marry Lucy directly;" and at that beloved name my lord falls into a reverie ten seconds long.

David gave a start, and an ejaculation rose to his lips. He looked down with comical horror upon the little chubby imp, who had divined his thought.

Mr. Reginald soon undeceived him. "She is to be my wife, you know. Don't you think she will make a capital one?" Before David could decide this point for him, the kaleidoscopic mind of the terrible infant had taken another turn. "Come into the stable-yard; I'll show you Tom!" cried young master, enthusiastically. Finally, David had to make the boy a kite. When made, it took two hours for the paste to dry: and as every ten minutes spent in waiting seemed an hour to one of Mr. Reginald's kidney, as the English classics phrase it, he was almost in a state of frenzy at last, and flew his new kite with yells. But after a bit he missed a familiar incident: "It doesn't tumble down; my other kites all tumble down."

"More shame for them," said David, with a dash of contempt, and explained to him that tumbling down is a flaw in a kite, just as foundering at sea is a vile habit in a ship, and that each of these descents, however picturesque to childhood's eye, implies a construction originally defective, or some little subsequent mismanagement. It appeared by Reginald's reply that when his kite tumbled, he had the tumultuous joy of flying it again; but, by its keeping the air like this, monotony reigned. So he now proposed that his new friend should fasten the string to the pump-handle, and play at ball with him beneath the kite. The good-natured sailor consented; and thus the little voluptuary secured a terrestrial and ever-varying excitement, while occasional glances upwards soothed him with the mild consciousness that there was his property still hovering in the empyrean. Amidst all which, poor love-sick David was seized with a desire to hear the name of her he loved, and her praise, even from these small lips. "So you are very fond of Miss Lucy?" said he.

"Yes," replied Reginald, dryly, and said no more: for

it is a characteristic of the awfu' bairn to be mute where fluency is required, voluble where silence.

"I wonder why you love her so much," said David, cunningly. Reginald's face, instead of brightening with the spirit of explanation, became instantly lack-lustre and dough-like; for, be it known to the everlasting discredit of human nature, that his affection and matrimonial intentions, as they were no secret, so they were the butt of satire from grown-up persons of both sexes in the house, and of various social grades: down to the very gardener, all had had a fling at him. But soon his natural cordiality gained the better of that momentary reserve.

"Well, I'll tell you," said he, "because you have behaved well all day."

David was all expectation.

"I like her because she has got red cheeks, and does whatever one asks her."

Oh, breadth of statement! Why was not David one of your repeaters? he would have gone and told Lucy: I should have liked her to know in what grand primitive colors peach-bloom and queenly courtesy strike what Mr. Tennyson is pleased to call "the deep mind of dauntless infancy." But David Dodd was not a reporter, and so I don't get my way; and how few of us do; not even Mr. Reginald, whose joyous companionship with David was now blighted by a footman. At sight of the plush approaching, "There now!" cried Reginald. He anticipated evil; for messages from the ruling powers were nearly always adverse to his joys. The footman came to say that his master would feel obliged if Mr. Dodd would step into his study for a minute.

David went immediately.

"There, now!" squeaked Reginald, rising an octave. "I'm never happy for two hours together." This was

true. He omitted to add "nor unhappy for one;" the dear child sought comfort in change of occupation; he took stones and pelted the footman's retiring calves. His admirers, if any, will be glad to learn that this act of intelligent retribution soothed his deep mind more or less.

Mr. Bazalgette had been much interested by David's conversation the last night, and hearing he was not with the riding-party, had a mind to chat with him. David found him in a magnificent study lined with books, and hung with beautiful maps that lurked in mahogany cylinders attached to the wall; and you pulled them out by inserting a brass-hooked stick into their rings, and hauling. Mr. Bazalgette began by putting him a question about a distant port to which he had just sent out some goods. David gave him full information: began, seaman-like, with the entrance to the harbor, and told him what danger his captain should look out for in running in, and how to avoid it; and from that went to the character of the natives, their tricks upon the sailors, their habits, tastes, and fancies, and, entering with intelligence into his companion's business, gave him some very shrewd hints as to the sort of cargo that would tempt them to sell the very rings out of their ears. Succeeding so well in this, Mr. Bazalgette plied him on other points, and found him full of valuable matter, and, by a rare union of qualities, very modest, and very frank. "Now I like this," said Mr. Bazalgette, cheerfully. "This is a return to old customs. A century or two ago, you know, the merchant and the captain felt themselves part of the same stick: and they used to sit and smoke together before a voyage, and sup together after one, and be always putting their heads together. But of late the stick has got so much longer, and so many knots between the handle and the point, that we

have quite lost sight of one another. Here we merchants sit at home at ease, and send you fine fellows out amongst storms and waves, and think more of a bale of cotton spoiled than of a captain drowned."

David. "And we eat your bread, sir, as if it dropped from the clouds: and quite forget whose money and spirit of enterprise causes the ship to be laid on the stocks, and then built, and then rigged, and then launched, and then manned, and then sailed from port to port."

"Well, well, if you eat our bread, we eat your labor, your skill, your courage, and sometimes your lives, I am sorry to say. Merchants and captains ought really to be better acquainted."

"Well, sir," said David, "now you mention it, you are the first merchant of any consequence I ever had the advantage of talking with."

"The advantage is mutual, sir; you have given me one or two hints I could not have got from fifty merchants: I mean to coin you, Captain Dodd."

David laughed, and blushed. "I doubt it will be but copper coin, if you do. But I am not a captain, I am only first mate."

"You don't say so? Why, how comes that?"

"Well, sir, I went to sea very young; but I wasted a year or two in private ventures. When I say wasted, I picked up a heap of knowledge that I could not have gained on the China voyage, but it has lost me a little in length of standing; but on the other hand, I have been very lucky: it is not every one that gets to be first mate at my age; and after next voyage, if I can only make a little bit of interest I think I shall be a captain. No, sir, I wish I was a captain! I never wished it as now;" and David sighed deeply.

"Humph," said Mr. Bazalgette, and took a note.

He then showed David his maps. David inspected them with almost boyish delight, and showed the merchant the courses of ships on eastern and western voyages, and explained the winds and currents that compelled them to go one road and return another, and in both cases to go so wonderfully out of what seems the track as they do. *Bref*, the two ends of the mercantile stick got nearer and nearer.

"My study is always open to you, Mr. Dodd, and I hope you will not let a day pass without obliging me by looking in upon me."

David thanked him, and went out innocently unconscious that he had performed an unparalleled feat.

In the hall he met Captain Kenealy, who, having received orders to amuse him, invited him to play at billiards. David consented out of good-nature to please Kenealy. Thus the whole day passed, and *les facheux* would not let him get a word with Lucy.

At dinner he was separated from her, and so hotly and skilfully engaged by Mrs. Bazalgette, that he had scarcely time to look at his idol. After dinner he had to contest her with Mr. Talboys and Mr. Hardie; the latter of whom he found a very able and sturdy antagonist. Mr. Hardie had also many advantages over him. First, the young lady was not the least shy with Mr. Hardie, but the parting scene beyond Royston had put her on her guard against David, and her instinct of defence made her reserved with him. Secondly, Mrs. Bazalgette was perpetually making diversions, whose double object was to get David to herself, and leave Lucy to Mr. Hardie.

With all this David found, to his sorrow, that though he now lived under the same roof with her, he was not so near her as at Font Abbey. There was a wall of etiquette, and of rivals, and, as he now began to fear, of her own

dislike, between them. To read through that mighty transparent jewel a female heart, Nauta had recourse to —what do you think? to arithmetic. He set to work to count how many times she spoke to each of the party in the drawing-room: and he found that Mr. Hardie was at the head of the list, and he was at the bottom. That might be an accident; perhaps this was his black evening. So he counted her speeches the next evening: the result was the same. Droll statistics! but sad and convincing to the simple David; his spirits failed him; his aching heart turned cold. He withdrew from the gay circle, and sat sadly with a book of prints before him, and turned the leaves listlessly. In a pause of the conversation a sigh was heard in the corner. They all looked round, and saw David all by himself, turning over the leaves, and evidently not inspecting them.

A flash of satirical curiosity went from eye to eye.

But tact abounded at one end of the room, if there was a dearth of it at the other.

"*La rusée sans le savoir*" made a sign to them all to take no notice, contemporaneously she whispered, "Going to sea in a few days, for two years; the thought will return now and then." Having said this with a look at her aunt, that, Heaven knows how, gave the other the notion that it was to Mrs. Bazalgette she owed the solution of David's fit of sadness, she glided easily into indifferent topics. So then the others had a momentary feeling of pity for David. Miss Lucy noticed this out of the tail of her eye.

That night David went to bed thoroughly wretched. He could not sleep. So he got up and paced the deck of his room with a heavy heart. At last in his despair he said, "I'll fire signals of distress." So he sat down and took a sheet of paper, and fired: "Nothing has turned as I expected. She treats me like a stranger. I seem to

drop astern, instead of making any way. Here are three of us, I do believe; and all seem preferred to your poor brother: and indeed the only thing that gives me any hope is that she seems too unkind to be in earnest: for it is not in her angelic nature to be really unkind; and what have I done? Eve dear, such a change from what she was at Font Abbey, and that happy evening when she came and drank tea with us, and lighted our little garden up, and won your heart that was always a little set against her. Now it is so different that I sit and ask myself whether all that is not a dream. Can any one change so in one short month? I could not. But who knows, perhaps I do her wrong: you know I never could read her at home, without your help, and, dear Eve, I miss you now from my side most sadly. Without you I seem to be adrift without rudder or compass."

Then, as he could not sleep, he dressed himself, and went out at four o'clock in the morning: he roamed about with a heavy heart: at last he bethought him of his fiddle; since Lucy's departure from Font Abbey this had been a great solace to him. It was at once a depository and vent to him; he poured out his heart to it, and by it: sometimes he would fancy, while he played, that he was describing the beauties of her mind and person; at others, regretting the sad fate that separated him from her; or, hope reviving, would see her near him, and be telling her how he loved her, and so great an inspirer is love, he had invented more than one clear melody during the last month, he who up to that time had been content to render the thoughts of others, like most fiddlers — and composers.

So he said to himself, "I had better not play in the house, or I shall wake them out of their first sleep." He brought out his violin; got amongst some trees near the stable-yard, and tried to soothe his sorrowful heart.

He played sadly, sweetly, and dreamingly. He bade the magic shell tell all the world how lonely he was; only the magic shell told it so tenderly and tunefully that he soon ceased to be alone. The first arrival was on four legs: Pepper, a terrier with a taste for sounds. Pepper arrived cautiously, though in a state of profound curiosity, and being too wise to trust at once to his ears, avenue of sense by which we are all so much oftener deceived than by any other, he first smelt the musician carefully and minutely all round. What he learned by this, he and his Creator alone knew; but apparently something reassuring; for as soon as he had thoroughly snuffed his Orpheus, he took up a position exactly opposite him, sat up high on his tail, cocked his nose well into the air, and accompanied the violin with such vocal powers as nature had bestowed on him. Nor did the sentiment lose anything, in intensity at all events, by the vocalist. If David's strains were plaintive, Pepper's were lugubrious: and, what may seem extraordinary, so long as David played softly, the Cerberus of the stable-yard whined musically, and tolerably in tune: but when he played loud or fast, poor Pepper got excited, and, in his wild endeavors to equal the violin, vented dismal and discordant howls at unpleasantly short intervals. All this attracted David's attention, and he soon found he could play upon Pepper as well as the fiddle, raising him and subduing him by turns; only, like the ocean, Pepper was not to be lulled back to his musical ripple quite so quickly as he could be lashed into howling frenzy. While David was thus playing, and Pepper showing a fearful broadside of ivory teeth, and flinging up his nose and sympathizing loudly, and with a long face, though not perhaps so deeply as he looked, suddenly rang behind David a chorus of human chuckles. David wheeled, and there were six young women's faces set in

the foliage and laughing merrily. Though perfectly aware that David would look round, they seemed quite taken by surprise when he did look round, and with military precision became instantly two files: for the four impudent ones ran behind the two modest ones, and there by an innocent instinct tied their cap-strings, which were previously floating loose, their custom even in the early morning.

"Play us something merry, sir," hazarded one of the mock-modest ones in the rear.

"Shan't I be taking you from your work?" objected David, dryly.

"Oh! all work and no play is bad for the body," replied the minx, keeping ostentatiously out of sight.

Good-natured David played a merry tune in spite of his heart: and even at that disadvantage it was so spirit-stirring compared with anything the servants had heard, that it made them all frisky, of which disposition Tom the stable-boy, who just then came into the yard, took advantage, and leading out one of the housemaids by the polite process of hauling at her with both hands, proceeded to country-dancing, in which the others soon demurely joined.

Now all this was wormwood to poor David: for, to play merriment when the heart is too heavy to be cheered by it, makes that heart bitter as well as sad. But the good-natured fellow said to himself, "Poor things, I dare say they work from morning till night, and seldom see pleasure but at a distance; why not put on a good face, and give them one merry hour?" So he played hornpipes and reels till all their hearts were on fire, and faces red, and eyes glittering, and legs aching, and he himself felt ready to burst out crying, and then he left off. As for *il-penseroso* Pepper, he took this intrusion of merry music upon his sympathies very ill. He left

singing, and barked furiously and incessantly at these ancient English melodies, and at the dancers; and kept running from, and running at, the women's whirling gowns alternately, and lost his mental balance, and at last, having, by a happier snap than usual, torn off two feet of the under-housemaid's frock, shook and worried the fragment with insane snarls and gleaming eyes, and so zealously that his existence seemed to depend on its annihilation.

David gave those he had brightened a sad smile, and went hastily in-doors. He put his violin into its case, and sealed and directed his letter to Eve. He could not rest in-doors. So he roamed out again; but this time he took care to go on the lawn. Nobody would come there, he thought, to interrupt his melancholy. He was doomed to be disappointed in that respect. As he sat in the little summer-house with his head on the table, he suddenly heard an elastic step on the dry gravel. He started peevishly up and saw a lady walking briskly towards him. It was Miss Fountain.

She saw him at the same instant. She hesitated a single half moment, then, as escape was impossible, resumed her course. David went bashfully to meet her.

"Good-morning, Mr. Dodd," said she in the most easy unembarrassed way imaginable.

He stammered a "good-morning," and flushed with pleasure and confusion.

He walked by her side in silence. She stole a look at him, and saw that after the first blush at meeting her, he was pale and haggard. On this she dashed into singularly easy and cheerful conversation with him, told him that this morning walk was her custom, "my substitute for rouge, you know. I am always the first up in this languid house; but I must not boast before you, who I dare say turn out — is not that the word? — at daybreak.

But now I think of it — no! you would have crossed my hawse before, Mr. Dodd," using naval phrases to flatter him.

"It was my ill luck: I always cruised a mile off. I had no idea this bit of gravel was your quarter-deck."

"It is, though, because it is always dry. You would not like a quarter-deck with that character, would you?"

"Oh, yes, I should. I'd have my bowsprit always wet, and my quarter-deck always dry. But it is no use wishing for what we cannot have."

"That is very true," said Lucy quietly.

David reflected on his own words, and sighed deeply.

This did not suit Lucy. She plied him with airy nothings, that no man can arrest and impress on paper; but the tone and smile made them pleasing; and then she asked his opinion of the other guests, in such a way as implied she took some interest in his opinion on them, but mighty little in the people themselves. In short, she chatted with him like an old friend, and nothing more; but David was not subtle enough in general, nor just now calm enough, to see on what footing all this cordiality was offered him. His color came back, his eye brightened, happiness beamed on his face; and the lady saw it from under her lashes.

"How fortunate I fell in with you here. You are yourself again, — on your quarter-deck. I scarce knew you the last few days. I was afraid I had offended you. You seemed to avoid me."

"Nonsense, Mr. Dodd! what is there about you to avoid?"

"Plenty, Miss Fountain, I am so inferior to your other friends."

"I was not aware of it, Mr. Dodd."

"And I have heard your sex has gusts of caprice, and I thought the cold wind was blowing upon me; and that

did seem very sad, just when I am going out, and perhaps shall never see your sweet face or hear your lovely voice again."

"Don't say that, Mr. Dodd! or you will make me sad in earnest. Your prudence and courage, and a kind Providence, will carry you safe through this voyage, as they have through so many, and on your return the acquaintance you do me the honor to value so highly will await you — if it depends on me."

All this was said kindly and beautifully, and almost tenderly, but still with a certain majesty that forbade love-making: rendered it scarce possible, except to a fool. But David was not captious. He could not, like the philosopher, sift sunshine. For some days he had been almost separated from her. Now she was by his side. He adored her so, that he could no longer *realize* sorrow or disappointment to come. They were uncertain — future. The light of her eyes, and voice, and face, and noble presence were here: he basked in them.

He told her not to mind a word he had said: "It was all nonsense. I am happy now: happier than ever."

At this Lucy looked grave, and became silent.

David, to amuse her, told her there was "a singing dog abroad," and would she like to hear him?"

This was a happy diversion for Lucy. She assented gayly. David ran for his fiddle, and then for Pepper. Pepper wagged his tail, but, strong as his musical taste was, would not follow the fiddle. But at this juncture Master Reginald dawned on the stable-yard with a huge slice of bread and butter. Pepper followed him. So the party came on the lawn, and joined Lucy. Then David played on the violin, and Pepper performed exactly as hereinbefore related. Lucy laughed merrily, and Reginald shrieked with delight; for the vocal terrier was mortal droll.

"But, setting Pepper aside, that is a very sweet air you are playing now, Mr. Dodd. It is full of soul and feeling."

"Is it?" said David, looking wonder-struck; "you know best."

"Who is the composer?"

David looked confused, and said, "No one of any note."

Lucy shot a glance at him, keen as lightning. What with David's simplicity, and her own remarkable talent for reading faces, his countenance was a book to her, wide open, Bible print. "The composer's name is Mr. Dodd," said she quietly.

"I little thought you would be satisfied with it," replied David, obliquely.

"Then you doubt my judgment as well as your own talent."

"My talent! I should never have composed an air that would bear playing, but for one thing."

"And what was that?" said Lucy, affecting vast curiosity. She felt herself on safe ground now,—the fine arts.

"You remember when you went away from Font Abbey, and left us all so heavy-hearted."

"I remember leaving Font Abbey," replied Lucy with saucy emphasis, and an air of lofty disbelief in the other incident.

"Well, I used to get my fiddle and think of you so far away, and sweet sad airs came to my heart, and from my heart they passed into the fiddle. Now and then one seemed more worthy of you than the rest were, and then I kept that one."

"You mean you took the notes down," said Lucy coldly.

"Oh, no! there was no need, I wrote in my head, and in my heart. May I play you another of your tunes? I call them your tunes."

Lucy blushed faintly, and fixed her eyes on the ground. She gave a slight signal of assent, and David played a melody.

"It is very beautiful," said she in a low voice. "Play it again. Can you play it as we walk?"

"Oh, yes." He played it again. They drew near the hall door. She looked up a moment, and then demurely down again.

"Now will you be so good as to play the first one twice?" She listened with her eyelashes drooping. "Tweedle-dee! tweedle-dum! tweedle-dee." "And *now* we will go in to breakfast," cried Lucy with sudden cheerfulness, and, almost with the word, she darted up the steps, and entered the house without even looking to see whether David followed or what became of him.

He stood gazing through the open door at her as she glided across the hall, swift and elastic, yet serpentine, and graceful and stately as Juno at nineteen.

"Et vera incessu patuit lady."

These Junones, severe in youthful beauty, fill us Davids with irrational awe; but, the next moment, they are treated like small children by the very first matron they meet: they resign their judgment at once to hers, and bow their wills to her lightest word, with a slavish meanness.

Creation's unmarried lords, realize your true position, — girls govern you, and wives govern girls.

Mrs. Bazalgette, on Lucy's entrance, ran a critical eye over her, and scolded her like a six-year-old for walking in thin shoes.

"Only on the gravel, aunt," said the divine slave, submissively.

"No matter; it rained last night. I heard it patter. You want to be laid up, I suppose."

"I will put on thicker ones in future, dear aunt," murmured the celestial serf.

Now Mrs. Bazalgette did not really care a button whether the servile angel wore thick soles or thin. She was cross about something a mile off that. As soon as she had vented her ill-humor on a sham cause, she came to its real cause good-temperedly. "And Lucy, love, do manage better about Mr. Dodd."

Lucy turned scarlet. Luckily Mrs. Bazalgette was evading her niece's eye, so did not see her tell-tale cheek.

"He was quite thrown out last night; and really, as he does not ride with us, it is too bad to neglect him in-doors."

"Oh, excuse me, aunt, Mr. Dodd is your *protégé*. You did not even tell me you were going to invite him."

"I beg your pardon, that I certainly did. Poor fellow, he was out of spirits last night."

"Well, but, aunt, surely you can put an admirer in good spirits when you think proper," said Lucy slyly.

"Humph! I don't want to attract too much attention. I see Bazalgette watching me, and I don't choose to be misinterpreted myself, or give my husband pain."

She said this with such dignity that Lucy, who knew her regard for her husband, had much ado not to titter. But courtesy prevailed, and she said gravely, "I will do whatever you wish me, only give me a hint at the time: a look will do, you know."

The ladies separated: they met again at the breakfast-room door. Laughter rang merrily inside, and amongst the gayest voices was Mr. Dodd's. Lucy gave Mrs. Bazalgette an arch look. "Your patient seems better;" and they entered the room, where sure enough they found Mr. Dodd the life and soul of the assembled party.

"A letter from Mrs. Wilson, aunt."

"And pray who is Mrs. Wilson?"

"My nurse. She tells me 'it is five years since she has seen me, and she is wearying to see me.' What a droll expression, 'wearying.'"

"Ah!" said David Dodd.

"You have heard the word before, Mr. Dodd?"

"No, I can't say I have; but I know what it must mean."

"Lying becalmed at the equator, eh, Dodd?" said Bazalgette, misunderstanding him.

"Mrs. Wilson tells me she has taken a farm a few miles from this."

"Interesting intelligence," said Mrs. Bazalgette.

"And she says she is coming over to see me one of these days, aunt," said Lucy, with a droll expression, half arch, half rueful. She added timidly, "There is no objection to that, is there?"

"None whatever if she does not make a practice of it; only, mind, these old servants are the greatest pests on earth."

"I remember now," said Lucy thoughtfully: "Mrs. Wilson was always very fond of me. I cannot think why, though."

"No more can I," said Mr. Hardie dryly; "she must be a thoroughly unreasonable woman."

Mr. Hardie said this with a good deal of grace and humor; and a laugh went round the table.

"I mean, she only saw me at intervals of several years."

"Why, Lucy, what an antiquity you are making yourself," said Fountain.

But Lucy was occupied with her puzzle.

"She calls me her nursling," said Lucy *sotto voce* to her aunt, but, of course, quite audibly to the rest of the

company: "her dear nursling; and says she will walk fifty miles to see me. Nursling? hum! there is another word I never heard, and I do not exactly know— Then she says" —

"*Taisez-vous, petite sotte!*" said Mrs. Bazalgette, in a sharp whisper, so admirably projected that it was intelligible only to the ear it was meant for.

Lucy caught it and stopped short, and sat looking by main force calm and dignified, but scarlet, and in secret agony. "I have said something amiss," thought Lucy, and was truly wretched.

"We don't believe in Mrs. Wilson's affection on this side the table," said Mr. Hardie; "but her revelations interest us, for they prove that Miss Fountain had a beginning; now we had thought she rose from the foam like Venus, or sprung from Jove's brow like Minerva, or descended from some ancient pedestal flawless as the Parian itself."

"What, sir," cried Bazalgette furiously, "did you think our niece was built in a day, so fair a structure, so accomplished a" —

"Will you be quiet, good people?" said Mrs. Bazalgette, "she was born, she was bred, she was brought up, in which I had a share, and she is a very good girl if you gentlemen will be so good as not to spoil her for me with your flattery,"

"There!" said Lucy, courageously, enforcing her aunt's thunderbolt; and she leaned towards Mrs. Bazalgette and shot back a glance of defiance, with arching neck, at Mr. Bazalgette.

After breakfast she ran to Mrs. Bazalgette. "What was it?"

"Oh, nothing; only the gentlemen were beginning to grin."

"Oh, dear! did I say anything — ridiculous?"

"No, because I stopped you in time. Mind, Lucy, it is never safe to read letters out from people in that class of life; they talk about everything, and use words that are quite out of date. I stopped you because I know you are a simpleton, and so I could not tell what might pop out next."

"Oh, thank you, aunt! thank you!" cried Lucy warmly. "Then I did not expose myself after all."

"No, no; you said nothing that might not be proclaimed at Paul's Cross, ha! ha!"

"Am I a simpleton, aunt?" inquired Lucy in the tone of an indifferent person seeking knowledge.

"Not you," replied this oblivious lady. "You know a great deal more than most girls of your age. To be sure, girls that have been at a fashionable school generally manage to learn one or two things you have no idea of."

"Naturally."

"As you say; he! he! But you make up for it, my dear, in other respects. If the gentlemen take you for a pane of glass, — why — all the better: meantime, shall I tell you your real character? I have only just discovered it myself."

"Oh, yes, aunt, tell me my character. I should so like to hear it from you."

"Should you?" said the other, a little satirically; "well, then, you are an IN-NOCENT FOX."

"Aunt!"

"An innocent fox; so run and get your work-box. I want you to run up a tear in my flounce."

Lucy went thoughtfully for her work-box, murmuring ruefully, "I am an innocent fox; I am an innocent fox."

She did not like her new character at all; it mortified her, and seemed self-contradictory as well as derogatory.

On her return she could not help remonstrating,

"How can that be my character? A fox is cunning, and I despise cunning; and *I am sure* I am not *innocent*," added she, putting up both hands and looking penitent. With all this, a shade of vexation was painted on her lovely cheeks, as she appealed against her epigram.

Mrs. Bazalgette (with the calm inexorable superiority of matron despotism). "You are an innocent fox! Is your needle threaded? here is the tear: no, there. I caught against the flower-pot frame, and I'll vow I heard my gown go. Look lower down, dear. Don't give it up."

All which may perhaps remind the learned and sneering reader of another fox; the one that "had a wound, and he could not tell where."

They rode out to-day as usual, and David had the equivocal pleasure of seeing them go from the door.

Lucy was one of the first down, and put her hand on the saddle, and looked carelessly round for somebody to put her up. David stepped hastily forward, his heart beating, seized her foot, never waited for her to spring, but went to work at once, and with a powerful and sustained effort raised her slowly and carefully like a dead weight and settled her in the saddle. His grip hurt her foot. She bore it like a Spartan sooner than lose the amusement of his simplicity and enormous strength, so drolly and unnecessarily exerted. It cost her a little struggle not to laugh right out, but she turned her head away from him a moment and was quit for a spasm. Then she came round with a face all candor.

"Thank you, Mr. Dodd," said she demurely; and her eyes danced in her head. Her foot felt encircled with an iron band, but she bore him not a grain of malice for that; and away she cantered followed by his longing eyes.

David bore the separation well. "To-morrow morning I shall have her all to myself," said he. He played with

Kenealy and Reginald, and chatted with Bazalgette. In the evening she was surrounded as usual, and he obtained only a small share of her attention. But the thought of the morrow consoled him. He alone knew that she walked before breakfast.

The next morning he rose early and sauntered about till eight o'clock, and then he came on the lawn and waited for her. She did not come. He waited, and waited, and waited. She never came. His heart died within him. "She avoids me," said he; "it is not accident. I have driven her out of her very garden; she always walked here before breakfast (she said so), till I came and spoiled her walk: Heaven forgive me."

David could not flatter himself that this interruption of her acknowledged habit was accidental. On the other hand, how kind and cheerful she had been with him on the same spot yesterday morning: to judge by her manner his company on her quarter-deck was not unwelcome to her. Yet she kept her room to-day, from the window of which she could probably see him walking to and fro, longing for her. The bitter disappointment was bad enough, but here tormenting perplexity as to its cause was added, and between the two the pining heart was racked.

This is the cruellest separation; mere distance is the mildest. Where land and sea alone lie between two loving hearts, they pine but are at rest; a piece of paper and a few lines traced by the hand that reads like a face — and the two sad hearts exult and embrace one another afresh in spite of a hemisphere of dirt and salt water, that parts bodies but not minds. But to be close, yet kept aloof by red-hot iron and chilling ice, by rivals, by etiquette and cold indifference; to be near yet far: this is to be apart; this, this is separation.

A gush of rage and bitterness foreign to his natural

temper came over David Dodd. "Since I can't have the girl I love, I will have nobody but my own thoughts. I cannot bear the others and their chat to-day. I will go and think of her, since that is all she will let me do;" and directly after breakfast David walked out on the downs and made by instinct for the sea. The wounded deer shunned the lively herd.

The ladies, as they sat in the drawing-room, received visits of a less flattering character than usual. Reginald kept popping in, inquiring, "Where was Mr. Dodd?" and would not believe they had not hid him somewhere. He was followed by Kenealy, who came in and put them but one question, "Where is Dawd?"

"We don't know," said Mrs. Bazalgette, sharply, "we have not been intrusted with the care of Mr. Dodd."

Kenealy sauntered forth disconsolate. Finally Mr. Bazalgette put his head in and surveyed the room keenly but in silence; so then his wife looked up and asked him satirically if he did not want Mr. Dodd.

"Of course I do," was the gracious reply; "what else should I come here for?"

"Well, he is lost; you had better put him in the 'Hue and Cry.'"

La Bazalgette was getting jealous of her own flirtee: he attracted too much of that attention she loved so dear.

At last, Reginald, despairing of Dodd, went in search of another playmate, Master Christmas, a young gentleman a year older than himself, who lived within half a mile. Before he went, he inquired what there was for his dinner? and being informed "roast mutton," was not enraptured; he then asked with greater solicitude what was the pudding, and being told "rice," betrayed disgust and anger, as was remembered when too late.

At two o'clock, the day being fine, the ladies went for

a long ride, accompanied by Talboys only. Kenealy excused himself. "He must see if he could not find Dawd."

Mrs. Bazalgette started in a pet; but, after the first canter, she set herself to bewitch Mr. Talboys, just to keep her hand in; she flattered him up hill and down dale. Lucy was silent and *distraite*.

"From that hill you look right down upon the sea," said Mrs. Bazalgette: "what do you say? it is only two miles further."

On they cantered, and leaving the high-road, dived into a green lane, which led them, by a gradual ascent, to Mariner's Folly, on the summit of the cliff. Mariner's Folly looked at a distance like an enormous bush in the shape of a lion; but when you came nearer, you saw it was three remarkably large blackthorn-trees planted together. As they approached it at a walk, Mrs. Bazalgette told Mr. Talboys its legend.

"The trees were planted a hundred and fifty years ago by a retired buccaneer."

"Aunt, now, it was only a lieutenant."

"Be quiet, Lucy, and don't spoil me: I *call* him a buccaneer. Some say it is named his 'Folly,' because you must know his ghost comes and sits here at times, and that is an absurd practice, shivering in the cold. Others, more learned, say it comes from a Latin word, 'folio,' or some such thing, that means a leaf; the mariner's leafy screen." She then added, with reckless levity, "I wonder whether we shall find Buckey on the other side looking at the ships through a ghostly telescope — ha, ha! — ah, ah! — help! — mercy! forgive me! Oh, dear, it is only Mr. Dodd in his jacket! — you frightened me so. Oh, oh! There — I am ill. Catch me, somebody!" and she dropped her whip, and, seeing David's eye was on her, subsided backwards with considerable

courage and trustfulness, and for the second time contrived to be in her flirtee's arms.

I wish my friend Aristotle had been there: I think he would have been pleased at her *αγχινοια* in turning even her terror of the supernatural so quickly to account, and making it subservient to flirtation.

David sat heart-stricken and hopeless, gazing at the sea. The hours passed by his heavy heart unheeded. The leafy screen deadened the light sound of the horses' feet on the turf, and moreover his senses were all turned inwards. They were upon him, and he did not move, but still held his head in his hands and gazed upon the sea. At Mrs. Bazalgette's cries he started up, and looked confusedly at them all; but when she did the fainting business, he thought she was going to faint, and caught her in his arms; and, holding her in them a moment, as if she had been a child, he deposited her very gently in a sitting posture at the foot of one of the trees, and taking her hand, slapped it to bring her to.

"Oh, don't! you hurt me," cried the lady, in her natural voice.

Lucy, barbarous girl, never came to her aunt's assistance: at the first fright she seemed slightly agitated, but she now sat impassive on her pony, and even wore a satirical smile.

"Now, dear aunt, when you have done, Mr. Dodd will put you on your horse again."

On this hint David lifted her like a child, *malgré* a little squeak she thought it well to utter, and put her in the saddle again. She thanked him in a low murmuring voice. She then plied David with a host of questions. "How came he so far from home?" "Why had he deserted them all day?" David hung his head, and did not answer. Lucy came to his relief.

"It would be as well if you would make him promise

to be home in time for dinner; and, by the way, I had a favor to ask of you, Mr. Dodd."

"A favor to ask of me?"

"Oh, you know we all make demands upon your good-nature in turn."

"That is true," said La Bazalgette, tenderly; "I don't know what will become of us all when he goes."

Lucy then explained that the masked ball, suggested by Mr. Talboys' beautiful dresses, was to be very soon, and she wanted Mr. Dodd to practise quadrilles and waltzes with her; "it will be so much better with the violin and piano, than with the piano alone, and you are such an excellent timist, — will you, Mr. Dodd?"

"That I will," said David, his eyes sparkling with delight, — "thank you!"

"Then, as I shall practise before the gentlemen join us, and it is four o'clock now, had you not better turn your back to the sea, and make the best of your way home?"

"I will be there almost as soon as you."

"Indeed; what, on foot, and we on horseback?"

"Ay! but I can steer in the wind's eye."

"Aunt, Mr. Dodd proposes a race home."

"With all my heart. How much start are we to give him?"

"None at all," said David; "are you ready? then give way," and he started down the hill at a killing pace.

The equestrians were obliged to walk down the hill, and when they reached the bottom David was going as the crow flies across some meadows half a mile ahead. A good canter soon brought them on a line with him; but every now and then the turns of the road and the hills gave him an advantage. Lucy, naturally kind-hearted, would have relaxed her pace to make the race more equal, but Talboys urged her on; and as a horse is,

after all, a faster animal than a sailor, they rode in at the front gate while David was still two fields off.

"Come," said Mrs. Bazalgette, regretfully, "we have beat him, poor fellow, but we won't go in till we see what has become of him."

As they looked on the lawn, Henry, the footman, came out with a salver, and on it reposed a soiled note. Henry presented it with demure obsequiousness, then retired grinning furtively.

"What is this, a begging letter? What a vile hand! Look, Lucy, did you ever? Why, it must be some pauper."

"Have a little mercy, aunt," said Lucy piteously; "that hand has been formed under my care and daily superintendence. It is Reginald's."

"Oh, that alters the case. What can the dear child have to say to me! Ah, the little wretch! Send the servants after him in every direction! Oh, who would be a mother!"

The letter was written in lines with two pernicious defects. 1st, They were like the wooden part of a bow instead of its string. 2d, They yielded to gravity: kept tending down, down, to the right-hand corner more and more. In the use of capitals the writer had taken the copyhead as his model. The style, however, was pithy, and in writing that is the first Christian grace. — No, I forgot, it is the second; pellucidity is the first.

Dear mama,
me and johny cristmas
Are gone to the north pole his
Unkle went twise we shall be
Back in siks munths
Please give my love to lucy and
Papa and ask lucy to be kind to
My ginnipigs i shall want them

Wen i come back. too much
Cabiges is not good for ginnipigs.
Wen i come back i hope there
Will be no rise left. it is very
Unjust to give me those nasty
Messy pudens i am not a child
There filthy there abbommanabel.
Johny says it is funy at the north
Pole and there are bares and they
Are wite.

I remain
Your duteful son
Reginald George Bazalgette.

This innocent missive set house and premises in an uproar. Henry was sent east through the dirt, *multa reluctantem*, in white stockings. Tom galloped north. Mrs. Bazalgette sat in the hall, and did well-bred hysterics for Kenealy and Talboys. Lucy pinned up her habit, and ran to the boundary hedge on the bare chance of seeing the figures of the truants somewhere short of the horizon. Lo and behold! there was David Dodd crossing the very nearest field and coming towards her, an urchin in each hand.

Lucy ran to meet them. "Oh, you dear, naughty children, what a fright you have given us! Oh, Mr. Dodd, how good of you! Where *did* you find them?"

"Under that hedge, eating apples. They tell me they sailed for the North Pole this morning, but fell in with a pirate close under the land, so bout ship and came ashore again."

"A pirate, Mr. Dodd? Oh, I see; a beggar, a tramp."

"A deal worse than that, Miss Lucy. Now, youngster, why don't you spin your own yarn?"

"Yes, tell me, Reggy."

"Well, dear, when I had written to mamma, and Johnny had folded it, — because I can write but I can't

fold it, and he can fold it but he can't write it, — we went to the North Pole, and we got a mile; and then we saw that nasty Newfoundland dog sitting in the road waiting to torment us; it is farmer Johnson's, and it plays with us, and knocks us down, and licks us, and frightens us, and we hate it; so we came home."

"Ha! ha! good, prudent children. Oh, dear, you have had no dinner."

"Oh, yes, we had, Lucy, such a nice one: we bought such a lot of apples of a woman. I never had a dinner all apples before; they always spoil them with mutton and things, and that nasty, nasty rice."

"Hear to that!" shouted David Dodd. "They have been dining upon vargese (verjuice), and them growing children. I shall take them into the kitchen and put some cold beef into their little holds this minute, poor little lambs."

"Oh, yes, do! and I will run and tell the good news." She ran across the lawn and came into the hall, red with innocent happiness and agitation. "They are found, aunt! they are found! don't cry! Mr. Dodd found them close by. They have had no dinner, so that good, kind Mr. Dodd is taking them into the kitchen. I will send Master Christmas home with a servant. Shall I bring you Reggy to kiss?"

"No, no! wicked little wretch! to frighten his poor mother! Whip him, somebody, and put him to bed."

In the evening, soon after the ladies had left the dining-room, the pianoforte was heard playing quadrilles in the drawing-room. David fidgeted on his seat a little, and presently rose and went for his violin, and joined Lucy in the drawing-room alone. Mrs. B. was trying on a dress. Between the tunes Lucy chatted with him as freely and kindly as ever. David was in heaven. When the gentlemen came up from the dining-room, his joy

was interrupted, but not for long. The two musicians played with so much spirit, and the fiddle, in particular, was so hearty, that Mrs. Bazalgette proposed a little quiet dance on the carpet; and this drew the other men away from the piano, and left David and Lucy to themselves. She stole a look more than once at his bright eyes and rich ruddy color, and asked herself, "Is that really the same face we found looking wan and haggard on the sea? I think I have put an end to that, at all events." The consciousness of this sort of power is secretly agreeable to all men and all women, whether they mean to abuse it or no. She smiled demurely at her mastery over this great heart, and said to herself, "One would think I was a witch." Later in the evening she eyed him again, and thought to herself, "If my company and a few friendly words can make him so happy, it does seem very hard I should select him to shun for the few days he has to pass in England now — but then if I let him think — I don't know what to do with him. Poor Mr. Dodd."

Miss Fountain did not torment her bolder aspirants with alternate distance and familiarity. She rode out every fine day with Mr. Talboys, and was all affability. She sat next Mr. Hardie at dinner, and was all affability.

Narrative has its limits; and to relate in some sequence the honest sailor's tortures in love with a tactician, I have necessarily omitted concurrent incidents of a still tamer character; but the reader may, by the help of his own intelligence, gather their general results from the following dialogues, which took place on the afternoon and evening of the terrible infant's escapade.

Mrs. Bazalgette. "Well, my dear friend, and how does this naughty girl of mine use you?"

Mr. Hardie. "As well as I could expect, and better than I deserve."

Mrs. B. "Then she must be cleverer than any girl that ever breathed. However, she does appreciate your conversation; she makes no secret of it."

Mr. H. "I have so little reason to complain of my reception, that I will make my proposal to her this evening if you think proper."

Mrs. Bazalgette started, and glanced admiration on a man of eight thousand a year, who came to the point of points without being either cajoled or spurred thither: but she shook her head. "Prudence, my dear Mr. Hardie, prudence. Not just yet. You are making advances every day; and Lucy is an odd girl; with all her apparent tenderness, she is unimpressionable."

"That is only virgin modesty," said Hardie, dogmatically.

"Fiddlestick," replied Mrs. B., good-humoredly. "The greatest flirts I ever met with were virgins, as you call them. I tell you she is not disposed towards marriage as all other girls are — until they have tasted its bitters."

Mr. H. "If I know anything of character, she will make a very loving wife."

Mrs. B. (sharply). "That means a nice little negro. Well, I think she might, when once caught; but she is not caught, and she is slippery, and, if you are in too great a hurry, she may fly off: but, above all, we have a dangerous rival in the house, just now."

Mr. H. "What! that Mr. Talboys? I don't fear him. He is next door to a fool."

Mrs. B. "What of that? fools are dangerous rivals for a lady's favor. We don't object to fools. It depends on the employment. There is one office we are apt to select them for."

Mr. H. "A husband, eh?" The lady nodded.

Mrs. B. "I meant to marry a fool in Bazalgette; but

I found my mistake. The wretch had only feigned absurdity. He came out in his true colors directly."

Mr. H. "A man of sense, eh? The sinister hypocrite! He only wore the cap and bells to allure unguarded beauty: and doffed them when he donned the wedding suit."

Mrs. B. "Yes. But these are reminiscences so sweet —that I shall be glad to return from them to your little affair; seriously, then, Mr. Talboys is not to be overlooked, for this reason: he is well backed."

"By whom?"

"By some one who has influence with Lucy: her nearest relation, Mr. Fountain."

"What! is he nearer to her than you are?"

"Certainly, and she is fond of him to infatuation. One day I did but hint that selfishness entered into his character (he is eaten up with it), and that he told fibs; Mr. Hardie, she turned round on me like a tigress; oh! how she made me cry!"

The keen hand, Hardie, smiled satirically, and after a pause, answered with consummate coolness: "I believe thus much; that she loves her uncle, and that his influence, exerted unscrupulously" —

"Which it will be. He may be strong enough to spoil us, even though he should not be able to carry his own point; now, trust me, my dear friend, Lucy's preference is clearly for you, but I know the weakness of my own sex; and above all, I know Lucy Fountain. A mouse can help a lion in a matter of small threads, too small for his nobler and grander wisdom to see. Let me be your mouse for once." The little woman caught the great man with the everlasting hook: and the discussion ended in "Claw me and I will claw thee," and in the mutual self-complacency that follows that arrangement. *Vide* the Scotch Reviews.

Mr. H. "I really think she would accept me if I offered to-day; but I have so high an opinion of your sagacity and friendship for me, madam, that I will defer my judgment to yours. I must, however, make one condition, that you will not displace my plan without suggesting a distinct course of action for me to adopt in its place."

This smooth proposal, made quietly but with twinkling eye, would have shut the mouth of nine advisers in ten; but it found the Bazalgette prepared.

"Oh! the pleasure of having a man of ability to deal with!" cried she, with enthusiasm. "This is my advice, then: stay Mr. Fountain out. He must go in a day or two. His time is up, and I will drop a hint of fresh visitors expected. When he is gone, warm by degrees, and offer yourself either in person or through Bazalgette or me."

"In person then, certainly. Of all foibles, employing another pair of eyes, another tongue, and another person, to make love for one, is surely the silliest."

"I am quite of your opinion," cried the lady, with a hearty laugh.

Mr. Fountain. "So you are satisfied with the state of things?"

Mr. Talboys. "Yes, I think I have beaten the sailor out of the field."

"Well, but—this Hardie?"

"Hardie! a shopkeeper. I don't fear him."

"In that case, why not propose? I have been doing the preliminaries — sounding your praises."

Mr. Talboys (tyrannically). "I propose next Saturday."

Mr. Fountain. "Very well."

Talboys. "In the boat."

"In the boat! What boat? There's no boat."

"I have asked her to sail with me from —— in a boat; there is a very nice little lugger-rigged one. I am having the seats padded and stuffed and lined, and an awning put up, and the boat painted white and gold."

"Bravo! Cleopatra's galley."

"I assure you she looks forward to it with pleasure; she guesses why I want to get her into that boat. She hesitated at first; but at last she consented with a look —a conscious look. I can hardly describe it."

"There is no need," cried Fountain. "I know it; the jade turned all eyelashes."

"That is rather exaggerated, but still"—

"But still I have described it—to a hair. Ha! ha!"

Talboys (gravely). "Well, yes."

Mr. Talboys, I am bound to own, was accurate. During the last day or two Lucy had taken a turn; she had been bewitching; she had flattered him with tact, but deliciously; had consulted him as to which of his beautiful dresses she should wear at the masked ball, and when pressed to have a sail in the boat he was fitting for her, she ended by giving a demure assent.

Chorus of male readers: "*Oh, les femmes, les femmes!*"

David Dodd had by nature a healthy as well as a high mind; but the fever and ague of an absorbing passion were telling on it. Like many a great heart before his day, his heart was tossed like a ship, and went up to heaven and down again to despair, as a girl's humor shifted, or seemed to shift; for he forgot that there is such a thing as accident, and that her sex are even more under its dominion than ours. No, whatever she did must be spontaneous, voluntary, premeditated even, and her lightest word worth weighing, her lightest action worth anxious scrutiny as to its cause.

Still he had this about him that the peevish and puny lover has not. Her bare presence was joy to him. Even

when she was surrounded by other figures, he saw and felt but the one; the rest were nothings. But when she went of his sight, some bright illusion seemed to fade into cold and dark reality. Then it fell on him like a weighty, icy hammer, that in three days he must go to sea for two years, and that he was no nearer her heart now than he was at Font Abbey; was he even as near?

So, the next afternoon he thrust in before Talboys, and put Lucy on her horse by brute force, and gripped her stout little boot, which she had slyly substituted for a shoe, and touched her glossy habit, and felt a thrill of bliss unspeakable at his momentary contact with her; but she was no sooner out of sight than a hollow ache seized the poor fellow, and he hung his head, and sighed.

"I say, capting," said a voice in his ear. He looked up, and there stood Tom the stable-boy, with both hands in his pockets. Tom was not there by his own proper movement, but was agent of Betsy the under-housemaid.

Female servants scan the male guests, pretty closely too, without seeming to do it; and judge them upon lamentably broad principles: youth, health, size, beauty, and good temper. Oh, the coarse-minded critics! Hence it befell that in their eyes, especially after the fiddle business, David was a king compared with his rivals.

"If I look at him too long, I shall eat him," said the cook-maid.

"He is a darling," said the upper housemaid.

Betsy, aforesaid, often opened a window to have a sly look at him, and on one of these occasions she inspected him from an upper story at her leisure. His manner drew her attention. She saw him mount Lucy, and eye her departing form sadly and wistfully. Betsy glowered and glowered, and hit the nail on the head, as people will do who are so absurd as to look with their own eyes, and draw their own conclusions instead of other people's.

After this she took an opportunity, and said to Tom, with a satirical air, "How are you off for nags, your way?"

"Oh, we have got enough for our corn," replied Tom, on the defensive.

"It seems you can't find one for the captain amongst you."

"Will you give me a kiss if I make you out a liar?"

"Sooner than break my arm. Come, you might, Tom. Now, is it reasonable, him never to get a ride with her, and that useless lot prancing about with her all day long?"

"Why don't you ride with 'em, capting?"

"I have no horse."

"I have got a horse for you, sir. Master's."

"That would be taking a liberty."

"Liberty, sir; no. Master would be so pleased if you would but ride him. *He told me so.*"

"Then saddle him, pray."

"I have a-saddled him. You had better come in the stable-yard, capting; then you can mount and follow, you will catch them before they reach the downs." In another minute David was mounted. "Do you ride short or long, capting?" inquired Tom, handling the stirrup leather.

David wore a puzzled look. "I ride as long as I can stick on." And he trotted out of the stable-yard. As Tom had predicted, he caught the party just as they went off the turnpike on to the grass. His heart beat with joy; he cantered in amongst them. His horse was fresh, squeaked, and bucked at finding himself on grass, and in company, and David announced his arrival by rolling among their horses' feet with the reins tight grasped in his fist. The ladies screamed with terror.

David got up laughing. His horse had hoped to canter away without him, and now stood facing him and pulling.

"No, ye don't," said David. "I held on to the tiller-ropes, though I did go overboard." Then ensued a battle between David and his horse; the one wanting to mount, the other anxious to be unencumbered with sailors. It was settled by David making a vault, and sitting on the animal's neck, on which the ladies screamed again, and Lucy, half whimpering, proposed to go home.

"Don't think of it," cried David. "I won't be beat by such a small craft as this. Hello!" For, the horse backing into Talboys, that gentleman gave him a clandestine cut, and he bolted, and being a little hard-mouthed, would gallop in spite of the tiller-ropes. On came the other nags after him, all misbehaving more or less, so fine a thing is example. When they had galloped half a mile, the ground began to rise, and David's horse relaxed his pace, whereon David whipped him industriously, and made him gallop again in spite of remonstrance.

The others drew the rein, and left him to gallop alone. Accordingly he made the round of the hill and came back, his horse covered with lather, and its tail trembling. "There," said he to Lucy, with an air of radiant self-satisfaction, "he clapped on sail without orders from quarter-deck; so I made him carry it till his bows were under water."

"You will kill my uncle's horse," was the reply in a chilling tone.

"Heaven forbid!"

"Look at its poor flank beating."

David hung his head like a schoolgirl rebuked. "But why did he clap on sail if he could not carry it?" inquired he ruefully of his monitress.

The others burst out laughing. But Lucy remained grave and silent.

David rode along crestfallen.

Mrs. Bazalgette brought her pony close to him, and whispered, "Never mind that little cross-patch, *she* does not care a pin about the *horse;* you interrupted her flirtation, that is all."

This piece of consolation soothed David like a bunch of stinging-nettles.

Whilst Mrs. Bazalgette was consoling David with thorns, Kenealy and Talboys were quizzing his figure on horseback.

He sat bent like a bow, and visibly sticking on: *item,* he had no straps, and his trousers rucked up half to his knee.

Lucy's attention being slyly drawn to these phenomena by David's friend Talboys, she smiled politely, though somewhat constrainedly; but the gentlemen found it a source of infinite amusement during the whole ride, which, by the way, was not a very long one, for Miss Fountain soon expressed a wish to turn homewards. David felt guilty, he scarce knew why.

The promised happiness was wormwood. On dismounting she went to the lawn to tend her flowers. David followed her, and said bitterly, "I am sorry I came to spoil your pleasure."

Miss Fountain made no answer.

"I thought I might have one ride with you, when others have so many."

"Why, of course, Mr. Dodd. If you like to expose yourself to ridicule, it is no affair of mine." The lady's manner was a happy mixture of frigidity and crossness. David stood benumbed, and Lucy having emptied her flower-pot, glided indoors without taking any further notice of him.

David stood rooted to the spot. Then he gave a heavy sigh, and went and leaned against one of the pillars of

"I AM SORRY I CAME TO SPOIL YOUR PLEASURE."

the portico, and everything seemed to swim before his eyes.

Presently he heard a female voice inquire, "Is Miss Lucy at home?" He looked, and there was a tall, strapping woman, in conference with Henry. She had on a large bonnet with flaunting ribbons, and a bushy cap infuriated by red flowers. Henry's eye fell upon these embellishments. "Not at home," chanted he sonorously.

"Eh, dear," said the woman sadly, "I have come a long way to see her!"

"Not at home, ma'am," repeated Henry like a vocal machine.

"My name is Wilson, young man," said she persuasively, and her amazon's voice was mellow and womanly spite of her coal-scuttle full of field-poppies. "I am her nurse, and I have not seen her this five years come Martinmas," and the amazon gave a gentle sigh of disappointment.

"Not at home, ma'am," rang th' inexorable Plush.

But David's good heart took the woman's part. "She is at home now," said he coming forward. "I saw her go into the house scarce a minute ago."

"Oh, thank you, sir," said Mrs. Wilson.

But Mr. Plush's face was instantly puckered all over with signals, which David not comprehending, he said, "Can I say a word with you, sir?" and, drawing him on one side, objected in an injured and piteous tone, "We are not at home to such gallimaufry as that. It as as much as my place is worth to denounce that there bonnet to our ladies."

"Bonnet be d——d," roared David aloud. "It is her old nurse. Come, heave ahead," and he pointed up the stairs.

"Anything to oblige you, captain," said Henry, and

sauntered into the drawing-room; "Mrs. Wilson, ma'am, for Miss Fountain."

"Very well; my niece will be here directly."

Lucy had just gone to her own room for some working materials.

"You had better come to an anchor on this seat, Mrs. Wilson," said David.

"Thank ye kindly, young gentleman," said Mrs. Wilson; and she settled her stately figure on the seat. "I have walked a many miles to-day along of our horse being lame, and I am a little tired; you are one of the family, I do suppose."

"No, I am only a visitor."

"Ain't ye now? well, thank ye kindly all the same. I have seen a worse face than yours, I can tell you," added she, for in the midst of it all she had found time to read countenances *more mulierum.*

"And I have seen a good many hundred worse than yours, Mrs. Wilson."

Mrs. Wilson laughed. "Twenty years ago if you had said so, I might have believed you, or even ten: but, bless you, I am an old woman now, and can say what I choose to the men. Forty-two next Candlemas."

In the country they call themselves old at forty-two, because they feel young. In town they call themselves young at forty-two, because they feel old.

David saw that he had fallen in with a gossip; and being in no humor for vague chat, he left Mrs. Wilson to herself, with an assurance that Miss Fountain would be down to her directly.

In leaving her he went into worse company, his own thoughts; they were inexpressibly sad and bitter. "She hates me then," said he. "Everybody is welcome to her at all hours, except me. That lady said it was because I interrupted her flirtation. Ah well! I shan't interrupt

her flirtation much longer. I shan't be in her way or anybody's long. A few short hours, and this bitter day will be forgotten, and nothing left me but the memory of the kindness she had for me once, or seemed to have, and the angel face I must carry in my heart wherever I go, by land or sea. The sea? ah! would to God I was upon it this minute. I'd rather be at sea than ashore, in the dirtiest night that ever blew."

He had been walking to and fro a good half-hour, deeply dejected and turning bitter, when looking in accidentally at the hall-door, he caught sight of Mrs. Wilson sitting all alone where he had left her. "Why, what on earth is the meaning of that?" thought he, and he went into the hall and asked Mrs. Wilson how she came to be there all alone.

"That is what I have been asking myself a while past," was the dry reply.

"Have you not seen her?"

"No, sir, I have not seen her, and to my mind it is doubtful whether I am to see her."

"But I say you shall see her."

"No! no! don't put yourself out, sir," said the woman, carelessly. "I dare say I shall have better luck next time, if I should ever come to this house again, which it is not very likely." She added gently, "Young folk are thoughtless; we must not judge them too hardly."

"Thoughtless they may be, but they have no business to be heartless. I have a great mind to go up and fetch her down."

"Don't ye trouble, sir. It is not worth while putting you about for an old woman like me." Then suddenly dropping the mask of nonchalance, which women of this class often put on to hide their sensibility, she said very, very gravely, and with a sad dignity that one would not have expected from her gossip and her finery, "I begin

to fear, sir, that the child I have suckled doesn't care to know me, now she is a woman grown."

David dashed up the stairs with a red streak on his brow. He burst into the drawing-room, and there sat Mrs. Bazalgette overlooking, and Lucy working with a face of beautiful calm. She looked just then so very like a pure tranquil Madonna making an altar-cloth, or something, that David's intention to give her a good scolding was withered in the bud, and he gazed at her surprised and irresolute, and said not a word.

"Anything the matter?" inquired Mrs. Bazalgette, attracted by the brusqueness of his entry.

"Yes, there is," said David, sternly. Lucy looked up. "Miss Fountain's old nurse has been sitting in the hall more than half an hour, and nobody has had the politeness to go near her."

"Oh, is that all? Well, don't look daggers at me. There is Lucy, give her a lesson in good-breeding, Mr. Dodd." This was said a little satirically, and rather nettled David.

"Perhaps it does not become me to set up for a teacher of that: I know my own deficiencies as well as anybody in this house knows them; but this I know, that if an old friend walked eight miles to see me, it would not be good-breeding in me to refuse to walk eight yards to see her. And, another thing, everybody's time is worth something: if I did not mean to see her, I would have that much consideration to send down and tell her so; and not keep the woman wasting her time as well as her trouble, and vexing her heart into the bargain."

"Where is she, Mr. Dodd?" asked Lucy, quickly.

"Where is she?" cried David, getting louder and louder. "Why, she is cooling her heels in the hall this half-hour and more. They hadn't the manners to show her into a room."

"I will go to her, Mr. Dodd," said Lucy, turning a little pale. "Don't be angry, I will go directly;" and having said this with an abject slavishness that formed a miraculous contrast with her late crossness and imperious chilliness, she put down her work hastily and went out; only at the door she curved her throat, and cast back, Parthian like, a glance of timid reproach, as much as to say, "Need you have been so very harsh with a creature so obedient as this is?"

That deprecating glance did Mr. Dodd's business. It shot him with remorse, and made him feel a brute.

"Ha! ha! That is the way to speak to her, Mr. Dodd; the other gentlemen spoil her."

"It was very unbecoming of me to speak to her harshly like that."

"Pooh! nonsense; these girls like to be ordered about: it saves them the trouble of thinking for themselves; but what is to become of me? you have sent off my work-woman."

"I will do her work for her."

"What, can you sew?"

"Where is the sailor that can't sew?"

"Delightful! Then please to sew these two thick ends together. Here is a large needle."

David whipped out of his pocket a round piece of leather with strings attached, and fastened it in the hollow of his hand.

"What is that?"

"It is a sailor's thimble." He took the work, held it neatly, and shoved the needle from behind through the thick material. He worked slowly and uncouthly, but with the precision that was a part of his character, and made exact and strong stitches. His task-mistress looked on, and under the pretence of minute inspection brought a face that was still arch and pretty unneces-

sarily close to the marine milliner, in which attitude they were surprised by Mr. Bazalgette, who, having come in through the open folding-doors, stood looking mighty sardonic at them both before they were even aware he was in the room.

Omphale colored faintly; but Hercules gave a cool nod to the new-comer, and stitched on with characteristic zeal and strict attention to the matter in hand.

At this Bazalgette uttered a sort of chuckle, at which Mrs. Bazalgette turned red. David stitched on for the bare life.

"I came to offer to invite you to my study, but" —

"I can't come just now," said David, bluntly, "I am doing a lady's work for her."

"So I see," retorted Bazalgette, dryly.

"We all dine with the Hunts but you and Mr. Dodd," said Mrs. Bazalgette. "So you will be *en tête-à-tête* all the evening."

"All the better for us both." And with this ingratiating remark Mr. Bazalgette retired whistling.

Mrs. Bazalgette heaved a gentle sigh. "Pity me, my friend," said she, softly.

"What is the matter?" inquired David.

"Mr. Bazalgette is so harsh to me, — ah! — to me who long so for kindness and gentleness, — feel I could give my very soul in exchange for them."

The bait did not take.

"It is only his manner," said David, good-naturedly. "His heart is all right. I never met a better; what sort of a knot is that you are tying? why, that is a granny's knot!" and he looked morose, at which she looked amazed; so he softened, and explained to her with benevolence the rationale of a knot. "A knot is a fastening intended to be undone again by fingers, and not to come undone without them. Accordingly a knot is no

knot at all if it jams, or if it slips. A granny's knot does both; when you want to untie it you must pick at it like taking a nail out of a board, and for all that, sooner or later, it always comes undone of itself; now you look here," and he took a piece of string out of his pocket and tied her a sailor's knot, bidding her observe that she could untie it at once, but it could never come untied of itself. He showed her with this piece of string half a dozen such knots, none of which could either jam or slip.

"Tie me a lover's knot," suggested the lady in a whisper.

"Ay! ay!" and he tied her a lover's knot as imperturbably as he had the reef-knot, bowling-knot, fisherman's bend, etc.

"This is very interesting," said Mrs. Bazalgette, ironically; she thought David might employ a *tête-à-tête* with a flirt better than this. "What a time Lucy is gone!"

"All the better."

"Why?" and she looked down in mock confusion.

"Because poor Mrs. Wilson will be glad."

Mrs. Bazalgette was piqued at this unexpected answer. "You seem quite captivated with this Mrs. Wilson; it was for her sake you took Lucy to task. *Apropos*, you need not have scolded her, for she did not know the woman was in the house."

"What do you mean?"

"I mean Lucy was not in the room when Mrs. Wilson was announced. *I* was, but I did not tell her: the all-important circumstance had escaped my memory. Where are you running to now?"

"Where? why, to ask her pardon, to be sure."

Mrs. B. ["Brute!"]

David ran down the stairs to look for Lucy, but he found somebody else instead: his sister Eve, whom the

servant had that moment admitted into the hall. It was "Oh, Eve!" and "Oh, David!" directly, and an affectionate embrace.

"You got my letter, David."

"No!"

"Well, then you will before long. I wrote to tell you to look out for me. I had better have brought the letter in my pocket. I didn't know I was coming till just an hour before I started. Mother insisted on my going to see the last of you. Cousin Mary had invited me to ——, so I shall see you off, Davy dear, after all. I thought I'd just pop in and let you know I was in the neighborhood. Mary and her husband are outside the gate in their four-wheel. I would not let them drive in because I want to hear your story, and they would have bothered us."

"Eve, dear, I have no good news for you. Your words have come true. I have been perplexed, up and down, hot and cold, till I feel sometimes like going mad. Eve, I cannot fathom her. She is deeper than the ocean, and more changeable. What am I saying? the sea and the wind, — they are to be read; they have their signs and their warnings; but she"—

"There! there! that is the old song. I tell you it is only a girl, a creature as shallow as a puddle, and as easy to fathom as you call it; only men are so stupid, especially boys. Now just you tell me all she has said, all she has done, and all she has looked, and I will turn her inside out like a glove in a minute."

Cheered by this audacious pledge, David pumped upon Eve all that has trickled on my readers, and some minor details besides, and repeated Lucy's every word, sweet or bitter, and recalled her lightest action — *meminerunt omnia amantes* — and every now and then he looked sadly into Eve's keen little face for his doom.

She heard him in silence until the last fatal incident, — Lucy's severity on the lawn. Then she put in a question, "Were those her exact words?"

"Do I ever forget a syllable she says to me?"

"Don't be angry. I forgot what a ninny she has made of you. Well, David, it is all as plain as my hand. The girl likes you, that is all."

"The girl likes me? what do you mean? How can you say that? what sign of liking is there?"

"There are two. She avoids you, and she has been rude to you."

"And those are signs of liking, are they?" said David bitterly.

"Why of course they are, stupid. Tell me now: does she shun this Captain Keely?"

"Kenealy? No."

"Does she shun Mr. Harvey?"

"Hardie? No."

"Does she shun Mr. Talboys?"

"Oh, Eve, you break my heart; no! no! She shuns no one but poor David."

"Now think a little. Here are three on one sort of footing, and one on a different footing; which is likeliest to be *the man*, the one or the three? You have gained a point since we were all together. She *distinguishes* you."

"But what a way to distinguish me! it looks more like hatred than love or liking either."

"Not to my eye. Why should she shun you? You are handsome, you are good-tempered, and good company. Why should she be shy of you? She is afraid of you, that is why; and why is she afraid of you? because she is afraid of her own heart; that is how I read her. Then as for her snubbing you, if her character was like mine, that ought to go for nothing, for I snub all the world;

but this is a little queen for politeness. I can't think she would go so far out of her way as to affront anybody — unless she had an uncommon respect for him."

"Listen to that now! I am on my beam-ends."

"Now, think a minute, David," said Eve calmly, ignoring his late observation, "did you ever know her snub anybody?"

"Never. Did you?"

"No, and she never would unless she took an uncommon interest in the person. When a girl likes a man, she thinks she has a right to ill-use him a little bit; he has got her affection to set against a scratch or two. The others have not. So she has not the same right to scratch them. La! listen to me teaching him A, B, C! Why, David, you know nothing; it's scandalous."

Eve's confidence communicated itself at last to David; but when he asked her whether she thought Lucy would consent to be his wife, her countenance fell in her turn. "That is a very different thing. I am pretty sure she likes you: how could she help it? but I doubt she will never go to the altar with you. Don't be angry with me, Davy, dear. You are in love with her; and to you she is an angel. But I am of her own sex, and see her as she is; no matter who she likes, she will never be content to make a bad match, as they call it. She told me so once with her own lips. But she had no need to tell me; worldliness is written on her. David! David! you don't know these great houses, nor the fair-spoken creatures that live in them, with tongues tuned to sentiment, and mild eyes fixed on the main-chance; their drawing-rooms are carpeted market-places; you may see the stones bulge through the flowery pattern; there the ladies sell their faces, the gentlemen their titles and their money; and much I fear Miss Fountain's hand will go like the rest — to the highest bidder."

"If I thought so, my love, deep as it is, would turn to contempt; I would tear her out of my heart though I tore my heart out of my body." He added, "I will know what she is before many hours."

"Do, David! Take her off her guard, and make hot love to her: that is your best chance. It is a pity you are so much in love with her; you might win her by a surprise if you only *liked* her in moderation."

"How so, dear Eve?"

"The battle would be more even. Your adoring her gives her the upper hand of you. She is sure to say 'no' at first, and then I am afraid you will leave off, instead of going on hotter and hotter. The very look she will put on to check you *will* check you, you are so green. What a pity I can't take your place for half an hour! I would have her against her will. I would take her by storm. If she said 'no' twenty times, she should say 'yes' the twenty-first; but you are afraid of her: fancy being afraid of a woman. Come, David, you must not shilly-shally, but attack her like a man; and if she is such a fool she can't see your merit, forgive her like a man, and forget her like a man. Come, promise me you will."

"I promise you this," said David, "that if I lose her it shall not be for want of trying to win her; and if she refuses me because I am not her fancy, I shall die a bachelor for her sake." Eve sighed. "But if she is the mercenary thing you take her for, if she owns to liking me, but prefers money to love, then from that moment she is no more to me than a picture or a statue, or any other lovely thing that has no soul."

With these determined words he gave his sister his arm, and walked with her through the grounds to the road where her cousin was waiting for her.

Lucy found Mrs. Wilson in the hall. "Come into the

library, Mrs. Wilson," said she. "I have only just heard you were here. Won't you sit down? Are you not well, Mrs. Wilson? You tremble. You are fatigued, I fear. Pray compose yourself. May I ring for a glass of wine for you?"

"No, no! Miss Lucy," said the woman, smiling: "it is only along of you coming to me so sudden, and you so grown. Eh, sure, can this fine young lady be the little girl I held in my lap but t'other day, as it seems?"

There was an agitation and ardor about Mrs. Wilson that, coupled with the flaming bonnet, made Miss Fountain uneasy. She thought Mrs. Wilson must be a little cracked, or at least flighty.

"Pray compose yourself, madam," said she soothingly, but with that dignity nobody could assume more readily than she could. "I dare say I am much grown since I last had the pleasure of seeing you; but I have not outgrown my memory, and am happy to receive you, or any of our old servants that knew my dear mother."

"Then I must not look for a welcome," said Mrs. Wilson with feminine logic, "for I was never your servant, nor your mamma's." Lucy opened her eyes, and her face sought an explanation.

"I never took any money for what I gave you; so how could I be a servant? To see me a-dangling of my heels in your hall so long, one would say I was a servant; but I am not a servant, nor like to be, please God, unless I should have the ill-luck to bury my two boys, as I have their father. So perhaps the best thing I can do, miss, is to drop you my courtesy, and walk back as I came." The amazon's manner was singularly independent and calm, but the tell-tale tears were in her large gray honest eyes before she ended.

Lucy's natural penetration and habit of attending to faces rather than words came to her aid. "Wait a

minute, Mrs. Wilson," said she, "I think there is some misunderstanding here. Perhaps the fault is mine. And yet I remember more than one nursery-maid that was kind enough to me; but I have heard nothing of them since."

"Their blood is not in your veins as mine is, unless the doctors have lanced it out."

"I never was bled in my life, if you mean that, madam. But I must ask you to explain how I can possibly have the — the advantage of possessing *your* blood in *my* veins."

Mrs. Wilson eyed her keenly. "Perhaps I had better tell you the story from first to last, young lady," said she quietly.

"If you please," said the courtier, mastering a sigh; for in Mrs. Wilson there was much that promised fluency.

"Well, miss, when you came into the world your mamma could not nurse you. I do notice the gentry that eat the fat of the land are none the better for it; for a poor woman can do a mother's part by her child, but high-born and high-fed folk can't always: so you had to be brought up by hand, miss, and it did not agree with you, and that is no great wonder, seeing it is against nature. Well, my little girl, that was born just two days after you, died in my arms of convulsion fits, when she was just a month old. She had only just been buried, and me in bitter grief, when doesn't the doctor call and ask me as a great favor, would I nurse Mrs. Fountain's child, that was pining for want of its natural food? I bade him get out of my sight. I felt as if no woman had a right to have a child living when my little darling was gone. But my husband, a just man as ever was, said, 'Take a thought, Mary, the child is really pining by all accounts.' Well, I would not listen to him. But next Sunday, after afternoon church, my mother, that

had not said a word till then, comes to me and puts her hand on my shoulder with a quiet way she had: 'Mary,' says she, 'I am older than you, and have known more.' She had buried six of us, poor thing. Says she, scarce above a whisper: 'Suckle that failing child. It will be the better for her, and the better for you, Mary my girl.' Well, miss, my mother was a woman that didn't interfere every minute, and seldom gave her reasons; but if you scorned her advice, you mostly found them out to your cost: and then she *was* my mother; and in those days mothers were more thought of, leastways by us that were women and had suffered for our children, and so learned to prize the woman that had suffered for us. 'Well, then,' I said, 'if you say so, mother, I suppose I didn't ought to gainsay you, on the Lord his day.' For you see my mother was one that chose her time for speaking — eh! but she was wise. 'Mother,' says I, 'to oblige you, so be it;' and with that I fell to crying sore on my mother's neck, and she wasn't long behind me, you may be sure. Whiles we sat a-crying in one another's arms, in comes John, and goes to speak a word of comfort. 'It is not that,' says my mother: 'she have given her consent to nurse Mrs. Fountain's little girl.' 'It is much to her credit,' says he: says he, 'I will take her up to the house myself.' 'What for,' says I; 'them that grants the favor has no call to run after them that asks it.' You see, Miss Lucy, that was my ignorance; we were small farmers, too independent to be fawning, and not high enough to weed ourselves of uppishness. Your mamma, she was a real lady; so she had no need to trouble about her dignity, she thought only of her child, and she didn't send the child, but she came with it herself. Well, she came into our kitchen and made her obeisance, and we to her, and mother dusted her a seat. She was pale-like, and a

mother's care was in her face, and that went to my heart. 'This is very, very kind of you, Mrs. Wilson,' said she. Those were her words. 'Mayhap it is,' says I; and my heart felt like lead. Mother made a sign to your mamma, that she should not hurry me. I saw the signal for as quick as she was; but I never let on I saw it. At last I plucked up a bit of courage, and I said, 'Let me see it.' So mother took you from the girl that held you all wrapped up, and mother put you on my knees; and I took a good look at you. You had the sweetest little face that ever came into the world, but all peaked and pining for want of nature. With you being on my knees, my bosom began to yearn over you, it did. 'The child is starved,' said I, 'that is all its grief; and,' says I, 'you did right to bring it here.' Your mother clasps her hands. 'Oh! Mrs. Wilson,' says she, 'God grant it is not too late.' So then I smiled back to her, and I said, 'Don't you fret: in a fortnight you shan't know her.' You see I was beginning to feel proud of what I knew I could do for you. I was a healthy young woman, and could have nursed two children as easy as some can one. To make a long story short, I gave you the breast then and there: and you didn't leave us long in doubt whether cow's milk or mother's milk is God's will for sucklings. Well, your mamma put her hands before her face, and I saw the tears force their way between her fingers. So when she was gone, I said to my mother, 'What was that for?' — 'I shan't tell you,' says she. 'Do, mother,' says I. So she said, 'I wonder at your having to ask; can't you see it was jealousy-like? Do you think she has not her burden to bear in this world as well as you? How would you like to see another woman do a mother's part for a child of yours, and you sit looking on like a toy-mother?' Eh! Miss Lucy, but I was vexed for her at that, and my heart

softened: and I used to take you up to the great house, and spend nearly the whole day there, not to rob her of her child more than need be."

"Oh, Mrs. Wilson! oh, you kind, noble-hearted creature, surely Heaven will reward you."

"That is past praying for, my dear. Heaven wasn't going to be long in debt to a farmer's wife, you may be sure; not a day, not an hour. I had hardly laid you to my breast, when you seemed to grow to my heart. My milk had been tormenting me, for one thing. My good mother had thought of that, I'll go bail: and of course you relieved me. But above all, you numbed the wound in my heart, and healed it by degrees: a part of my love that lay in the churchyard seemed to come back like, and settle on the little helpless darling that milked me. At whiles I forgot you were not my own: and even when I remembered it, it was — I don't know — somehow — as if it wasn't so. I knew in my head you were none of mine, but what of that, I didn't feel it here. Well, miss, I nursed you a year and two months, and a finer little girl never was seen, and such a weight! And of course I was proud of you; and often your dear mother tried to persuade me to take a twenty-pound note, or ten; but I never would. I could not sell my milk to a queen. I'd refuse it, or I'd make a gift of it, and the love that goes with it, which it is beyond price. I didn't say so to her in so many words, but I used to tell her, 'I was as much in her little girl's debt as she was in mine,' and so I was. But as for a silk gown, and a shawl, and the like, I didn't say 'no' to them; who ever does?"

"Nurse!"

"My lamb!"

"Can you ever forgive me for confounding you with a servant? I am so inexperienced. I knew nothing of all this."

"Oh, Miss Lucy, 'let that flea stick in the wall,' as the saying is."

"But, dear Mrs. Wilson — only think that your affection for me should have lasted all these years. You speak as if such tenderness was common. I fear you are mistaken there: most nurses go away and think no more of those to whom they have been as mothers in infancy."

"How do you know that, Miss Lucy? Who can tell what passes inside those poor women that are ground down into slaves, and never dare show their real hearts to a living creature? Certainly, hirelings will be hirelings, and a poor creature that is forced to sell her breast, and is bundled off as soon as she has served the grand folks' turn, why she behoves to steel herself against nature, and she knows that from the first: but whether she always does get to harden herself, I take leave to doubt. Miss Lucy, I knew an unfortunate girl that nursed a young gentleman, leastways a young nobleman it was: and, years after that, I have known her to stand outside the hedge for an hour to catch a sight of him at play on the lawn among the other children. Ay, and if she had a penny piece to spare she would go and buy him sugar-plums, and lay wait for him and give them him, and he heir to thousands a year."

"Poor thing! Poor thing!"

"Next to the tie of blood, Miss Lucy, the tie of milk is a binding affection. When you went to live twenty miles from us I behoved to come in the cart and see you, from time to time."

"I remember, nurse! I remember!"

"When I came to our new farm hard by, you were away: but as soon as I heard you were come back, it was like a magnet drawing me. I could not keep away from you."

"Heaven forbid you should; and I will come and see you, dear nurse."

"Will ye now? Do now. I have got a nice little parlor for you. It is a very good house for a farm-house: and there we can set and talk at our ease, and no fine servants dressed like lords coming staring in."

Lucy now proffered a timid request that Mrs. Wilson would take off her bonnet. "I want to see your good kind face without any ornament."

"Hear to that now, the darling," and off came the bonnet.

"Now your cap."

"Well, I don't know: I hadn't time to do my hair as should be before coming."

"What does that matter with me? I must see you without that cap."

"What, don't you like my new cap? Isn't it a pretty cap? Why, I bought it a-purpose to come and see you in."

"Oh! it is a very pretty cap in itself," said the courtier, "but it does not suit the shape of your face. Oh! what a difference! Ah, now I see your heart in your face. Will you let me make you a cap?"

"Will you now, Miss Lucy? I shall be so proud wearing it, our house will scarce hold me."

At this junction a footman came in with a message from Mrs. Bazalgette, to remind Lucy that they dined out.

"I must go and dress, nurse." She then kissed her, and promised to ride over and visit her at the farm next week, and spend a long time with her quietly, and so these new old friends parted.

Lucy pondered every word Mrs. Wilson had said to her, and said to herself, "What a child I am still. How little I know. How feebly I must have observed."

The party at dinner consisted of Mr. Bazalgette, David, and Reginald, who, taking advantage of his mother's absence and Lucy's, had prevailed on the servants to let him dine with the grown-up ones. "Hallo! urchin," said Mr. Bazalgette, "to what do we owe this honor?"

"Papa," said Reginald, quaking at heart, "if I don't ever begin to be a man, what is to become of me?"

Mr. Reginald did not exhibit his full powers at dinner time. He was greatest at dessert. Peaches and apricots fell like blackberries. He topped up with the ginger and other preserves; then he uttered a sigh, and his eye dwelt on some candied pineapple he had procrastinated too long. Putting the pineapple's escape and the sigh together, Mr. Bazalgette rightly judged that absolute repletion had been attained. "Come, Reginald," said he, "run away now, and let Mr. Dodd and me have our talk." Before the words were well out of his mouth, a howl broke from the terrible infant. He had evidently feared the proposal, and got this dismal howl all ready.

"Oh, papa! oh! oh!"

"What is the matter?"

"Don't make me go away with the ladies this time. Jane says I am not a man because I go away when the ladies go. And cousin Lucy won't marry me till I am a man. Oh, papa, do let me be a man this once."

"Let him stay, sir," said David.

"Then he must go and play at the end of the room, and not interrupt our conversation."

Mr. Reginald consented with rapture. He had got a new puzzle. He could play at it in a corner; all he wanted was to be able to stop Jane's mouth, should she ever jeer him again. Reginald thus disposed of, Mr. Bazalgette invited David to replenish his glass, and sit round to the fire. The fire was huge and glowing, the cut glass sparkled, and the ruby wine glowed, and even

the faces shone, and all invited genial talk. Yet David, on the eve of his departure and of his fate, oppressed with suspense and care, was out of the reach of those genial, superficial influences. He could only just mutter a word of assent here and there, then relapsed into his reverie, and eyed the fire thoughtfully as if his destiny lay there revealed. Mr. Bazalgette, on the contrary, glowed more and more in manner as well as face, and, like many more of his countrymen, seemed to imbibe friendship with each fresh glass of port.

At last, under the double influence of his real liking for David, and of the Englishman-thawing Portuguese decoction, he gave his favorite a singular proof of friendship. It came about as follows. Observing that he had all the talk to himself, he fixed his eyes with an expression of paternal benevolence on his companion, and was silent in turn.

David looked up as we all do when a voice ceases, and saw this mild gaze dwelling on him.

"Dodd, my boy, you don't say a word; what is the matter?"

"I am very bad company, sir: that is the truth."

"Well, fill your glass, then, and I'll talk for you. I have got something to say to you, young gentleman." David filled his glass, and forced himself to attend; after a while no effort was needed.

"Dodd," resumed the mature merchant, "I need hardly tell you that I have a particular regard for you; the reason is, you are a young man of uncommon merit."

"Mr. Bazalgette! sir! I don't know which way to look when you praise me like that. It is your goodness, you overrate me."

"No I don't. I am a judge of men. I have seen thousands, and seen them too close to be taken in by their outside. You are the only one of my wife's friends

that ever had the run of my study: what do you think of that, now?"

"I am very proud of it, sir; that is all I can find to say."

"Well, young man, that same good opinion I have of you induces me to do something else for you, that I have never done before for any of your predecessors."

Mr. Bazalgette paused. David's heart beat. Quick as lightning it darted through his mind: "He is going to ask a favor for me. Promotion? Why not? He is a merchant. He has friends in 'the Company.'"

"I am going to interfere in your concerns, Dodd."

"You are very good, sir."

"Well, perhaps I am. I have to overcome a natural reluctance. But you are worth the struggle. I shall therefore go against the usages of the world, which I don't care a button for, and my own habits, which I care a great deal for, and give you, — humph, — a piece of friendly advice."

David looked blank.

"Dodd, my boy, you are playing the fool in this house."

David looked blanker.

"It is not your fault, you are led into it by one of those sweet creatures that love to reduce men to the level of their own wisdom; you are in love, or soon will be."

David colored all over like a girl, and his face of distress was painful to see.

"You need not look so frightened; I am your friend, not your enemy. And do you really think others besides me have not seen what is going on? Now, Dodd, my dear fellow, I am an old man, and you are a young one. Moreover, I understand the lady, and you don't."

"That is true, sir; I feel I cannot fathom her."

"Poor fellow! well, but I have known her longer than you."

"That is true, sir."

"And on closer terms of intimacy."

"No doubt, sir."

"Then listen to me. She is all very charming, outside: and full of sensibility, outside; but she has no more real feeling than a fish. She will go a certain length with you, or with any agreeable young man; but she can always stop where it suits her. No lady in England values position and luxury more than she does, or is less likely to sacrifice them to love, a passion she is incapable of. Here, then, is a game at which you run all the risk. No! leave her to puppies like Kenealy; they are her natural prey. You must not play such a heart as yours against a marble-taw. It is not an even stake."

David groaned audibly. His first thought was: "Eve says the same of her." His second: "All the world is against her, poor thing."

"Is she to bear the blame of my folly?"

"Why not? She is the cause of your folly. It began with her setting her cap at you."

"No, sir, you do her wrong. She is modesty itself."

"Ta, ta, ta! you are a sailor, green as sea-weed."

"Mr. Bazalgette, as I am a gentleman, she never has encouraged me to love her as I do."

"Your statement, sir, is one which becomes a gentleman — under the circumstances. But I happen to have watched her. It is a thing I have taken the trouble to do for some time past. It was my interest in you that made me curious, and apprehensive — on your account."

"Then if you have watched her you must have seen her avoid me."

"Pooh! pooh! that was drawing the bait; these old stagers can all do that."

"Old stagers!" and David looked as if blasphemy had been uttered. Bazalgette wore a grin of infinite irony.

"Don't be shocked," said he; "of course I mean old in flirtation; no lady is old in years."

"*She* is not, at all events."

"It is agreed. There are legal fictions; and why not social ones?"

"I don't understand you, sir; and, in truth, it is all a puzzle to me. You don't seem angry with me."

"Why, of course not; my poor fellow, I pity you."

"Yet you discourage me, Mr. Bazalgette."

"But not from any selfish motive. I want to spare you the mortification that is in store for you. Remember, I have seen the *end* of about a dozen of you."

"Good heavens! And what is the end of us?"

"The cold shoulder without a day's warning, and another fool set in your place, and the house-door slammed in your face, etc., etc. Oh! with her there is but one step from flirtation to detestation. Not one of her flames is her friend at this moment."

David hung his head, and his heart turned sick; there was a silence of some seconds, during which Bazalgette eyed him keenly. "Sir," said David, at last, "your words go through me like a knife."

"Never mind. It is a friendly surgeon's knife, not an assassin's."

"Yet you say it is only out of regard for me you warn me so against her."

"I repeat it."

"Then, sir, if, by heaven's mercy, you should be mistaken in her character, if, little as I deserve it, I should succeed in winning her regard, I might reckon on your permission, on your kind — support!"

"Hardly," said Mr. Bazalgette, hastily. He then

stared at the honest, earnest face that was turned towards him. "Well," said he, "you modest gentlemen have certainly a marvellous fund of assurance at bottom. No, sir, with the exception of this piece of friendly advice I shall be strictly neutral. In return for it, if you should succeed, be so good as to take her out of the house; that is the only stipulation I venture to propose."

"I should be sure to do that," cried David, lifting his eyes to heaven with rapture; "but I shall not have the chance."

"So I keep telling you, you might as well hope to tempt a statue of the Goddess Flirtation. She infinitely prefers wealth and vanity to anything, even to vice."

"Vice, sir; is that a term for us to apply to a lady like her whom we are all unworthy to approach?" and David turned very red.

"Well, you need not quarrel with me about her, as I don't with you."

"Quarrel with you, dear sir! I hope I feel your kindness, and know my duty better: but, sir, I am agitated, and my heart is troubled: and surely you go beyond reason. She is not old enough to have had so many lovers."

"Humph! she has made good use of her time."

"Even could I believe that she, who seems to me an angel, is a coquette, still she cannot be hard and heartless as you describe her. It is impossible; it does not belong to her years."

"You keep harping on her age, Dodd. Do you know her age? if you do, you have the advantage of me. I have not seen her baptismal register. Have you?"

"No, sir; but I know what she says is her age."

"That is only evidence of what is not her age."

"But there is her face, sir; that is evidence."

"You have never seen her face; it is always got up to deceive the public."

"I have seen it at the dawn, before any of you were up."

"What is that? hallo! the deuce — where?"

"In the garden."

"In the garden? oh! she does not jump off her down bed on to a flower-bed. She had been an hour at work on that face before ever the sun or you got leave to look on it."

"I'll stake my head I can tell her age within a year, Mr. Bazalgette."

"No, you will not, nor within ten years."

"That is soon seen. I call her one-and-twenty."

"One-and-twenty! You are mad! Why she has had a child that would be fifteen now if it had lived."

"Miss Lucy? A child? Fifteen years? What on earth do you mean?"

"What do *you* mean? What has Miss Lucy to do with it? You know very well it is MY WIFE I am warning you against, not that innocent girl."

At this David burst out in his turn. "Your wife! and have you so vile an opinion of me as to think I would eat your bread, and tempt your wife under your roof? Oh, Mr. Bazalgette, is this the esteem you profess for me?"

"Go to the devil!" shouted Bazalgette, in double ire at his own blunder, and at being taken to task by his own Telemachus; he added, but in a very different tone, "You are too good for this world."

The best things we say miss fire in conversation; only second-rate shots hit the mind through the ear. This, we will suppose, is why David derived no amusement or delectation from Mr. Bazalgette's inadvertent but admirable *bon mot:*

"Go to the devil! you are too good for this world."

He merely rose, and said gravely, "Heaven forgive

you your unjust suspicions, and God bless you for your other kindness — good-by."

"Why, where on earth are you going?"

"To stow away my things; to pack up, as they call it."

"Come back! come back! why, what a terrible fellow you are; you make no allowance for metaphors. There, forgive me, and shake hands. Now, sit down. I esteem you more than ever. You have come down from another age, and a much better one than this. Now let us be calm, quiet, sensible, tranquil. Hallo! (starting up in agitation), a sudden light bursts on me. You are in love, and not with my wife; then it is with my ward."

"It is too late to deny it, sir."

"That is far more serious than the other," said Bazalgette very gravely; "the old one would have been sure to cure you of your fancy for her, soon or late — but Lucy! Now, just look at that young buffer's eyes glaring at us like a pair of saucers."

"I am not listening, papa; I haven't heard a word you and Mr. Dodd have said about naughty ladies. I have been such a good boy, minding my puzzle."

"I wish he may not have been minding ours instead," muttered his sire, and rang the bell, and ordered the servant to take away Master Reginald, and bring coffee.

The pair sipped their coffee in dead silence. It was broken at last by David saying sadly and a little bitterly, "I fear, sir, your good opinion of me does not go the length of letting me come into your family."

The merchant seemed during the last five minutes to have undergone some starching process, so changed was his whole manner now; so distant, dignified, and stiff. "Mr. Dodd," said he, "I am in a difficult position. Insincerity is no part of my character. When I say I have a regard for a man, I mean it. But I am the young

lady's guardian, sir: she is a minor though on the verge of her majority, and I cannot advise her to a match, which, in the received sense, would be a very bad one for her. On the other hand, there are so many insuperable obstacles between you and her, that I need not combat my personal sentiments so far as to act against you; it would indeed hardly be just, as I have surprised your secret unfairly, though with no unfair intention. My promise not to act hostilely implies that I shall not reveal this conversation, or its result, to Mrs. Bazalgette; if I did I should launch the deadliest of all enemies, irritated vanity, upon you; for she certainly looks on you as her plaything, not her niece's: and you would instantly be the victim of her spite, and of her influence over Lucy, if she discovered you have the insolence to escape her, and pursue another of her sex. I shall therefore keep silence and neutrality. Meantime, in the character, not of her guardian, but of your friend, I do strongly advise you not to think seriously of her. She will never marry you. She is a good, kind, amiable creature, but still she is a girl of the world; has all its lessons at her finger-ends. Bless your heart, these meek beauties are as ambitious as Lucifer, and this one's ambition is fed by constant admiration, by daily matrimonial discussions with the old stager, and I believe by a good offer every now and then, which she refuses, because she is waiting for a better. Come, now, it only wants one good wrench."

David interrupted him mildly. "Then, sir," said he thoughtfully, "the upshot is, that if she says 'yes,' you won't say 'no.'"

The mature merchant stared.

"If!" said he, and with this short sentence and a sardonic grin, he broke off trying

"To fetter flame with flaxen band."

So nothing more was said or done that evening worth recording.

The next day, being the day of the masquerade, was devoted by the ladies to the making, altering, and trying on of dresses in their bedrooms. This turned the down-stairs rooms so dark and unlovely, that the gentlemen deserted the house one after the other. Kenealy and Talboys rode up to see a cricket-match ten miles off; Hardie drove into the town of ——; and David paced the gravel-walk, in hopes that by keeping near the house he might find Lucy alone, for he was determined to know his fate and end his intolerable suspense.

He had paced the walk about an hour, when fortune seemed to favor his desires. Lucy came out into the garden. David's heart beat violently. To his great annoyance, Mr. Fountain followed her out of the house, and called her. She stopped, and he joined her; and very soon uncle and niece were engaged in a conversation, which seemed so earnest that David withdrew to another part of the garden not to interfere with them.

He waited, and waited, and waited, till they should separate; but no, they walked more and more slowly, and the conversation seemed to deepen in interest. David chafed. If he had known the nature of that conversation he would have writhed with torture as well as fretted with impatience. For there the hand of her he loved was sought in marriage before his eyes, and within a few steps of him. On such threads hangs human life. Had he been at the hall-door instead of in the garden, he might have anticipated Mr. Fountain. As it was, Mr. Fountain stole the march on him.

CHAPTER XV.

To-morrow Lucy had agreed to sail, and in the boat Mr. Talboys was to ask and win her hand. But from the first Mr. Fountain had never a childlike confidence in the scheme, and his understanding kept rebelling against it more and more.

"The man that means to pop, pops," said he; "one needn't go to sea — to pop. Terra firma is poppable on, if it is nothing else. These young fellows are like novices with a gun; the bird must be in a position, or they can't shoot it — with their pop-guns: the young sparks in my day could pop them down flying. We popped out walking, popped out riding, popped dancing, popped psalm-singing. Talboys could not pop on horseback, because the lady's pony fidgeted, not his. Well, it will be so to-morrow. The boat will misbehave, or the wind will be easterly, and I shall be told southerly is the popping wind. The truth is, he is faint-hearted. His sires conquered England, and he is afraid of a young girl. I'll end this nonsense. He shall pop by proxy."

In pursuance of this resolve, seeing his niece pass through the hall with her garden hat on, he called to her that he would get his hat and join her. They took one turn together almost in silence. Fountain was thinking how he should best open the subject, and Lucy waiting after her own fashion; for she saw by the old man's manner he had something to say to her.

"Lucy, my dear, I leave you in a day or two."

"So soon, uncle?"

"And it depends on you whether I am to go away a happy or a disappointed old man."

At these words, to which she was too cautious to reply in words, Lucy wore a puzzled air: but underneath it a keen observer might have noticed her cheek pale a little, a very little, and a quiver of suppressed agitation pass over her like a current of air in summer over a smooth lake.

Receiving no answer, Mr. Fountain went on to remind her that he was her only kinsman; Mrs. Bazalgette being her relation by half-blood only; and told her that, looking on himself as her father, he had always been anxious to see her position in life secured before his own death.

"I have been ambitious for you, my dear," said he; "but not more so than your beauty and accomplishments and your family name entitle us to be. Well, my ambition for you, and my affection for you, are both about to be gratified; at least, it now rests with you to gratify them. Will you be Mrs. Talboys?"

Lucy looked down, and said demurely, "What a question for a third person to put!"

"Should I put it if I had not a right?"

"I don't know."

"You ought to know, Lucy."

"Mr. Talboys has authorized you, dear?"

"He has."

"Then, this is a formal proposal from Mr. Talboys?"

"Of course it is," said the old gentleman fearlessly; for Lucy's manner of putting these questions was colorless, nobody would have guessed what she was at.

She now threw her arm round her uncle's neck, and kissed him, which made him exult prematurely.

"Then, dear uncle," said she lovingly, "you must tell Mr. Talboys, that I thank him for the honor he does me, and that I decline."

"Accept, you mean."

"No, I don't. Ha! ha!"

Her laugh died rapidly away at sight of the effect of her words. Mr. Fountain started, and his face turned red and pale alternately.

"Refuse my friend — refuse Talboys in that way? Thoughtless girl, you don't know what you are doing. His family is all but noble — what am I saying? Noble? Why, half the House of Peers is sprung from the dregs of the people; and got there either by pettifogging in the law courts, or by selling consciences in the Lower House; and of the other half that *are* gentlemen of descent, not two in twenty can show a pedigree like Talboys. And with that name a princely mansion, antiquity stamped on it, stands in its own park, in the middle of its vast estates, with title-deeds in black-letter, girl."

"But, uncle, all this is encumbered" —

"It is false! Who ever told you so? There is not a mortgage on any part of it, only a few trifling copy-holds and peppercorn rents."

"You misunderstand me; I was going to say, it is encumbered with a gentleman for whom I could never feel affection, because he does not inspire me with respect."

"Nonsense! he inspires universal respect."

"It must be by his estates then, not his character. You know, uncle, the world is more apt to ask, What *has* he, than what *is* he?"

"He *is* a polished gentleman."

"But not a well-bred one."

"The best-bred I ever saw."

"Then you never looked in a glass, dear. No, dear uncle, I will tell you. Mr. Talboys has seen the world, has kept good society, is at his ease (a great point), and is perfect in externals. But his good manners are —

what shall I say? coat deep. His politeness is not proof against temptation, however petty. The reason is, it is only a spurious politeness. Real politeness is founded and built on the Golden Rule, however delicate and artificial its superstructure may be. But leaving out of the question the politeness of the heart, he has not in any sense the true art of good-breeding; he has only the common traditions. Put him in a novel situation with no rules and examples to guide him, he would be maladroit as a schoolboy or college-boy. He is just the counterpart of Mr. Dodd in that respect. Poor Mr. Dodd is always shocking one by violating the commonest rules of society; but every now and then he bursts out with a flash of natural courtesy, so bright, so refined, so original, yet so worthy of imitation, that you say to yourself, This is a genius, the genius of good-breeding."

Mr. Fountain chafed with impatience during this tirade, in which he justly suspected an attempt to fritter away a serious discussion.

"Come off your hobby, Lucy," cried he, "and speak to me like a woman, and like my niece. If this is your objection, overcome it for my sake."

"I would, dear," said Lucy, "but it is only one of my objections, and by no means the most serious."

On being invited to come at once to the latter, Lucy hesitated. "Would not that be unamiable on my part? Mr. Talboys has just paid me the highest compliment a gentleman can pay a lady; it is for me to decline him courteously, not abuse him to his friend — and representative."

"No humbug, Lucy, if you please. I am in no humor for it."

"We should all be savages without a *little* humbug."

"I am waiting."

"Then pledge me your word of honor, no word of what

I now say to the disadvantage of poor Mr. Talboys shall ever reach him."

"You may take your oath of that."

"Then he is a detractor, a character I despise."

"Who does he detract from? I never heard him."

"From all his superiors; in other words, from everybody he meets. Did you ever know him fail to sneer at Mr. Hardie?"

"Oh! that is the offence, is it?"

"No, it is the same with others. There, the other day, Mr. Dodd joined us on horseback. He did not dress for the occasion. He had no straps on. He came in a hurry to have our society, not to cut a dash. But there was Mr. Talboys, who can only do this one thing well, and who, thanks to his servant, had straps on, sneering the whole time at Mr. Dodd, who has mastered a dozen far more difficult and more honorable accomplishments than putting on straps, and sitting on horses. But he is always backbiting and sneering. He admires nothing and nobody."

"He has admired you ever since he saw you."

"What, has he never sneered at me?"

"Never, ungrateful girl, never."

"Then that is very humiliating. He takes me for his inferior. His superiors he always sneers at. If he had seen anything good or spirited in me, he could not have helped detracting from me. Is not this a serious reason, that I despise the person who now solicits my love, honor, and obedience? Well, then, there is another, a stronger still, but perhaps you will call it a woman's reason."

"I know — you don't like him; that is, you fancy you don't, and can't."

"No, uncle, it is not that I don't like him. It is that I HATE HIM."

"You hate him?" and Mr. Fountain looked at her to see if it was his niece Lucy who was uttering words so entirely out of character.

"I am but a poor hater. I have but little practice; but with all the power of hating I do possess, I hate that Mr. Talboys. Oh, uncle! how delicious it is to speak one's mind for once. It is a luxury I seldom indulge in. Yes, uncle," said Lucy, clenching her white teeth, "I hate that man, and I did hope his proposal would have come from himself; then there would have been nothing to alloy my quiet satisfaction at mortifying one who is so ready to mortify others. But, no, he has bewitched you; and you take his part, and you look vexed, so all my pleasure is turned to pain."

"It is all self-deception," gasped Fountain, in considerable agitation. "You girls are always deceiving yourselves, you none of you hate any man — unless you love him. He tells me you have encouraged him of late. You had better tell me that is a lie!"

"A lie, uncle! what an expression. Mr. Talboys is a gentleman. He would not tell a falsehood, I presume."

"Aha! it is true then, you have encouraged him."

"A little."

"There, you see; the moment we come from generalities to facts, what a simpleton you are proved to be. Come, now, did you or did you not agree to go in a boat with him?"

"I did, dear."

"That was a pretty strong measure, Lucy."

"Very strong, I think. I can tell you I hesitated."

"Now you see how you have mistaken your own feelings."

Lucy hung her head. "Oh, uncle, you call me simple, and look at you! fancy not seeing; why, I agreed to go — '*dans cette galère.*' It was that Mr. Talboys might declare

himself, and so I might get rid of him forever. I saw that if I could not bring him to the point, he would dangle about me for years, and, perhaps, at last succeed in irritating me to rudeness. But now, of course, I shall stay on shore with my uncle to-morrow. *'Qu'irais-je faire dans cette galère?'* you have done it all for me. Oh, my dear, dear uncle! I am so grateful to you."

She showed symptoms of caressing Mr. Fountain, but he recoiled from her angrily. "Viper! but, no, this is not you. There is a deeper hand than you in all this. This is that Mrs. Bazalgette's doing."

"No, indeed, uncle."

"Give me a proof it is not."

"With pleasure, any proof that is in my power."

"Then promise me not to marry Mr. Hardie."

"My dear uncle, Mr. Hardie has never asked me."

"But he will."

"What right have I to say so? What right have I to constitute Mr. Hardie my admirer? I would not for all the world put it into any gentleman's power to say, 'Why say no, Miss Fountain, before I have asked you to say yes?' Oh!" and with this Lucy put her face into her hands; but they were not large enough to hide the deep blush that suffused her whole face, at the bare idea of being betrayed into an indelicacy of this sort.

"How could he say that? how could he know?" said Mr. Fountain pettishly.

"Uncle, I cannot, I dare not — you and my aunt hate one another; so you might be tempted to tell her, and she would be sure to tell him. Besides, I cannot, my very instinct revolts from it. It would not be modest. I love you, uncle. Let me know your wishes, and have some faith in my affection. But pray do not press me further. Oh, what have I done — to be spoken of with so many gentlemen!"

Lucy was in evident agitation, and the rising blushes glowed more and more round her snowy hands, and between her delicate fingers; and there is something so sacred about the modesty alarmed of an intelligent young woman: it is a feeling which, however fantastical, is so genuine in her, and so manifestly intense beyond all that we can ourselves feel of the kind, that no man, who is not utterly stupid or depraved, can see it without a certain awe. Even Mr. Fountain, who looked on Lucy's distress as transcendent folly with a dash of hypocrisy, could not go on making her cheek burn so. "There! there!" cried he, "don't torment yourself, Lucy. I will spare your fanciful delicacy, though you have no pity on me; on your poor old uncle, whose heart you will break if you decline this match."

At these words, and the old man's change from anger to sadness, Lucy looked up in dismay, and the vivid color died like a retiring wave out of her cheek.

"You look surprised, Lucy. What, do you think this will not be a heart-breaking disappointment to me? If you knew how I have schemed for it — what I have done and endured to bring it about! To quarter the arms of Fontaine and Talboys! I put by the five thousand pounds directly, and as much more of my own, that you should not go into that noble family without a proper settlement. It was the dream of my heart: I could have died contented the next hour. More fool I, to care for anybody but myself. Your selfish people escape these bitter disappointments. Well, it is a lesson. From this hour I will live for myself, and care for nobody, for nobody cares for me."

These words, uttered with great agitation, and, I believe, with perfect sincerity in his own unselfishness and hard fate, were terrible to Lucy. She wreathed her arms suddenly round him.

"Oh, uncle," she cried despairingly, "kill me! send me to heaven! send me to my mother! But don't stab me with such bitter words;" and she trembled with an emotion so much more powerful and convulsing than his, in which temper had a large share, that she once more cowed him.

"There! there!" he muttered, "I don't want to kill you, child, God knows; or to hurt you in any way."

Lucy trembled, and tried to smile. The good-nature, which was the upper crust of this man's character, got the better of him.

"There! there! don't distress yourself so. I know whom I have to thank for all this."

"She has not the power," said Lucy in a faint voice, "to make me ungrateful to you."

Mind is more rapid than lightning. At this moment, in the middle of a sentence, it flashed across Lucy that her aunt had convinced her, sore against her will, there was a strong element of selfishness in Mr. Fountain. "But it is that he deceives himself," thought Lucy; "he would sacrifice my happiness to his hobby, and think he had done it for love of me." Enlightened by this rapid reflection, she did not say to him as one of his own sex would, — "Look in your own heart, and you will see that all this is not love of me, but of your own schemes." Oh, dear, no! that would not have been the woman. She took him round the neck, and, fixing her sapphire eyes lovingly on his, she said, "It is for love of me you set your heart on this great match? You wish to see me well settled in the world, and, above all, happy?"

"Of course it is. I told you so. What other object can I have?"

"Then, if you saw me wretched, and degraded in my own eyes, your heart would bleed for your poor niece too late. Well, uncle, I love you, too, and I save you this

day from remorse. Oh, think what it must be to hate and despise a man, and link yourself, body and soul, to that man for life! Oh, think, and shudder with me, uncle! I have a quick eye. I have seen your lip curl with contempt when that fool has been talking. Ah, you blush! you are too much his superior in everything but fortune, not to despise him at heart. See the thing as it is! Speak to me as you would if my mother stood here beside us, uncle, and to speak to me you must look her in the face. Could you say to me before her, 'I love you: marry a man we both despise'?"

Mr. Fountain made no answer. He was disconcerted. Nothing is so easy to resist as logic: we see it, as a general rule, resisted with great success in public and private every day; but when it comes in good company, a voice of music, an angel face, gentle persuasive caresses, and imploring eyes, it ceases to revolt the understanding. And so, caught in his own trap, foiled, baffled, soothed, caressed, all in one breath, Mr. Fountain hung his head, and could not immediately reply.

Lucy followed up her advantage. "No," cried she, "say to me, 'I love you, Lucy: marry nobody, stay with your uncle, and find your happiness in contributing to his comfort.'"

"What is the use my saying that, when I have got Mother Bazalgette against me, and her shopkeeper?"

"Never mind, uncle, you say it; and time will show whether your influence is small with me, and my affection small for you;" and she looked in his face with glistening eyes.

"Well, then," said he, "I do say it, and I suppose that means I must urge you no more about poor Talboys."

A shower of kisses descended on him that moment. Moral: Lose no time in sealing a good bargain.

"Come, now, Lucy, you must do *me* a favor."

"Oh, thank you! thank you! what is it?"

"Ay! but it is about Talboys, too."

"Never mind," faltered Lucy, "if it is anything short of" — (full stop).

"It is a long way short of that. Look here, Lucy, I must tell you the truth. He intends to ask your hand himself. He confided this to me; but he never authorized me to commit him as I have done. So that this conversation cannot be acted on: it must be a secret between you and me."

"Oh, dear! and I thought I had got rid of him so nicely."

"Don't be alarmed," groaned Fountain, "such matches as this can always be dropped; the difficulty is to bring them on. All I ask of you, then, is not to make mischief between me and my friend, the proudest man in England. If you don't value his friendship, I do. You must not let him know I have got him insulted by a refusal. For instance, you had better go out sailing with him to-morrow, as if nothing had passed. Will your affection for me carry you as far as that?"

The proposal was wormwood to Lucy. So she smiled, and said eagerly, "Is that all? Why, I will do it with pleasure, dear. It is not like being in the same boat with him for life, you know. Can you give me nothing more than that to do for you?"

"No; it does not do to test people's affection too severely. You have shown me that. Go on with your walk, Lucy. I shall go in."

"May I not come with you?"

"No; my head aches with all this. If I don't mind I shall eat no dinner. Agitation and vexation don't agree with me. I have carefully avoided them all my life. I must go in, and lie down for an hour;" and he left her rather abruptly.

She looked after him; her subtle eye noticed directly that he walked a little more feebly than usual. She ascribed this to his disappointment, justly perhaps; for at his age the body has less elastic force to resist a mental blow. The sight of him creeping away disappointed, and leaning heavier than usual on his stick, knocked at her cool but affectionate heart: she began to cry bitterly. When he was quite out of sight, she turned, and paced the gravel slowly and sadly. It was new to her to refuse her uncle anything; still more strange to have to refuse him a serious wish. She was prepared, thoroughly prepared, for the proposal; but not to find the old man's heart so deeply set upon it. A wild impulse came over her to call him back, and sacrifice herself; but the high spirit and intelligence that lay beneath her tenderness and complaisance stood firm. Yet she felt almost guilty, and very, very unhappy, as we call it at her age. She kept sighing, "Poor uncle!" and paced the gravel very slowly, hanging her sweet head, and crying as she went.

At the end of the walk, David Dodd stood suddenly before her. He came flurried, on his own account, but stopped, thunderstruck at her tears. "What is the matter, Miss Lucy?" said he anxiously.

"Oh, nothing, Mr. Dodd!" and they flowed afresh.

"Can I do anything for you, Miss Lucy?"

"No, Mr. Dodd."

"Won't you tell me what is the matter? Are you not friends with me to-day?"

"I was put out by a very foolish circumstance, Mr. Dodd, and it is one with which I shall not trouble you, nor any person of sense. I prefer to retain your sympathy by not revealing the contemptible cause of my babyish — There!" She shook her head proudly, as if tears were to be dispersed like dewdrops. "There!"

she repeated; and at this second effort she smiled radiantly.

"It is like the sun coming out after a shower," cried David rapturously.

"That reminds me I must be *going in*, Mr. Dodd."

"Don't say that, Miss Lucy. What for?"

"To arrange another shower, one of pearls, on a dress I am to wear to-night."

David sighed. "Ah, Miss Lucy, at sight of me you always make for the hall door."

Lucy colored. "Oh! do I? I really was not aware of that. Then, I suppose I am afraid of you. Is that what you would insinuate?"

"No, Miss Lucy, you are not afraid of me; but I sometimes fear" — and he hesitated.

"It must blow very hard that day," said Lucy, with a world of politeness. Her tongue was too quick for him. He found it so, and announced the fact after his fashion.

"I can't tack fast enough to follow you," said he despondently.

"But you are not required to follow me," replied this amiable eel, with hypocritical benignity: "I am going to my aunt's room to do what I told you. I leave you in charge of the quarter-deck." So saying, she walked slowly up the steps, and left David standing sorrowfully on the gravel. At the top step, Miss Lucy turned and inquired gently when he was to sail. He told her the ship was expected to anchor off the fort to-morrow; but she would not sail till she had got all her passengers on board.

"Oh," said Lucy, with an air of reflection. She then leaned in an easy posture against the wall, and whether it was that she relented a little, or that, having secured her retreat, she was now indifferent to flight, certain it is that she did, after her own fashion, what many a

daughter of Eve has done before her, and many a duchess and many a dairymaid will do after La Fountain and I are gone from earth. A minute ago it had been: — "She must go directly;" the more opposition to her departure, the more inexorable the necessity for her going; opposition withdrawn, and the door open, she stayed no end.

Full twenty minutes did that young lady stand there unsolicited, and chat with David Dodd in the kindest, sweetest, most amicable way imaginable.

She little knew she had an auditor, a female auditor, keen as a lynx.

All this day Reginald George Bazalgette, Esq., might have been defined "a pest in search of a playmate." Tom had got a holiday. Lucy only came out of her workshop to be seized by Mr. Fountain. David, who was waiting in the garden for Lucy, begged Reginald to excuse him for once. The young gentleman had recourse as a *pis aller* to his mamma. He invaded her bedroom, and besought her piteously to play at battledoor. That lady, sighing deeply at being taken from her dress, consented. Her soul not being in it, she played very badly. Her cub did not fail to tell her so. "Why, I can keep up a hundred with Mr. Dodd," said he.

"Oh! we all know Mr. Dodd is perfection," said the lady with a sneer. She was piqued with David. He had gone and left her in a brutal way, to make his apologies to Lucy.

"No! he is not," said Reginald. "I have found him out. He is as unjust as the rest of you."

"Dear me! and pray what has he done?"

"I will tell you, mamma, if you will promise not to tell papa; because he told me not to listen, and I didn't listen, mamma, because, you know, a gentleman always keeps his word; but they talked so loud, the words would

come into my ear, I could not keep them out; mamma, are there any naughty ladies here?"

"No, my dear."

"Then, what did papa mean warning Mr. Dodd against one?"

Mrs. Bazalgette began to listen as he wished.

"Oh! he called her all the names. He said she was a statute of flirtation."

"Who? Lucy?"

"Lucy? no! the naughty lady, the one that had twelve husbands. He kept warning him, and warning him, and then Mr. Dodd and papa they began to quarrel almost, because Mr. Dodd said the naughty lady was quite young, and papa said she was ever so old. Mr. Dodd said she was twenty-one. But papa told him she must be more than that, because she had a child that would be fifteen years old; only it died. How old would little sister Emily be if she was alive, mamma; la, mamma, how pretty you are; you have got red cheeks like Lucy; redder, oh! ever so much redder, and in general they are so pale before dinner. Let me kiss you, mamma! I do love the ladies, when their cheeks are red."

"There! there; now go on, dear; tell me some more."

"It is very interesting, isn't it, dear mamma?"

"It is amusing at all events."

"No, it is not amusing, at least what came after isn't: it is wicked, it is unjust, it is abominable."

"Tell me, dear."

"It turned out it wasn't the naughty lady Mr. Dodd was in love for, and who do you think he is in love of?"

"I have not an idea."

"My Lucy!"

"Nonsense, child."

"No, no, mamma! it is not. He owned it plump."

"Are you quite sure, love?"

"Upon my honor."

"What did they say next?"

"Oh! next papa began to talk his fine words that I don't know what the meaning of them means one bit. But Mr. Dodd, he could make them out, I suppose, for he said, 'so then the upshot is;' there now, what is upshot? I don't know. How stupid grown-up people are; they keep using words that one doesn't know the meaning of."

"Never mind, love! tell me. What came *after* upshot?" said Mrs. Bazalgette, soothingly, with great apparent calmness, and flashing eye.

"How kind you are to-day, mamma! That is twice you have called me love, and three times dear; only think. I should love you if you were always so kind — and your cheeks as red as they are now."

"Never mind my cheeks. What did Mr. Dodd say? Try and remember, come, 'the upshot was — '"

"The upshot was — what was the upshot? I forget. No! I remember — the upshot was — if Lucy said 'yes,' papa would not say 'no,' that meant to marry him. Now didn't you promise me her ever so long ago; the day you and I agreed if I went a whole day without being naughty once, I should have her for ever and ever — and I did go."

"Go to Lucy's room, and tell her to come to me," said Mrs. Bazalgette, in a stern, thoughtful voice, which startled poor Reginald coming so soon after the *calinerie*. However, he told her it was no use his going to Lucy's room, for she was out in the garden; he had seen her there walking with Mr. Fountain. Reginald then ran to the window which commanded the garden, to look for Lucy. He had scarcely reached it when he began to squeak wildly. "Come here! come here! come here!" Mrs. Bazalgette was at the window in a moment, and lo!

at the end of the garden, walking slowly side by side, were Lucy and Mr. Dodd.

Ridiculous as it may appear, a pang of jealousy shot through the married flirt's heart, that made her almost feel sick. This was followed at the interval of half a second by as pretty a little flame of hatred as ever the *spretæ injuria formæ* lighted up in a coquette's heart. Doubt drove in its smaller sting besides, and at sight of the couple she resolved to have better evidence than Reginald's, especially as to Lucy's sentiments. The plan she hit upon was effective, but vulgar, and must not be witnessed by a boy of inconvenient memory, and mis-timed fluency; she got rid of him with high-principled dexterity.

"Reginald," said she, sadly, "you are a naughty boy, a disobedient boy, to listen when your papa told you not, and to tell me a pack of falsehoods. I must either tell your papa, or I must punish you myself; I prefer to do it myself, he would whip you so;" with this she suddenly opened her dressing-room door, and pushed the terrible infant in, and locked the door. She then told him through the keyhole he had better cease yelling, because if he kept quiet his punishment would only last half an hour, and she flew down-stairs. There was a large hot-house with two doors, one of which came very near to the house-door that opened into the garden. Mrs. Bazalgette entered the hot-house at the other end, and hidden by the exotic trees and flowers, made rapidly for the door Lucy and David must pass. She found it wide open. She half shut it, and slipped behind it, listening like a hare, and spying like a hawk, through the hinges. And, strange as it may appear, she had an idea she would make a discovery. As the finished sportsman watches a narrow ride in the wood, not despairing, by a snap-shot, to bag his hare as she crosses it though seen

but for a moment, so the Bazalgette felt sure, that, as the couple passed her ambush, something either in the two sentences they would have here to utter, or, more probably, in their tones and general manner, would reveal to one of her experience on what footing they were.

A shrewd calculation! But things will be things: they take such turns, I might without exaggeration say twists, that calculation is puzzled and baffled, and prophecy dissolved into pitch-and-toss. This thing turned just as not expected. Primo, instead of getting only a snap-shot, Mrs. Bazalgette heard every word of a long conversation; and, secundo, when she had heard it she could not tell for certain on what footing the lady and gentleman were. At first, from their familiarity she inclined to think they were lovers; but the more she listened, the more doubtful this seemed. Lucy was the chief speaker, and what she said showed an undisguised interest in her companion; but the subject accounted in great measure for that; she was talking of his approaching voyage, of the dangers and hardships of his profession, and of his return two years hence, his chances of promotion, etc. But here was no proof positive of love. They were acquaintances of some standing; then Lucy's manner struck her as rather amicable than amorous. She was calm, kind, self-possessed, and almost voluble. As for David, he only got in a word here and there. When he did, there was something so different in his voice from anything he had ever bestowed on *her*, that she hated him, and longed to stick scissors into him from the rear, unseen. At last, Lucy suddenly recollected or seemed to recollect she was busy, and retired hastily; so hastily that David saw too late his opportunity lost. But the music of her voice had so charmed him, that he did not like to interrupt it even to speak of that which was nearest his heart. David sighed deeply, standing there alone.

Mrs. Bazalgette clenched her little fists, and looked round for the means of vengeance. David went down on his knees. La Bazalgette glared through the crack, and wondered what on earth he was at now. Oh! he was praying. "He loves her. He is eccentricity itself; so he is praying for her, and on *my* door-steps" (the householder wounded as well as the flirt). It was lucky she had not "a thunderbolt in her eye" (Shakespeare), or a celestial messenger of the wrong sort would have descended on the devout mariner. It was more than Mrs. Bazalgette could bear: she had now and then, not often, unladylike impulses. One of them had set her crouching behind the door of an out-house and listening through a crack; and now she had another, an irresistible one; it was, to take that empty flower-pot, fling it as hard as ever she could down on the devotee, then slam the door quick, fly out at the other door, and leave her faithless swain in the agony of knowing himself detected and exposed by some unknown and undiscoverable enemy.

For a vengeance extemporized in less than half a second, this was very respectable. Well, she clawed the flower-pot noiselessly, put her other hand on the door, cast a hasty glance at the means of retreat, and — things took another twist. She heard the rustle of a coming gown, and drew back again, and out came Lucy, and nearly ran over David, who was not on his knees in point of fact, but down on his nose, prostrate Orientally. The truth is, Lucy, amongst her other qualities good and bad, was a born housewife, and solicitously careful of certain odds and ends called property. She found she had dropped one of her gloves in the garden, and she came back in a state of disproportionate uneasiness to find it, and nearly ran over David Dodd.

"What *are* you doing, Mr. Dodd?"

David rose from his Oriental position, and being a young man whose impulse always was to tell the simple truth, replied, "I was kissing the place where you stood so long."

He did not feel he had done anything extraordinary, so he gave her this information composedly; but her face was scarlet in an instant; and he, seeing that, began to blush too. For once Lucy's tact was baffled: she did not know what on earth to say, and she stood blushing like a girl of fifteen. Then she tried to turn it off.

"Mr. Dodd, how can you be so ridiculous?" said she, affecting humorous disdain.

But David was not to be put down now: he was launched.

"I am not ridiculous for loving and worshipping you, for you are worthy of even more love than any human heart can hold."

"Oh, hush! Mr. Dodd! I must not hear this."

"Miss Lucy, I can't keep it any longer: you must, you shall hear me. You can despise my love if you will, but you *shall* know it before you reject it."

"Mr. Dodd, you have every right to be heard. But let me persuade you not to insist: oh! why did I come back!"

"The first moment I saw you, Miss Lucy, it was a new life to me. I never looked twice at any girl before. It is not your beauty only; oh, no! it is your goodness, goodness such as I never thought was to be found on earth. Don't turn your head from me! I know my defects: could I look on you, and not see them? my manners are blunt and rude, oh! how different from yours! But you could soon make me a fine gentleman, I love you so. And I am only the first mate of an Indiaman; but I should be a captain next voyage, Miss Lucy, and a sailor like me he has no expenses; all he

has is his wife's; the first lady in the land will not be petted as you will, if you will look kindly on me. Listen to me, trying to tempt her. No, Miss Lucy, I have nothing to offer you worth your acceptance, only my love. No man ever loved woman as I love you; it is not love, it is worship, it is adoration. Ah! she is going to speak to me at last!"

Lucy presented at this moment a strange contrast of calmness and agitation. Her bosom heaved quickly, and she was pale, but her voice was calm, and though gentle, decided.

"I know you love me, Mr. Dodd, and I feared this. I have tried to save you the mortification of being declined by one who, in many things, is your inferior. I have even been rude and unkind to you. Forgive me for it. I meant it kindly. I regret it now. Mr. Dodd, I thank you for the honor you do me; but I cannot accept your love." There was a pause; but David's tongue seemed glued to the roof of his mouth. He was not surprised, yet he was stupefied when the blow came.

At last he gasped out, "You love some other man?"

Lucy was silent.

"Answer me, for pity's sake; give me something to help me."

"You have no right to ask me such a question, but — I have no attachment, Mr. Dodd."

"Ah! then one word more: is it because you cannot love me, or because I am poor, and only first mate of an Indiaman?"

"*That* I will not answer; you have no right to question a lady, why she — Stay! you wish to despise me. Well, why not? if that will cure you of this unfortunate — think what you please of me, Mr. Dodd," murmured Lucy, sadly.

"Ah! you know I can't!" cried David, despairingly.

"I know you esteem me more than I deserve: well, I esteem you, Mr. Dodd. Why, then, can we not be friends? You have only to promise me you will never return to this subject — come!"

"Me promise not to love you! what is the use? me be your friend, and nothing more, and stand looking on at the heaven that is to be another's and never to be mine? It is my turn to decline. Never! Betrothed lovers, or strangers, but nothing between. It would drive me mad! Away from you, and out of sight of your sweet face, I may make shift to live, and go through my duty somehow, for my mother's and sister's sake."

"You are wiser than I was, Mr. Dodd. Yes, we must part."

"Of course we must. I have got my answer, and a kinder one than I deserve; and now what is the polite thing for me to do, I wonder?" David said this with terrible bitterness.

"You frighten me," sighed Lucy.

"Don't you be frightened, sweet angel; there, I have been used to obey orders all my life, and I am like a ship tossed in the breakers, and you are calm, calm as death. Give me my orders, for God's sake."

"It is not for me to command you, Mr. Dodd. I have forfeited that right. But listen to her who still asks to be your friend, and she will tell you what will be best for you, and kindest and most generous to her."

"Tell me about that last: the other is a waste of words."

"I will, then: your sister is somewhere in the neighborhood."

"She is at ——. How did you know?"

"I saw her on your arm. I am glad she is so near;

oh! so glad! Bid my uncle and aunt good-by: make some excuse. Go to your sister at once. *She* loves you. She is better than I am, if you will but see us as we really are. Go to her at once," faltered Lucy, who disliked Eve, and Eve her.

"I will! I will! I have thought too little of my own flesh and blood. Shall I go now?"

"Yes," murmured Lucy, softly, trying to disarm the fatal word. "Forget me!—and—forgive me!" and, with this last word scarce audible, she averted her face, and held out her hand with angelic dignity, modesty, and pity.

The kind words and the gentle action brought down the stout heart that had looked death in the face so often without flinching. "Forgive you, sweet angel!" he cried; "I pray God to bless you, and to make you as happy as I am desolate for your sake. Oh! you show me more and more what I lose this day. God bless you! God bless"— And David's heart filled to choking, and he burst out sobbing despairingly, and the hot tears ran suddenly from his eyes over her hand, as he kissed and kissed it. Then with an almost savage feeling of shame (for these were not eyes that were wont to weep), he uttered one cry of despair and ran away, leaving her pale and panting heavily.

She looked piteously at her hand, wet with a hero's tears, and, for the second time to-day, her own began to gush. She felt a need of being alone. She wanted to think on what she had done. She would hide in the garden. She ran down the steps; lo! there was Mr. Hardie coming up the gravel walk. She uttered a little cry of impatience, and dashed impetuously into the hothouse, driving the half-open door before her with her person, as well as her arm.

A scream of terror and pain issued from behind it,

with a crash of pottery. Lucy wheeled round at the sound, and there was her aunt, flattened against the flower-frame. Lucy stood transfixed.

But soon her look of surprise gave way to a frown, ay! and a sombre one.

CHAPTER XVI.

The ready-minded lady extricated herself from the pots, and wriggled out of the moral situation. "I was a listener, dear, an unwilling listener; but now I do not regret it. How nobly you behaved;" and with this she came at her with open arms, crying, "My own dear niece."

Her own dear niece recoiled with a shiver, and put up both her hands as a shield.

"Oh, don't touch me, please. I never heard of a lady listening!" She then turned her back on her aunt in a somewhat uncourtier-like manner, and darted out of the place, every fibre of her frame strung up tight with excitement. She felt she was not the calm dispassionate being of yesterday, and hurried to her own room and locked herself in.

Mrs. Bazalgette remained behind in a state of bitter mortification, and breathing fury on her small scale. But what could she do? David would be out of her reach in a few minutes, and Lucy was scarce vulnerable.

In the absence of any definite spite, she thought she could not go wrong in thwarting whatever Lucy wished, and her wish had been that David should go. Besides, if she kept him in the house, who knows? she might pique him with Lucy, and even yet turn him her way. So she lay in wait for him in the hall: he soon appeared with his bag in his hand. She inquired, with great simplicity, where he was going? he told her he was going away. She remonstrated, first tenderly, then

almost angrily. "We all counted on you to play the violin. We can't dance to the piano alone."

"I am very sorry, but I have got my orders."

Then this subtle lady said carelessly, "Lucy will be *au désespoir*. She will get no dancing. She said to me just now, 'Aunt, do try and persuade Mr. Dodd to stay over the ball. We shall miss him so.'"

"When did she say that?"

"Just this minute. Standing at the door there."

"Very well, then I'll stay over the ball." And without a word more he carried his bag and violin-case up to his room again. Oh! how La Bazalgette hated him. She now resigned all hope of flirting with him, and promised herself the pleasure of watching him and Lucy together. One would be wretched, and the other must be uncomfortable.

Lucy did not come down to dinner; she was lying down with a headache. She even sent a message to Mrs. Bazelgette, to know whether she could be dispensed with at the ball. Answer, "Impossible." At half-past eight she got up, put on her costume, took it off again, and dressed in white watered silk: her assumption of a character was confined to wearing a little crown, rising to a peak in front. Many of the guests had arrived when she glided into the room, looking every inch a queen. David was dazzled at her, and awe-struck at her beauty and mien, and at his own presumption.

Her eye fell on him. She gave a little start, but passed on without a word. The carpets had been taken up, and the dancing began.

Mrs. Bazalgette arranged that Lucy and David should play piano-forte and violin until some lady could be found to take her part.

I incline to think Mrs. Bazalgette, spiteful as mortified vanity is apt to be, did not know the depth of anguish her subtle vengeance inflicted on David Dodd.

He was pale and stern with the bitter struggle for composure. He ground his teeth, fixed his eyes on the music-book, and ploughed the merry tunes as the fainting ox ploughs the furrow. He dared not look at Lucy, nor did he speak to her more than was necessary for what they were doing; nor she to him. She was vexed with him for subjecting himself and her to unnecessary pain, and in the eye of society, her divinity.

Another unhappy one was Mr. Fountain. He sat disconsolate on a seat all alone. Mrs. Bazalgette fluttered about like a butterfly, and sparkled like a Chinese firework.

Two young ladies, sisters, went to the piano, to give Miss Fountain an opportunity of dancing. She danced quadrilles with four or five gentlemen, including her special admirers. She declined to waltz; "I have a little headache, nothing to speak of."

She then sat down to the piano again. "I can play alone, Mr. Dodd; you have not danced at all."

"I am not in the humor."

"Very well."

This time they played some of the tunes they had rehearsed together that happy evening, and David's lip quivered.

Lucy eyed him unobserved.

"Was this wise? to subject yourself to this?"

"I must obey orders, whatever it costs me, 'ri tum ti tum ti tum ti tum.'"

"Who ordered you to neglect my advice? 'ri tum tum tum.'"

"*You* did, 'ri tum ti tum tiddy iddy.'"

A look of silent disdain; "ri tum, ti tum, tiddy iddy." (Ah, *perdona* for relating things as they happen, and not as your grand writers pretend they happen.)

Between the quadrilles, she asked an explanation.

"Your aunt met me with my bag in my hand, and told me you wanted me to play to the company."

When he said this, David heard a sound like the click of a trigger. He looked up, it was Lucy clenching her teeth convulsively. But time was up: the woman of the world must go on like the prizefighter: the couples were waiting.

"Ri tum ti tum ti tum ti tum tiddy iddy." For all that she did not finish the tune. In the middle of it, she said to David; "'ri tum ti tum,' can you get through this without me? 'ri tum.'"

"If I can get through life without you, I can surely get through this twaddle; 'ri tum ti tum ti tum ti tum tiddy iddy.'"

Lucy started from her seat, leaving David ploughing solo. She started from her seat and stood a moment, looking like an angel stung by vipers. Her eye went all round the room in one moment in search of some one to blast on a small scale. It surprised Mr. Hardie and Mrs. Bazalgette, sitting together, and casting ironical glances piano-wards: "So she has been betraying to Mr. Hardie the secret she gained by listening," thought Lucy. The pair, she thought, were probably enjoying David's mortification, his misery.

Lucy Fountain walked very slowly down the room to this couple. She looked them long and full in the face, with that confronting yet overlooking glance, which women of the world can command on great occasions. It fell, and pressed on them both like lead, they could not have told you why. They looked at one another ruefully when she had passed them, and then their eyes followed her: they saw her walk straight up to her uncle, and sit down by him and take his hand. They exchanged another uneasy look.

"Uncle," said Lucy, speaking very quickly, "you are

unhappy. I am the cause; I am come to say that I promise you not to marry any one my aunt shall propose to me."

"My dear girl, then you won't marry that shopkeeper there."

"What need of names? still less of epithets. I will marry no friend of hers."

"Ah! now you are my brother's daughter again."

"No! I love you no better than I did this morning; but she" — (full stop).

Celestial happiness diffused itself over old Fountain's face, and Lucy glided back to the piano just as the quadrille ended. "Give me your arm, Mr. Dodd," said she authoritatively. She took his arm, and made the tour of the room leaning on him, and chatting gayly.

She introduced him to the best people, and contrived to appear to the whole room joyous and flattered, leaning on David's arm.

The young fellows envied him so.

Every now and then David felt her noble white arm twitch convulsively, and her fingers pinch the cloth of his sleeve, where it was loose.

She guided him to the supper-room. It was empty. "Oblige me with a glass of water."

He gave it her. She drank it.

"Mr. Dodd, the advice I gave you with my own lips I never retracted. My aunt imposed upon you. It was done to mortify you. It has failed, as you may have observed. My head aches so: it is intolerable. When they ask you where I am, say I am unwell, and have retired to my room. I shall not be at breakfast. Directly after breakfast go to your sister, and tell her your friend Lucy declined you, though she knows your value, and would not let you be mortified by nullities and heartless fools. Good-by, Mr. Dodd, try and believe

that none of us you leave in this house are worth remembering, far less regretting."

She vanished haughtily; David crept back to the ball-room: it seemed dark by comparison, now she who lent it lustre was gone. He stayed a few minutes, then heavy-hearted to bed.

The next morning he shook hands with Mr. Bazalgette, the only one who was up; kissed the terrible infant, who, suddenly remembering his many virtues, formally forgave him his one piece of injustice; and as he came, so he went away, his bag on his shoulder, and his violin-case in his hand. He went to cousin Mary, and asked for Eve. Cousin Mary's face turned red: "You will find her at No. 80 in this street. She is gone into lodgings." The fact is, the cousins had had a tiff; and Eve had left the house that moment.

Oh, my heroines! when will you learn to be faultless!

David came into her apartment; he smiled sweetly, but sadly. "Well, it is all over. I have offered, and been declined."

At seeing him so quiet and resigned, Eve burst out crying.

"Don't you cry, dear," said David. "It is best so. It is almost a relief. Anything before the suspense I was enduring."

Then Eve, recovering her spirits by the help of anger, began to abuse Lucy for a cold-hearted, deceitful girl; but David stopped her sternly.

"Not a word against her, not a word. I should hate any one that miscalled her. She speaks well of you, Eve, why need you speak ill of her? She and I parted friends, and friends let us be. There is no hate can lie alongside love in a true heart. No! let nobody speak of her at all to me. I shan't. My thoughts they are my own. 'Go to your sister,' said she, and here I am; and

I beg your pardon, Eve, for neglecting you as I have of late."

"Oh, never mind *that*, David, *our* affection will outlast this folly many a long year."

"Please God! Your hand in mine, Eve, my lass, and let us talk of ourselves and mother: the time is short."

They sat hand in hand, and never mentioned Lucy's name again; and, strange to say, it was David who consoled Eve. For, now the battle was lost, her spirit seemed to have all deserted her, and she kept bursting out crying every now and then irrelevantly.

It was three in the afternoon; David was sitting by the window, and Eve packing his chest in the same room, not to be out of his sight a minute, when suddenly he started up, and cried, "There she is," and an instinctive, unreasonable joy illumined his face; the next moment his countenance fell.

The carriage passed down the street.

"I remember now," muttered David, "I heard she was to go sailing; and Mr. Talboys was to be skipper of the boat. Ah! well."

"Well, let them sail, David. It is not your business."

"That it is not, Eve; nobody's less than mine."

"Eve, there is plenty of wind blowing up from the nor'-east."

"Is there? I am afraid that will bring your ship down quick."

"Yes; but it is not that. I am afraid that lubber won't think of looking to windward."

"Nonsense about the wind! it is a beautiful day. Come, David, it is no use fighting against nature; put on your hat, then, and run down to the beach, and see the last of her; only, for my sake, don't let the others see you to jeer you."

"No, no!"

"And mind and be back to dinner at four: I have got a nice roast fowl for you."

"Ay! ay!"

A little before four o'clock, a sailor brought a note from David, written hastily in pencil. It was sent up to Eve. She read it, and clasped her hands vehemently.

"Oh, David, David! She was born to be your destruction!"

CHAPTER XVII.

Mr. Fountain, Miss Fountain, and Mr. Talboys started to go on the boating-expedition. As they were getting into the boat, Mr. Fountain felt a little ill, and begged to be excused. Mr. Talboys offered to return with him. He declined. "Have your little sail: I will wait at the inn for you."

This pantomime had, I blush to say, been arranged beforehand. Miss Fountain, we may be sure, saw through it, but she gave no sign. A lofty impassibility marked her demeanor, and she let them do just what they liked with her.

The boat was launched, the foresail set, and Fountain remained on shore, in anything but a calm and happy state.

But friendships like these are not free from dross; and I must confess that among the feelings which crossed his mind, was a hope that Talboys would pop, and be refused, as *he* had been. Why should he, Fountain, monopolize defeat? We should share all things with a friend.

Meantime, by one of those caprices to which her sex are said to be peculiarly subject, Lucy seemed to have given up all intention of carrying out her plan for getting rid of Mr. Talboys. Instead of leading him on to his fate, she interposed a subtle but almost impassable barrier between him and destruction; her manner and deportment were of a nature to freeze declarations of love upon the human lip. She leaned back languidly and imperially on the luxurious cushions, and listlessly

eyed the sky and the water, and ignored with perfect impartiality all the living creatures in the boat.

Mr. Talboys endeavored in vain to draw her out of this languid mood. He selected an interesting subject of conversation to — himself: he told her of his feats, yachting in the Mediterranean; he did not tell her, though, that his yacht was sailed by the master, and not by him, her proprietor. In reply to all this Lucy dropped out languid monosyllables.

At last Talboys got piqued, and clapped on sail.

There had not been a breath of air until half an hour before they started; but now a stiff breeze had sprung up. So they had smooth water, and yet plenty of wind, and the boat cut swiftly through the bubbling water.

"She walks well," said the yachtsman.

Lucy smiled a gracious, though still rather too queenly, assent. I think the motion was pleasing her. Lively motion is very agreeable to her sex.

"This is a very fast boat," said Mr. Talboys. "I should like to try her speed. What do you say, Miss Fountain?"

"With all my heart," said Lucy, in a tone that expressed utter indifference.

"Here is this lateen-rigged boat creeping down on our quarter: we will stand east till she runs down to us, and then we will run by her and challenge her." Accordingly Talboys stood east.

But he did not get his race; for, somewhat to his surprise, the lateen-rigged boat, instead of holding her course, which was about south-south-west, bore up directly and stood east, keeping about half a mile to windward of Talboys.

This puzzled Talboys. "They are afraid to try it," said he. "If they are afraid of us sailing on a wind, they would not have much chance with us in beating to

windward: a lugger can lie two points nearer the wind than a schooner."

All this science was lost on Lucy. She lay back languid and listless.

Mr. Talboys' crew consisted of a man and a boy. He steered the boat himself. He ordered them to go about and sail due west. It was no sooner done than, lo and behold! the schooner came about and sailed west, keeping always half a mile to windward.

"That boat is following us, Miss Fountain."

"What for?" inquired she; "is it my uncle coming after us?"

"No; I see no one aboard but a couple of fishermen."

"They are not fishermen," put in the boy, "they are sailors; coast-guard men, likely."

"Besides," said Mr. Talboys, "your uncle would run down to us at once; but these keep waiting on us and dogging us. Confound their impudence!"

"It is all fancy," said Lucy; "run away as fast as you can that way" (and she pointed down wind), "and you will see nobody will take the trouble to run after us."

"Hoist the mainsail," cried Talboys.

They had hitherto been sailing under the foresail only. In another minute they were running furiously before the wind with both sails set. The boat yawed, and Lucy began to be nervous. *Per contra* the increased rapidity of motion excited her agreeably. The lateen-schooner, sailing under her foresail only, luffed directly and stood on in the lugger's wake. Lucy's cheek burned, but she said nothing.

"There," cried Talboys, "now do you believe me? I think we gain on her, though."

"We are going three knots to her two, sir," said the old man; "but it is by her good-will; that is the fastest

boat in the town, sailing on a wind. At beating to windward we could tackle her easy enough, but not at running free. Ah! there goes her mainsail up. I thought she would not be long before she gave us that."

"Oh, how beautiful!" cried Lucy; "it is like a falcon or an eagle sailing down upon us: it seems all wings. Why don't we spread wings too and fly away?"

"You see, miss," explained the boatman, "that schooner works her sails different from us, going down wind; she can carry her mainsel on one side of the craft and her foresel on the other. By that she keeps on an even keel, and what is more, her mainsel does not take the wind out of her foresel. Bless you! that little schooner would run past the fastest frigate in the king's service with the wind dead aft as we have got it now: she is coming up with us hand-over-head, and as stiff on her keel as a rock. This is *her* point of sailing; beating to windward is ourn. Why, if they ain't reefing the foresel to make the race even; and there go three reefs into her mainsel too." The old boatman scratched his head.

"Who is aboard her, Dick? they are strangers to me."

By taking in so many reefs the lateen had lowered her rate of sailing, and she now followed in their wake, keeping a quarter of a mile to windward.

Talboys lost all patience. "Who is it, I wonder, that has the insolence to dog us so?" and he looked keenly at Miss Fountain.

She did not think herself bound to reply, and gazed with a superior air of indifference on the sky and the water.

"I will soon know," said Talboys.

"What does it matter?" inquired Lucy. "Probably somebody who is wasting his time, as we are."

"The road we are on is as free to him as to us," sug-

gested the old boatman, with a fine sense of natural justice. He added, "But if you will take my advice, sir, you will shorten sail, and put her about for home. It is blowing half a gale of wind, and the sea will be getting up, and that won't be agreeable for the young lady."

"Gale of wind? nonsense," said Talboys; "it is a fine breeze."

"Oh, thank you, sir," said Lucy to the old man; "I love the sea, but I should not like to be out in a storm."

The old boatman grinned. "'Storm' is a word that an old salt reserves for one of those hurricanes that blow turnips flat, and teeth down your throat; you can turn round and lean your back against it like a post; and a carrion-crow can't make for the next parish, but he gets fanned into another county, — that is a storm."

The old boatman went forward grinning, and he and his boy lowered the mainsail. Then Talboys at the helm brought the boat's head round to the wind. She came down to her bearings directly, which is as much as to say, that to Lucy she seemed to be upsetting. Lucy gave a little scream. The sail, too, made a report like the crack of a pistol.

"Oh! what is that?" cried Lucy.

"Wind, mūm," replied the boatman, composedly.

"What is that purple line on the water, sir, out there, a long way beyond the other boat?"

"Wind, mūm."

"It seems to move; it is coming this way."

"Ay, mūm; *that* is a thing that always makes to leeward," said the old fellow, grinning. "I'll take in a couple of reefs before it comes to us."

Meantime, the moment the lugger lowered her mainsail, the schooner, divining, as it appeared, her intention,

did the same, and luffed immediately, and was on the new tack first of the two.

"Ay, my lass," said the old boatman, "you are smartly handled, no doubt, but your square stern and your try-han-glar sail they will take you to leeward of us pretty soon, do what you can."

The event seemed to justify this assertion; the little lugger was on her best point of sailing, and in about ten minutes the distance between the two boats was slightly but sensibly diminished. The lateen, no doubt, observed this, for she began to play the game of short tacks, and hoisted her mainsail, and carried on till she seemed to sail on her beam-ends, to make up, as far as possible, by speed and smartness, for what she lost by rig in beating to windward.

"They go about quicker than we do," said Talboys.

"Of course they do, they have not got to dip their sail, as we have, every time we tack."

This was the true solution, but Mr. Talboys did not accept it.

"We are not so smart as we ought to be: now you go to the helm, and I and the boy will dip the lug."

The old boatman took the helm as requested, and gave the word of command to Mr. Talboys. "Stand *by* the fore-tack."

"Yes," said Talboys, "here I am."

"Let *go* the fore-tack;" and contemporaneously with the order, he brought the boat's head round.

Now this operation is always a nice one, particularly in these small luggers, where the lug has to be dipped, that is to say, lowered and raised again on the opposite side of the mast. For the lug should not be lowered a moment too soon, or the boat, losing her way, would not come round; nor a moment too late, lest the sail, owing to the new position the boat is taking under the influence

of the rudder, should receive the wind whilst between the wind and the mast, and so the craft be taken aback: nothing can well happen more disastrous.

Mr. Talboys, though not the accomplished sailor he thought himself, knew this as well as anybody, and with the boy's help he lowered the sail at the right moment; but, getting his head awkwardly in the way, the yard in coming down hit him on the nose, and nearly knocked him onto his beam-ends. It would have been better if it had done so quite, instead of bounding off his nose on to his shoulder and there resting, — for, as it was, the descent of the sail being thus arrested half way, at the critical moment, and the boat's head coming round all the same, a gust of wind caught the sail and wrapped it tight round the mast to windward. The boy uttered a cry of terror so significant that Lucy trembled all over, and by an uncontrollable impulse leaned despairingly back and waved her white handkerchief towards the antagonist boat. The old boatman, with an oath, darted forward with an agility he could not have shown ashore.

The effect on the craft was alarming. If the whole sail had been thus taken aback, she would have gone down like lead; for, as it was, she was at once driven on her side, and at the same time driven back by the stern. The whole sea seemed to rise an inch above her gunwale; the water poured into her at every drive the gusts of wind gave her, and the only wonder seemed why the waves did not run clean over her.

In vain the old boatman, cursing and swearing, tugged at the canvas to free it from the mast. It was wrapped round it like Deianira's shirt, and with as fatal an effect; the boat was filling, and as this brought her lower in the water, and robbed her of much of her buoyancy, and as the fatal cause continued immovable, her destruction was certain.

Every cheek was blanched with fear but Lucy's, and hers were red as fire ever since she waved her handkerchief; so powerful is modesty with her sex, — a true virgin can blush in death's very grasp.

In the midst of this agitation and terror suddenly the boat was hailed: they all looked up, and there was the lateen coming tearing down on them under all her canvas, both her broad sails spread out to the full, one on each side: she seemed all monstrous wing. The lugger being now nearly head to wind, she came flying down on her weather-bow as if to run past her, then, lowering her foresail, made a broad sweep and brought up suddenly between the lugger and the wind. As her foresail fell, a sailor bounded over it on to the forecastle, and stood there with one foot on the gunwale, active as Mercury, eye glowing, and a rope in his hand.

"Stand by to lower your mast," roared this sailor, in a voice of thunder to the boatman of the lugger; and the moment the schooner came up into the wind athwart the lugger's bows, he bounded over ten feet of water into her, and with a turn of the hand made the rope fast to her thwart, then hauling upon it, brought the lugger alongside with her head literally under the schooner's wing.

He and the old boatman then instantly unstepped the mast, and laid it down in the boat, sail and all. It was not his great strength that enabled him to do this (a dozen of him could not have done this while the wind pressed on the mast); it was his address in taking all the wind out of the lug by means of the schooner's mainsail. The old man never said a word till the work was done, then he remarked, "That was clever of you."

The new-comer took no notice whatever. "Reef that sail, Jack," he cried, "it will be in the lady's face by-and-by; and heave your baler in here, their boat is full of water."

"Not so full as it would if you hadn't brought up alongside," said the old boatman.

"Do you want to frighten the lady?" replied the sailor, in his dryest and least courtier-like way.

"I am not frightened, Mr. Dodd," said Lucy: "I was, but I am not now."

"Come and help me get the water out of her, Jack. Stay, Miss Fountain had better step into the dry boat meantime. Now, Jack, look alive; lash her alongside, aft."

This done, the two sailors, one standing on the lugger's gunwale, one on the schooner's, handed Miss Fountain into the schooner, and gave her the cushions out of the lugger to sit upon. They then went to work with a will, and baled half a ton of water out.

When she was dry, David jumped back into his own boat. "Now, Miss Fountain, your boat is dry, but the sea is getting up, and I think if I were you I would stay where you are."

"I mean to," said the lady, calmly. "Mr. Talboys, *would* you mind coming into this boat? we shall be safer here, it — it is larger."

The gentleman thus addressed was embarrassed between two mortifications, one on each side of him. If he came into David's boat he would be second fiddle, he who had gone out of port first fiddle. If he stuck to the lugger, Lucy would go off with Dodd, and he would look like a fool coming ashore without her. He hesitated.

David got impatient. "Come, sir," he cried, "don't you hear the lady invite you? and every moment is precious." And he held out his hand to him.

Talboys decided on taking it, and he even unbent so far as to jump vigorously, so vigorously that, David pulling him with force at the same moment, he came flying into the schooner like a cannon-ball, and, toppling over

on his heels, went down on his seat with his head resting on her weather-gunwale, and his legs at a right angle with his back.

"That is one way of boarding a craft," muttered David, a little discontentedly; then to the old boatman, "here, fling us that tarpauling. I say, here is more wind coming; are you sure you can work that lugger, you two?"

"We will be ashore before you can, now there's nobody to bother us," was the prompt reply.

"Then cast loose: here we are — drifting out to sea."

The old man cast the rope loose; David hauled it on board, and the schooner shot away from her companion and bore up north-north-west, leaving the lugger rocking from side to side on the rising waves. But the next minute Lucy saw her sail rise, and she bore up and stood north-east.

"Good-by to you, little horror," said Lucy.

"We shall fall in with her a good many times more before we make the land," said David Dodd.

Lucy inquired what he meant; but he had fallen to hauling the sheet aft and making the sail stand flatter, and did not answer her. Indeed, he seemed much more taken up with Jack than with her, and, above all, entirely absorbed in the business of sailing the boat.

She was a little mortified at this behavior, and held her tongue. Talboys was sulky and held his. It was a curious situation. In the hurry and bustle none of the parties had realized it: but now, as the boat breasted the waves, and all was silent on board, they had time to review their position.

Talboys grew gloomier and gloomier at the poor figure he cut. Lucy kept blushing at intervals as she reflected on the obligation she had laid herself under to a rejected lover. The rejected lover alone seemed to mind his

business and nothing else; and, as he was almost ludicrously unconscious that he was doing a chivalrous action, a misfortune to which those who do these things are nearly universally liable, he did not gild the transaction with a single graceful speech, and permitted himself to be more occupied with the sails than with rescued beauty.

Succeeding events, however, explained, and in some degree excused, this commonplace behavior.

The next time they tacked, some spray came flying in, and wetted all hands. Lucy laughed. The lugger had also tacked, and the two boats were now standing towards each other; when they met, the lugger had weathered on them some sixty or seventy yards.

A furious rain now came on almost horizontally, and the sailors arranged the tarpaulin so as to protect Mr. Talboys and Miss Fountain.

"But you will be wet through yourself, Mr. Dodd. Will you not come under shelter, too?"

"And who is to sail the boat?" He added, "I am glad to see the rain. I hope it will still the wind; if it doesn't — we shall have to try something else, that is all."

"Pray when do you undertake to land us, Mr. Dodd?" inquired Mr. Talboys, superciliously.

"Well, sir, if it does not blow any harder, about eight bells."

"Eight bells? why, that means midnight," exclaimed Talboys.

"Wind and tide both dead against us," replied David, coolly.

"Oh! Mr. Dodd, tell me the truth: is there any danger?"

"Danger? not that I see; but it is very uncomfortable and unbecoming for you to be beating to windward

against the tide for so many hours when you ought to be sitting on the sofa at home. However, next time you run out of port, I hope those that take charge of you will look to the almanac for the tide, and look to windward for the weather. Jack, the lugger lies nearer the wind than we do."

"A little, sir."

"Will you take the helm a minute, Mr. Talboys? and, Jack, you come forward and unbend this." The two sailors put their heads together amid-ships, and spoke in an undertone. "The wind is rising with the rain instead of falling?"

"Seems so, sir."

"What do you think yourself?"

"Well, sir, it has been blowing harder and harder ever since we came out, and very steady."

"It will turn out one of those dry nor'-easters, Jack."

"I shouldn't wonder, sir. I wish she was cutter-rigged, sir. A boat has no business to be any other rig but cutter; there ought to be a nact o' Parliam't against these outlandish rigs."

"I don't know: I have seen wonders done with this lateen-rig in the Pacific."

"The lugger forereaches on us, sir."

"A little; but for all that I am glad she is on board our craft: we have got more beam, and if it comes to the worst, we can run. The lugger can't with her sharp stern. I'll go to the helm."

Just as David was stepping aft to take the helm, a wave struck the boat hard on the weather bow, close to the gunwale, and sent a bucket of salt water flying all over him: he never turned his head even — took no more notice of it than a rock does when the sea spits at it. Lucy shrieked and crouched behind the tarpaulin. David took the helm, and seeing Talboys white, said, kindly,

"Why don't you go forward, sir, and make yourself snug under the folksel deck: she is sure to wet us abaft before we can make the land."

No; Talboys resisted his inclination and the deadly nausea that was creeping over him.

"Thank you, but I like to see what is going on, and (with an heroic attempt at sea-slang), I like a wet boat."

They now fell in with the lugger again, lying on the opposite tack; and a hundred yards at least to windward.

Just before they crossed her wake, David sang out to Jack, —

"Our masts; are they sound?"

"Bran-new, sir; best Norway pine."

"What d'ye think?"

"Think we are wasting time and daylight."

"Then stand *by* the main-sheet."

"Yes, sir."

"Slack the main-sheet."

"Ay, ay! sir."

The boat instantly fell off into the wind, and as she went round, David stood up in the stern sheets and waved his cap to the men on board the lugger, who were watching him. The old man was seen to shake his head in answer to the signal, and point to his lug-sail standing flat as a board; and the next moment they parted company, and the lateen was running close-reefed before the wind.

Mr. Talboys was sitting collapsed in the lethargy that precedes sea-sickness. He started up. "What are you doing?" he shrieked.

"Keep quiet, sir, and don't bother," said David, with calm sternness, and in his deepest tones.

"Pray don't interfere with Mr. Dodd," said Lucy, "he must know best."

"You don't see what he is doing, then!" cried Talboys, wildly; "the madman is taking us out to sea."

"Are you taking us out to sea, Mr. Dodd?" inquired Lucy, with dismay.

"I am doing according to my judgment of tide and wind, and the abilities of the craft I am sailing," said David, firmly; "and on board my own craft I am skipper, and skipper I will be. Go forward, sir, if you please, and don't speak except to obey orders."

Mr. Talboys, sick, despondent, and sulky, went gloomily forward, coiled himself up under the forecastle deck, and was silent and motionless.

"Don't send me," cried Lucy, "for I will not go. Nothing but your eye keeps up my courage. I don't mind the water," added she, hastily and a little timidly, anxious to meet every reason that could be urged for imprisoning her in the forecastle hold.

"You are all right where you are, miss," said Jack, cheerfully; "we shan't have no more spray come aboard us; it won't come in by the can-full if it doesn't come by the ton."

"Will you belay your jaw?" roared David, in a fury that Lucy did not comprehend at the time. "What a set of tarnation babblers in one little boat."

"I won't speak any more, Mr. Dodd. I won't speak."

"Bless your heart! it isn't you I meant. 'Twould be hard if a lady might not put her word in. But a man is different. I do love to see a man belay his jaw, and wait for orders, and then do his duty: stand by the mainsel, you!"

"Ay, ay! sir."

"Shake out a couple of reefs."

"Ay, ay! sir."

And the lateen spread both her great wings like an albatross, and leaped, and plunged, and flew, before the mighty gale.

CHAPTER XVIII.

"This is nice. The boat does not upset or tumble as it did: it only courtesies and plunges. I like it."

"The sea has not got up yet, miss," said Jack.

"Hasn't it? the waves seem very large."

"Lord love you! Wait till we have had four or five hours more of this."

"Belay your jaw, Jack."

"Ay, ay! sir."

"Why so, Mr. Dodd?" objected Lucy, gently. "I am not so weak as you think me. Do not keep the truth from me. I share the danger: let me share the sense of danger, too. You shall not blush for me."

"Danger? there is not a grain of it, unless we make danger by inattention — and babbling."

"You will not do that," said Lucy.

Equivoque missed fire.

"Not while you are on board," replied David, simply.

Lucy felt inclined to give him her hand: she had it out half way; but he had lately asked her to marry him, so she drew it back, and her eyes rested on the bottom of the boat.

The wind rose higher. The masts bent so that each sail had every possible reef taken in. Her canvas thus reduced, she scudded as fast as before, such was now the fury of the gale. The sea rose so that the boat seemed to mount with each wave as high as the second story of a house, and go down again to the cellar at every plunge. Talboys, prostrated by sea-sickness in the fore-hold, lay curled, but motionless, like a crooked log, and almost

as indifferent to life or death. Lucy, pale but firm, put no more questions that she felt would not be answered; but scanned David Dodd's face furtively but closely. The result was encouraging to her. His cheek was not pale, as she felt her own; on the contrary, it was slightly flushed, his eye bright and watchful but lion-like. He gave a word or two of command to Jack every now and then, very sharply, but without the slightest shade of agitation, and Jack's "ay, ay," came back as sharply, but cheerfully.

The principal feature she discerned in both sailors was a very attentive, business-like manner. The romantic air with which heroes face danger in story, was entirely absent; and so, being convinced by his yarns that David *was* a hero, she inferred that their situation could not be dangerous, but, as David himself had inferred, merely one in which watchfulness was requisite.

The sun went down red and angry. The night came on dark and howling. No moon. A murky sky like a black bellying curtain above; and huge ebony waves, that in the appalling blackness seemed all crested with devouring fire, hemmed in the tossing boat, and growled and snarled and raged above, below, and around her.

Then, in that awful hour, Lucy Fountain felt her littleness, and the littleness of man. She cowered and trembled.

The sailors, rough but tender nurses, wrapped shawls round her one above the other, "to make her snug for the night," they said. They seemed to her to be mocking her. "Snug? Who could hope to outlive such a fearful night? and what did it matter whether she was drowned in one shawl or a dozen?"

David being amidships, baling the boat out, and Jack at the helm, she took the opportunity, and got very close to the latter, and said in his ear, —

"Mr. Jack, we are in danger."

"Not exactly in danger, miss; but of course we must mind our eye. But I have often been where I have had to mind my eye, and hope to be again."

"Mr. Jack," said Lucy, shivering, "what is our danger? tell me the nature of it, then I shall not be so cowardly; will the boat break?"

"Lord bless you, no."

"Will it upset?"

"No fear of that."

"Will not the sea swallow us?"

"No, miss. How can the sea swallow us? She rides like a cork, and there is the skipper baling her out to make her lighter still. No, I'll tell you, miss; all we have got to mind is two things: we must not let her broach-to, and we must not get pooped."

"But *why* mustn't we?"

"*Why?* Because we *mustn't.*"

"But I mean, what would be the consequence of — broaching-to?"

Jack opened his eyes in astonishment. "Why, the sea would run over her quarter, and swamp her."

"Oh! And if we get pooped?"

"We shall go to Davy Jones, like a bullet."

"Who is Davy Jones?"

"The old one, you know — down below. Leastways you won't go there, miss, you will go aloft, and, perhaps, the skipper; but Davy will have me, so I won't give him a chance if I can help it."

Lucy cried.

"Where are we, Mr. Jack?"

"British Channel."

"I know that; but whereabouts?"

"Heaven knows, and no doubt the skipper he knows, but I don't. I am only a common sailor. Shall I hail the skipper? he will tell you."

"No! no! no! He is so angry if we speak."

"He won't be angry if you speak to him, miss," said Jack, with a sly grin that brought a faint color into Lucy's cheek. "You should have seen him, how anxious he was about you before we came alongside; and the moment that lubber went forward to dip the lug, says he, 'Jack, there will be mischief; up mainsel, and run down to them. I have no confidence in that tall boy.' (He do seem a long, weedy, useless sort of lubber.) Lord bless you, miss, we luffed, and were running down to you long before you made the signal of distress with your little white flag." Lucy's cheeks got redder. "No, miss, if the skipper speaks severe to you, Jack Painter is blind with one eye, and can't see with t'other."

Lucy's cheeks were carnation. But the next moment they were white, for a terrible event interrupted this chat; two huge waves rolled one behind the other, an occurrence which luckily is not frequent. The boat, descending into the valley of the sea, had the wind taken out of her sails by the high wave that was coming; her sails flapped, she lost her speed, and, as she rose again, the second wave was a moment too quick for her, and its combing crest caught her. The first thing Lucy saw was Jack running from the helm with a loud cry of fear, followed by what looked an arch of fire, but sounded like a lion rushing, growling, on its prey, and directly her feet and ankles were in a pool of water. David bounded aft, swearing and splashing through it, and it turned into sparks of white fire, flying this way and that; he seized the helm, and discharged a loud volley of curses at Jack.

"Fling out ballast, ye d——d cowardly, useless lubber," cried he; and while Jack, who had recoiled into his normal state of nerves with almost ridiculous rapidity, was heaving out ballast, David discharged another rolling volley at him.

"Oh, pray don't!" cried Lucy trembling like an aspen leaf. "Oh, think! we shall soon be in the presence of our Maker — of Him whose name you" —

"Not we," cried David with broad, cheerful incredulity. "We have lots more mischief to do, that lubber and I. And if he thinks he is going there, let him end like a man, not like a skulking lubber, running from the helm, and letting the craft come up in the wind."

"No! no! It was the sea he ran from. Who would not?"

"The lubber! If it had been a tiger or a bear, I'd say nothing, but what is the use of trying to run from the sea? Should have stuck to his post, and set that thundering back of his up, it's broad enough, and kept the sea out of your boots. The sea, indeed! I *have* seen the sea come on board me, and clear the deck fore and aft, but it didn't come in the shape of a cupful o' water, and a spoonful o' foam." Here David's wrath and contempt were interrupted by Jack singing waggishly at his work,—

"Cease — rude Boreas — blustering — rail-er!"

At which sly hit David was pleased, and burst into a loud boisterous laugh.

Lucy put her hands to her ears. "Oh, don't! don't! this is worse than your blasphemies, laughing on the brink of eternity; these are not men, they are devils."

"Do you hear that, Jack? Come, you behave!" roared David.

A faint snarl from Talboys. The water had penetrated him, and roused him from a state of sick torpor. He lay in a tidy little pool some eight inches deep.

The boat was baled and lightened; but Lucy's fears were not set at rest. What was to hinder the recurrence of the same danger, and with more fatal effect? She timidly asked David's permission to let her keep the sea

out. Instead of snubbing her, as she expected, David consented with a sort of paternal benevolence tinged with incredulity. She then developed her plan: it was, that David, Jack, and she, should sit in a triangle, and hold the tarpaulin out to windward, and fence the ocean out. Jack being summoned aft to council, burst into a horse-laugh; but David checked him.

"There is more in it than you see, Jack; more than she sees, perhaps. My only doubt is whether it is possible; but you can try."

Lucy and Jack then tried to get the tarpaulin out to windward; instead of which it carried them to leeward, by the force of the wind. The mast brought them up, or Heaven knows where their new invention would have carried them. With infinite difficulty they got it down and kneeled upon it, and even then it struggled. But Lucy would not be defeated; she made Jack gather it up in the middle, and roll it first to the right, then to the left, till it became a solid roll with two narrow open edges. They then carried it abaft, and lowered it vertically over the stern-port; then suddenly turned it round, and sat down. "Crack!" the wind opened it, and wrapped it round the boat and the trio.

"Hello!" cried David, "it is foul of the rudder," and he whipped out his knife, and made a slit in the stuff. It now clung like a blister.

"There, Mr. Dodd, will not that keep the sea out?" asked Lucy triumphantly.

"At any rate, it may help to keep us ahead of the sea. Why, Jack! I seem to feel it lift her, it is as good as a mizzen."

"But, oh, Mr. Dodd, there is another danger! We may broach-to?"

"How can she broach-to, when I am at the helm? here is the arm that won't let her broach-to."

"Then I feel safe."

"You are as safe as on your own sofa; it is the discomfort you are put to that worries me."

"Don't think so meanly of me, Mr. Dodd. If it was not for my cowardice, I should enjoy this voyage far more than the luxurious ease you think so dear to me. I despise it."

"Mr. Dodd, now I am no longer afraid, I am, oh, so sleepy!"

"No wonder. Go to sleep. It is the best thing you can do."

"Thank you, sir. I am aware my conversation is not very interesting." Having administered this sudden bloodless scratch, to show that at sea or ashore, in fair weather or foul, she retained her sex, Lucy disposed herself to sleep.

David, steering the boat with his left hand, arranged the cushion with his right. She settled herself to sleep, for an irresistible drowsiness had followed the many hours of excitement she had gone through. Twice the heavy plunging sea brought her into light contact with David; she instantly awoke, and apologized to him with gentle dismay, for taking so audacious a liberty with that great man, commander of the vessel; the third time she said nothing, a sure sign she was unconscious.

Then David, for fear she might hurt herself, curled his arm around her, and let her head decline upon his shoulder. Her bonnet fell off. He put it reverently on the other side the helm. The air now cleared, but the gale increased rather than diminished. And now the moon rose large and bright. The boat and masts stood out like white stonework against the flint-colored sky, and the silver light played on Lucy's face. There she lay, all unconscious of her posture, on the man's shoulder who loved

her, and whom she had refused; her head thrown back in sweet helplessness; her rich hair streaming over David's shoulder; her eyes closed, but the long, lovely lashes meeting so that the double fringe was as speaking as most eyes, and her lips half open in an innocent smile. The storm was no storm to her now. She slept the sleep of childhood, of innocence and peace; and David gazed and gazed on her, and joy and tenderness almost more than human thrilled through him; and the storm was no storm to him either. He forgot the past, defied the future, and, in the delirium of his joy, blessed the sea and the wind, and wished for nothing but, instead of the Channel, a boundless ocean, and to sail upon it thus; her bosom tenderly grazing him, and her lovely head resting on his shoulder, for ever and ever and ever.

Thus they sailed on two hours and more, and Jack now began to nod.

All of a sudden Lucy awoke, and, opening her eyes, surprised David gazing at her with tenderness unspeakable. Awaking possessed with the notion that she was sleeping at home on a bed of down, she looked dumfounded an instant; but David's eyes soon sent the blood into her cheek. Her whole supple person turned eel-like, and she glided quickly, but not the least brusquely, from him; the latter might have seemed discourteous.

"Oh, Mr. Dodd!" she cried, "what am I doing?"

"You have been getting a nice sleep, thank Heaven."

"Yes, and making use of you, even in my sleep; but we all impose on your goodness."

"Why did you awake? you were happy. You felt no care; and I was happy seeing you so."

Lucy's eyes filled. "Kind, true friend," she murmured, "how can I ever thank you as I ought? I little deserved that you should watch over my safety as you have done, and, alas! risk your own. Any other but

you would have borne me malice, and let me perish, and said, 'It serves her right.'"

"Malice! Miss Lucy. What for, in heaven's name?"

"For — for the affront I put upon you: for the — the honor I declined."

"Hate cannot lie alongside love in a true heart."

"I see it cannot in a noble one. And then you are so generous. You have never once recurred to that unfortunate topic; yet you have gained a right to request me — to reconsider — Mr. Dodd, you have saved my life!"

"What, do you praise me because I don't take a mean advantage? That would not be behaving like a man."

"I don't know that. You overrate your sex, — and mine. We don't deserve such generosity. The proof is, we reward those who are not so — delicate."

"I don't trouble my head about your sex. They are nothing to me, and never will be. If you think I have done my duty like a man, and as much like a gentleman as my homely education permits, that is enough for me, and I shall sail for China as happy as anything on earth can make me now."

Lucy answered this by crying gently, silently, tenderly.

"Don't ye cry! Have I said something to vex you?"

"Oh, no! no!"

"Are you alarmed still?"

"Oh, no! I have such faith in you."

"Then go to sleep again, like a lamb."

"I will: then I shall not tease you with my conversation."

"Now, there is a way to put it!"

"Forgive me!"

"That I will, if you will take some repose. There, I will lash you to my arm with this handkerchief, then

you can lie the other way, and hold on by the handkerchief — there."

She closed her eyes, and fell apparently to sleep, but really to thinking.

Then David nudged Jack, and waked him. "Speak low now, Jack!"

"What is it, sir?"

"Land ahead."

Jack looked out, and there was a mountain of jet rising out of the sea, and, to a landsman's eye, within a stone's throw of them.

"Is it the French coast, sir? I must have been asleep."

"French coast? no, Channel Island — smallest of the lot."

"Better give it a wide berth, sir. We shall go smash like a teacup if we run on to one of them rocky islands."

"Why, Jack," said David, reproachfully, "am I the man to run upon a lee-shore, and such a night as this?"

"Not likely; you will keep her head for Cherbourg or St. Malo, sir; it is our only chance."

"It is not our only chance, nor our best. We have been running a littl ahead of this gale, Jack; there is worse in store for us: the sea is rolling mountains high on the French coast this morning, I know. We are like enough to be pooped before we get there, or swamped on some harbor-bar at last."

"Well, sir, we must take our chance."

"Take our chance? what, with heads on our shoulders, and an angel on board that Heaven has given us charge of. No! I shan't take my chance. I shall try all I know, and hang on to life by my eyelids. Listen to me. 'Knowledge is gold:' a little of it goes a long way. I don't know much, myself, but I do know the soundings of the British Channel. I have made them my study.

On the south side of this rocky point, there is forty fathom water close to the shore, and good anchorage-ground."

"Then I wish we could jump over the thundering island, and drop on to the lee-side of it; but as we can't, what's the use?"

"We may be able to round the point."

"There will be an awful sea running off that point, sir."

"Of course there will. I mean to try it, for all that."

"So be it, sir; that is what I like to hear. I do hate palaver. Let one give his orders, and the rest obey them. We are not above half a mile from it now."

"You had better wake the landsman. We must have a third hand for this."

"No," said a woman's voice, sweet but clear and unwavering — "I shall be the third hand."

"Curse it!" cried David, "she has heard us."

"Every word. And I have no confidence in Mr. Talboys! and, believe me, I am more to be trusted than he is. See, my cowardice is all worn out. Do but trust me, and you shall find I want neither courage nor intelligence."

David eyed her keenly, and full in the face. She met his glance calmly, with her fine nostril slightly expanding, and her compressed lip curving proudly.

"It is all right, Jack. It is not a flash in the pan. She is as steady as a rock;" he then addressed her rapidly and business-like, but with deference. "You will stand by the helm on this side, and the moment I run forward, you will take the helm, and hold it in this position. That will require all your strength. Come, try it — well done."

"How the sea struggles with me! But I am strong, you see," cried Lucy, her brow flushed with the battle.

"Very good! you *are* strong, and, what is better, resolute. Now, observe me, this is port, this is starboard, and this is amidships."

"I see; but how am I to know which to do?"

"I shall give you the word of command."

"And all I have to do is to obey it."

"That is all. But you will find it enough, because the sea will seem to fight with you. It will shake the boat to make you let go, and will, perhaps, dash in your face to make you let go."

"Forewarned, forearmed, Mr. Dodd. I will not leave go. I will hold on by my eyelids — sooner than add to your danger."

"Jack, she is on fire; she gives me double heart."

"So she does me. She makes it a pleasure."

They were now near enough the point to judge what they had to do; and the appearance of the sea was truly terrible: the waves were all broken, and a surge of devouring fire seemed to rage and roar round the point and oppose an impassable barrier between them and the inky pool beyond, where safety lay under the lee of the high rocks.

"I don't like it," said David. "It looks to me like going through a strip of hell-fire."

"But it is narrow," said Lucy.

"That is our chance, and the tide is coming in. We will try it. She will drench us; but I don't *much* think she will swamp us. Are you ready, all-hands?"

"Oh, please wait a minute, till I do up my hair!"

"Take a minute; but no more."

"There, it is done. Mr. Dodd, one word; if all should fail, and death be inevitable, tell me so, just before we perish, and I shall have something to say to you. Now, I am ready."

"Jump forward, Jack."

"Yes, sir."

"Stand by to jibe the foresail."

"Ay, ay, sir!"

"See our sweeps all clear."

"Ay."

David now handled the main-sheet, and, at the same time, looked earnestly at Lucy, who met his eye with a look of eager attention.

"Starboard a little. That will do. Steady, steady as you go." As the boat yielded to the helm, Jack gathered in on the sheet, took two turns round the cleat, and eased away till the sail drew its best. So far so good. Both sails were now on the same side of the boat: the wind on her port-quarter; but now came the dangerous operation of coming to the wind, in a rough and broken sea, among the eddies of wind and tide so prevalent off headlands. David, with the main-sheet in his right hand, directed Lucy with his left, as well as his voice.

"Starboard the helm, starboard yet; now meet her, so," and, as she rounded to, Jack and he kept hauling the sheets aft, and the boat, her course and trim altered, darted among the breakers like a brave man attacking danger. After the first plunge, she went up and down like a pickaxe, coming down almost where she went up; but she held her course, with the waves roaring round her like a pack of hell-hounds.

More than half the terrible strip was passed. "Starboard yet," cried David; and she headed towards the high mainland, under whose lee was calm and safety. Alas! at this moment a snorter of a sea broke under her broadside, and hove her to leeward like a cork, and a tide eddy catching her under the counter, she came-to more than two points, and her canvas, thus emptied, shook enough to tear the masts out of her by the board.

"Port your helm, PORT! PORT!" roared David in

a voice like the roar of a wounded lion, and, in his anxiety, he bounded to the helm himself; but Lucy obeyed orders at half a word, and David, seeing this, sprang forward to help Jack flatten in the foresheet. The boat, which all through answered the helm beautifully, fell off the moment Lucy ported the helm, and thus they escaped the impending and terrible danger of her making sternway.

"Helm amidships!" and all drew again; the black water was in sight. But will they ever reach it? She tosses like a cork. Bang! a breaker caught her bows, and drenched David and Jack to the very bone. She quivered like an aspen-leaf, but held on.

"Starboard one point!" cried David, sitting down, and lifting an oar out from the boat; but just as Lucy, in obeying the order, leaned a little over the lee gunwale with the tiller, a breaker broke like a shell upon the boat's broadside abaft, stove in her upper plank, and filled her with water: some flew and slapped Lucy in the face like an open hand. She screamed, but clung to the gunwale, and gripped the helm. Her arm seemed iron, and her heart was steel. While she clung thus to her work, blinded by the spray, and expecting death, she heard oars splash into the water, and mellow, stentorian voices burst out singing.

In amazement she turned, squeezed the brine out of her eyes, and looked all round; and lo! the boat was in a trifling bobble of a sea, and close astern was the surge of fire raging, and growling, and blazing in vain; and the two sailors were pulling the boat with superhuman strength and inspiration, into a monster mill-pool, that now lay right ahead, black as ink and smooth as oil,— singing loudly as they rowed, —

> "Cheerily oh, oh! (pull) cheerily oh, oh! (pull)
> To port we go, oh (pull), to port we go (pull)."

FLARE! a great flaming eye opened on them in the centre of the universal blackness.

"Look! Look!" cried Lucy, "a fire in the mountain."

It was the lantern of a French sloop anchored close to the shore. The crew had heard the sailors' voices. At sight of it David and Jack cheered so lustily, that Talboys crawled out of the water, and glared vaguely. The sailors pulled under the sloop's lee quarter. A couple of ropes were instantly lowered, the lantern held aloft, ruby heads and hands clustered at the gangway, and in another minute the boat's party were all upon deck under a hailstorm of French, and the boat fast to her stern.

CHAPTER XIX.

The skipper of the sloop, hearing a commotion on deck, came up, and, taking off his cap, made Lucy a bow in a style remote from an English sailor's. She courtesied to him, and, to his surprise, addressed him in Parisian French. When he learned she was from England, and had rounded that point in an open boat, he was astonished.

"Diables d'Anglais!" said he.

The good-natured Frenchman insisted on Lucy taking sole possession of his cabin, in which was a cheerful stove. His crew were just as kind to David, Jack, and Talboys. This latter now resumed his right place — at the head of mankind; being the only one who could talk French, he interpreted for his companions. He improved upon my narrative in one particular: he led the Frenchmen to suppose it was he who had sailed the boat from England, and weathered the point. Who can blame him?

Dry clothes were found them, and grog and beef.

While employed on the victuals, a little Anglo-Franc, aged ten, suddenly rolled out of a hammock and offered aid in the sweet accents of their native tongue. The sound of the knives and forks had woke the urchin out of a deep sleep. David filled the hybrid, and then sent him to Lucy's cabin to learn how she was getting on. He returned, and told them the lady was sitting on deck.

"Dear me," said David, "she ought to be in her bed." He rose and went on deck, followed by Mr. Talboys. "Had you not better rest yourself?" said David.

"No, thank you, Mr. Dodd; I had a delicious sleep in the boat."

Here Talboys put in his word, and made her a rueful apology for the turn his pleasure excursion had taken.

She stopped him most graciously. "On the contrary, I have to thank you, indirectly, for one of the pleasantest evenings I ever spent. I never was in danger before, and it is delightful. I was a little frightened at first, but it soon wore off, and I feel I should shortly revel in it; only I must have a brave man near just to look at, then I gather courage from his eye; do I not, now, Mr. Dodd?"

"Indeed you do," said David, simply enough.

Lucy Fountain's appearance and manner bore out her words. Talboys was white: even David and Jack showed some signs of a night of watching and anxiety; but the young lady's cheek was red and fresh, her eye bright, and she shone with an inspired and sprightly ardor that was never seen, or never observed, in her before. They had found the way to put her blood up after all; the blood of the Funteyns. Such are thoroughbreds, — they rise with the occasion; snobs descend as the situation rises. See that straight-necked, small-nosed mare stepping delicately on the turnpike; why, it is Languor in person, picking its way among eggs. Now the hounds cry, and the horn rings. Put her at timber, stream, and ploughed field, in pleasing rotation, and see her now: up ears; open nostril; nerves steel; heart invincible; eye of fire, foot of wind. And ho, there! what stuck in that last arable, dead stiff as the Rosinantes in Trafalgar Square, all but one limb, which goes like a water-wagtail's? Why, by Jove, if it isn't the hero of the turnpike road; the gallant, impatient, foaming, champing, space-devouring, curvetting cocktail!

Out of consideration for her male companions' infirmities, and observing that they were ashamed to take needful rest while she remained on deck, Lucy at length retired to her cabin.

She slept a good many hours, and was awakened at last by the rocking of the sloop. The wind had fallen greatly, but it had also changed to due east, which brought a heavy ground-swell round the point into their little haven. Lucy made her toilet, and came on deck blooming like a rose. The first person she encountered was Mr. Talboys. She saluted him cordially; she then inquired for their companions.

"Oh, they are gone."

"Gone! What do you mean?"

"Sailed half an hour ago. Look, there is the boat coasting the island. No, not that way: westward: out there, just weathering that point — don't you see?"

"Are they making a tour of the island, then?"

Here the little Anglo-Franc put in his word. "No, ma'mselle, gone to catch sheep bound for ze East Indeeze."

"Gone! gone! for good?" and Lucy turned very pale. The next moment offended pride sent the blood rushing to her brow. "That is just like Mr. Dodd; there is not another gentleman in the world would have had the ill-breeding to go off like that to India without even bidding us good-morning or good-by; did he bid *you* good-by, Mr. Talboys?"

"No."

"There now; it is insolent; it is barbarous." Her vexation at the affront David had put on Mr. Talboys soon passed into indignation. "This was done to insult us; to humiliate us. A noble revenge. You know we used sometimes to quiz him a little ashore, especially

you; so now out of spite he has saved our lives, and then turned his back arrogantly upon us before we could express our gratitude; that is as much as to say, he values us as so many dogs or cats, flings us our lives haughtily, and then turns his back disdainfully on us. Life is not worth having when given so insultingly."

Talboys soothed the offended fair. "I really don't think he meant to insult us; but you know Dodd; he is a good-natured fellow, but he never had the slightest pretension to good-breeding."

"Don't you think," replied the lady, "it would be as well to leave off detracting from Mr. Dodd now that he has just saved your life?"

Talboys opened his eyes. "Why, you began it."

"Oh, Mr. Talboys! do not descend to evasion! What I say goes for nothing; Mr. Dodd and I are fast friends, and nobody will ever succeed in robbing me of my esteem for him. But you always hated him, and you seize every opportunity of showing your dislike. Poor Mr. Dodd! He has too many great virtues not to be envied—and hated."

Talboys stood puzzled, and was at a loss which way to steer his tongue, the wind being so shifty. At last he observed, a little haughtily, that he never made Mr. Dodd of so much importance as all this. He owned he *had* quizzed him, but it was not his intention to quiz him any more; "for I do feel under considerable obligations to Mr. Dodd; he has brought us safe across the Channel; at the same time I own I should have been *more* grateful if he had beat against the wind and landed us on our native coast; the lugger is there long before this, and our boat was the best of the two."

"Absurd!" replied Lucy, with cold hauteur. "The

lugger had a sharp stern, but ours was a square stern, so we were obliged to *run;* if we had *beat,* we should all have been drowned directly."

Talboys was staggered by this sudden influx of science, but he held his ground. "There is something in that," said he, "but still — a — a" —

"There, Mr. Talboys," said the young lady, suddenly assuming extreme languor after delivering a facer, "pray do not engage me in an argument. I do not feel equal to one, especially on a subject that has lost its interest. Can you inform me when this vessel sails?"

"Not till to-morrow morning."

"Then will you be so kind as to borrow me that little boat; it is dangling from the ship, so it must belong to it. I wish to land and see whether he has cast us upon an in- or an uninhabited island."

The sloop's boat speedily landed them on the island, and Lucy proposed to cross the narrow neck of land and view the sea they had crossed in the dark. This was soon done, and she took that opportunity of looking about for the lateen; for her mind had taken another turn, and she doubted the report that David was gone to inter cept the East Indiaman. A short glance convinced her it was true; about seven miles to leeward, her course west-north-west, her hull every now and then hidden by the waves, her white sails spread like a bird's, the lateen was flying through the foam at her fastest rate. Lucy gazed at her so long and steadfastly that Talboys took the huff, and strolled along the cliff.

When Lucy turned to go back, she found the French skipper coming towards her with a scrap of paper in his hand. He presented it with a low bow; she took it with a courtesy. It was neatly folded, though not as letters are folded ashore, and it bore her address. She opened it and read, —

It was not worth while disturbing your rest just to see us go off. God bless you, Miss Lucy! The Frenchman is bound for ——, and will take you safe; and mind you don't step ashore till the plank is fast.

Yours respectfully,

DAVID DODD.

That was all. She folded it back thoughtfully into the original folds, and turned away. When she had gone but a few steps she stopped and put her rejected lover's little note into her bosom, and went slowly back to the boat hanging her sweet head, and crying as she went.

CHAPTER XX.

Mr. Fountain remained in the town waiting for his niece's return. Six o'clock came — no boat. Eight o'clock — no boat; and a heavy gale blowing. He went down to the beach in great anxiety; and when he got there he soon found it was shared to the full by many human beings. There were little knots of fishermen and sailors discussing it, and one poor woman, mother and wife, stealing from group to group and listening anxiously to the men's conjectures. But the most striking feature of the scene was an old white-haired man, who walked wildly, throwing his arms about. The others rather avoided him, but Mr. Fountain felt he had a right to speak to him, so he came to him, told him "his niece was on board; and you too, I fear, have some one dear to you in danger."

The old man replied sorrowfully that "his lovely new boat was in danger, in such danger that he should never see her again:" then added, going suddenly into a fury, that as to the two rascally blue-jackets that were on board her, and had borrowed her of his wife while he was out, all he wished was, that they had been swamped to all eternity long ago; then they would not have been able to come and swamp his dear boat.

Peppery old Fountain cursed him for a heartless old vagabond, and joined the group whose grief and anxiety were less ostentatious, being for the other boat that carried their own flesh and blood. But all night long that white-haired old man paced the shore, flinging his arms, weeping and cursing alternately, for his dear schooner.

Oh, holy love — of property! how venerable you looked in the moonlight, with your white hairs streaming! How well you imitated, how close you rivalled, the holiest effusions of the heart, and not for the first time nor the last!

"My daughter! — my ducats! — my ducats! — my daughter!" etc.

The morning broke; no sign of either boat. The wind had shifted to the east, and greatly abated. The fishermen began to have hopes for their comrades; these communicated themselves to Mr. Fountain.

It was about one o'clock in the afternoon when this latter observed people streaming along the shore to a distant point. He asked a coast-guard man, whom he observed scanning the place with a glass, what it was.

The man lowered his voice and said, "Well, sir, it will be something coming ashore, by the way the folk are running."

Mr. Fountain got a carriage, and, urging the driver to use speed, was hastily conveyed by the road to a part whence a few steps brought him down to the sea; he thrust wildly in among the crowd.

"Make way," said the rough fellows; they saw he was one of those who had the best right to be there.

He looked, and there, scarce fifty yards from the shore, was the lugger, keel uppermost, drifting in with the tide. The old man staggered and was supported by a beach-man.

When the wreck came within fifteen yards of the shore, she hung, owing to the under suction, and could get neither way. The cries of the women broke out afresh at this. Then half a dozen stout fellows swam in with ropes, and with some difficulty righted her, and in another minute she was hauled ashore.

The crowd rushed upon her, — she was empty! not an

oar, not a boat-hook: nothing. But jammed in between the tiller and the boat they found a purple veil. The discovery was announced loudly by one of the females; but the consequent outcry was instantly hushed by the men, and the oldest fisherman there took it, and, in a sudden dead and solemn silence, gave it with a world of subdued meaning to Mr. Fountain.

CHAPTER XXI.

Mr. Fountain's grief was violent; the more so, perhaps, that it was not pure sorrow, but heated with anger and despair. He had not only lost the creature he loved better than any one else, except himself, but all his plans and all his ambition were upset forever. I am sorry to say there were moments when he felt indignant with Heaven, and accused its justice. At other times the virtues of her he had lost came to his recollection, and he wept genuine tears. Now she was dead, he asked himself a question that is sometimes reserved for that occasion, and then asked with bitter regret and idle remorse at its postponement, "What can I do to show my love and respect for her?" The poor old fellow could think of nothing now, but to try and recover her body from the sea, and to record her virtues on her tomb. He employed six men to watch the coast for her along a space of twelve miles, and he went to a marble-cutter, and ordered a block of beautiful white marble. He drew up the record of her virtues himself, and spelt her "Fontaine," and so settled that question by brute force.

Oh, you may giggle! but men are not most sincere when they are most reasonable, nor most reasonable when most sincere. When a man's heart is in a thing, it *is* in it: wise or nonsensical, it is all one; so it is no use talking.

I lack words to describe the gloom that fell on Mr. Bazalgette's home when the sad tidings reached it. And, indeed, it would be trifling with my reader to hang many more pages with black when he and I both know Lucy Fountain is alive all the time.

Meantime the French sloop lay at her anchor, and Lucy fretted with impatience. At noon the next day she sailed, and, being a slow vessel, did not anchor off the port of —— till daybreak the day after. Then she had to wait for the tide, and it was nearly eleven o'clock when Lucy landed. She went immediately to the principal inn to get a conveyance. On the road, whom should she meet but Mr. Hardie! He gave a joyful start at sight of her, and, with more heart than she could have expected, welcomed her to life again. From him she learned all the proofs of her death. This made her more anxious to fly to her aunt's house at once, and undeceive her.

Mr. Hardie would not let her hire a carriage; he would drive her over in half the time. He beckoned his servant, who was standing at the inn-door, and ordered it immediately. "Meantime, Miss Fountain, if you will take my arm, I will show you something that I think will amuse you, though *we* have found it anything but amusing, as you may well suppose." Lucy took his arm somewhat timidly, and he walked her to the marble-cutter's shop. "Look there," said he. Lucy looked, and there was an unfinished slab, on which she read these words:

Sacred to the Memory
OF
LUCY FONTAINE,
WHO WAS DROWNED AT SEA,
ON THE 10TH SEPT., 18

As her beauty endeared her to all eyes,
So her modesty, piety, docilit

At this point in her moral virtues the chisel had stopped. Eleven o'clock struck, and the chisel went

for its beer. For your English workman would leave the d in "God" half-finished when strikes the hour of beer.

The fact is, that the shopkeeper had newly set up, was proud of the commission, and, whenever the chisel left off, he whipped into the workshop, and brought the slab out, *pro tem.*, into his window, for an advertisement.

Hardie pointed it out to Lucy with a chuckle. Lucy turned pale, and put her hand to her heart. Hardie saw his mistake too late, and muttered excuses.

Lucy gave a little gasp, and stopped him. "Pray say no more; it is my fault. If people will feign death, they must expect these little tributes. My uncle has lost no time." And two unreasonable tears swelled to her eyes, and trickled one after another down her cheeks; then she turned her back quickly on the thing, and Mr. Hardie felt her arm tremble. "I think, Mr. Hardie," said she presently, with marked courtesy, "I should, under the circumstances, prefer to go home alone. My aunt's nerves are sensitive, and I must think of the best way of breaking to her the news that I am alive."

"It would be best, Miss Fountain; and, to tell the truth, I feel myself unworthy to accompany you, after being so maladroit as to give you pain in thinking to amuse you."

"O Mr. Hardie!" said Lucy, growing more and more courteous, "you are not to be called to account for my weakness; that *would* be unjust. I shall have the pleasure of seeing you at dinner?"

"Certainly, since you permit me."

He put Lucy into the carriage, and off she drove. "Come," thought Mr. Hardie, "I have had an escape. What a stupid blunder for me to make! She is not angry though, so it does not matter: she asked me to dinner."

Said Lucy to herself, "The man is a fool. Poor Mr. Dodd! *he* would not have shown me my tombstone, to amuse me." And she dismissed the subject from her mind.

She sent away the carriage, and entered Mr. Bazalgette's house on foot. After some consideration, she determined to employ Jane, a girl of some tact, to break her existence to her aunt. She glided into the drawing-room unobserved, fully expecting to find Jane at work there for Mrs. Bazalgette. But the room was empty. While she hesitated what to do next, the handle of the door was turned, and she had only just time to dart behind a heavy window-curtain, when it opened, and Mrs. Bazalgette walked slowly and silently in, followed by a woman. Mrs. Bazalgette seated herself, and sighed deeply. Her companion kept a respectful silence. After a considerable pause, Mrs. Bazalgette said a few words in a voice so thoroughly subdued and solemn, and every now and then so stifled, that Lucy's heart yearned for her, and nothing but the fear of frightening her aunt into an hysterical fit kept her from flying into her arms.

"I need not tell you," said Mrs. Bazalgette, "why I sent for you: you know the sad bereavement that has fallen on me; but you cannot know all I have lost in her. Nobody can tell what she was to all of us, but most of all to me. I was her darling, and she was mine." Here tears choked Mrs. Bazalgette's words for awhile. Recovering herself, she paid a tribute to the character of the deceased. "It was a soul without one grain of selfishness: all her thoughts were for others, not one for herself. She loved us all. Indeed, she loved some that were hardly worthy of so pure a creature's love; but the reason was, she had no eye for the faults of her friends. She pictured them like herself, and loved her own sweet image in them. *And* such a

temper! and so free from guile. I may truly say her mind was as lovely as her person."

"She was, indeed, a sweet young lady," sighed the woman.

"She was an angel, Baldwin; an angel, sent to bear us company a little while, and now she is a saint in heaven."

"Ah, ma'am! the best goes first, that is an old saying."

"So I have heard; but my niece was as healthy as she was lovely and good. Everything promised long life. I hoped she would have closed my eyes. In the bloom of health one day, and the next lying cold, stark, and drenched! Oh, how terrible! Oh, my poor Lucy! oh! oh! oh!"

"In the midst of life we are in death, ma'am. I am sure it is a warning to me, ma'am, as well as to my betters."

"It is, indeed, Baldwin, a warning to all of us who have lived too much for vanities, to think of this sweet flower, snatched in a moment from our bosoms and from the world. We ought to think of it on our knees, and remember our own latter end. That last skirt you sent me was rather scrimped, my poor Baldwin."

"Was it, ma'am?"

"Oh, it does not matter! I shall never wear it now; and, under such a blow as this, I am in no humor to find fault. Indeed, with my grief I neglect my household, and my very children. I forget everything. What did I send for you for?" and she looked with lack-lustre eyes full in Mrs. Baldwin's face.

"Jane did not say, ma'am; but I am at your orders."

"Oh, of course! I am distracted. It was to pay the last tribute of respect to her dear memory. Ah, Baldwin, often and often the black dress is all; but here the heart mourns beyond the power of grief to express by

any outward trappings. No matter; the world, the shallow world, respect, these signs of woe, and let mine be the deepest mourning ever worn and the richest. And out of that mourning I shall never go whilst I live."

"No, ma'am," said Baldwin soothingly.

"Do you doubt me?" asked the lady, with a touch of sharpness that did not seem called for by Baldwin's humble acquiescence.

"Oh, no, ma'am! it is a very natural thought under the present affliction, and most becoming the sad occasion. Well, ma'am, the deepest mourning, if you please. I should say cashmere and crape."

"Yes, that would be deep. O Baldwin, it is her violent death that kills me! Well?"

"Cashmere and crape, ma'am, and with nothing white about the neck and arms."

"Yes; oh, yes! but will not that be rather unbecoming?"

"Well, ma'am" — and Baldwin hesitated.

"I hardly see how I *could* wear that: it makes one look so old. Now, don't you think black glacé silk and trimmed with love-ribbon, black of course, but scalloped?"

"That would be very rich, indeed, ma'am, and very becoming to you; but, being so near and dear, — it would not be so deep as you are desirous of."

"Why, Baldwin, you don't attend to what I say. I told you I was never going out of mourning again; so what is the use of your proposing anything to me that I can't wear all my life? Now, tell me, can I always wear cashmere and crape?"

"Oh, no, ma'am; that is out of the question; and, if it is for a permanency, I don't see how we could improve on glacé silk, with crape, and love-ribbons. Would you like the body trimmed with jet, ma'am?"

"Oh, don't ask me; I don't know. If my darling had only died comfortably in her bed, then we could have laid out her sweet remains, and dressed them for her virgin tomb."

"It would have been a satisfaction, ma'am."

"A sad one at the best; but now the very earth perhaps will never receive her. Oh, yes; anything you like, the body trimmed with jet if you wish it, and, let me see, a gauze bodice, goffered, fastened to the throat. That is all, I think; the sleeves confined at the wrist just enough not to expose the arm, and yet look light, — you understand."

"Yes, ma'am."

"She kissed me just before she went on that fatal excursion, Baldwin; she will never kiss me again; oh, oh! You must call on Dejazet for me, and bespeak me a bonnet to match; it is not to be supposed that I can run about after her trumpery at such a time; besides, it is not usual."

"Indeed, ma'am, you are in no state for it; I will undertake any purchases you may require."

"Thank you, my good Baldwin; you are a good, kind, feeling, useful soul. Oh, Baldwin, if it had pleased Heaven to take her by disease, it would have been bad enough to lose her. But to be drowned! her clothes all wetted through and through; her poor hair drenched too, and then the water is so cold at this time of year; oh, oh! Send me a cross of jet, and jet beads, with the dress, — and a jet brooch — and a set of jet buttons, in case, — besides, oh, oh, oh! I expect every moment to see her carried home, all pale and wetted by the nasty sea; oh, oh! — And an evening dress of the same, the newest fashion. I leave it to you; don't ask me any questions about it, for I can't and won't go into that. I can try it on when it is made; oh, oh, oh! it does not

do to love any creature as I loved my poor lost Lucy: — and a black fan; oh, oh! and a dozen pair of black kid gloves; oh! and a mourning ring, — and" —

"Stop, aunt, or your love for me will be your ruin!" said Lucy coldly, and stood suddenly before the pair looking rather cynical.

"What, Lucy! alive! No, her ghost, ah, ah!"

"Be calm, aunt, I am alive and well. Now don't be childish, dear; I have been in danger, but here I am."

Mrs. Bazalgette and Mrs. Baldwin flew together and trembled in one another's arms. Lucy tried to soothe them, but at last could not help laughing at them. This brought Baldwin to her senses quicker than anything: but Mrs. Bazalgette, who, like many false women, was hysterical, went off into spasms, genuine ones. They gave her salts — in vain. Slapped her hands — in vain.

Then Lucy cried to Baldwin, "Quick, the tumbler, I must sprinkle her face and bosom."

"Oh, don't spoil my lilac gown!" gasped the sufferer, and with a mighty effort she came to. She would have come back from the edge of the grave to shield silk from water. Finally she wreathed her arms round Lucy, and kissed her so tenderly, warmly, and sobbingly, that Lucy got over the shock of her shallowness, and they kissed and cried together most joyously, while Baldwin, after a heroic attempt at jubilation, retired from the room with a face as long as your arm. *A bas les revenants!* She went to the housekeeper's room. The housekeeper persuaded her to stay and take a bit of dinner; and soon after dinner she was sent for to Mrs. Bazalgette's room.

Lucy met her coming out of it. "I fear I came *mal apropos*, Mrs. Baldwin; if I had thought of it, I would have waited till you had secured that munificent order."

"I am much obliged to you, miss, I am sure; but you

were always a considerate young lady: you'll be glad to learn, miss, it makes no difference; I have got the order; it is all right."

"That is fortunate," replied Lucy kindly, "otherwise I should have been tempted to commit an extravagance with you myself. Well, and what is my aunt's new dress to be now?"

"Oh, the same, miss."

"The same? why, she is not going into mourning on my return? ha, ha!"

"La, bless you, miss, mourning? you can't call that mourning; glacé silk, and love-ribbons scalloped out, and cetera. Of course it was not my business to tell her so, but I could not help thinking to myself, — if that is the way my folk are going to mourn for me, they may just let it alone. However, that is all over now, and your aunt sent for me, and says she, 'Black becomes *me;* you will make the dresses all the same.'" And Baldwin retired radiant.

Lucy put her hand to her bosom. "Make the dresses all the same! — All the same, whether I am alive or dead! No, I will not cry; no, I will not. Who is worth a tear? what is worth a tear? All the same! It is not to be forgotten — nor forgiven. Poor Mr. Dodd!"

Mr. Fountain learned the good news in the town, so his meeting with Lucy was one of pure joy. Mr. Talboys did not hear anything. He had business up in London, and did not stay ten minutes in ——.

The house revived, and jubilabat, jubilabat. But after the first burst of triumph, things went flat. David Dodd was gone, and was missed; and Lucy was changed. She looked a shade older, and more than one shade graver; and instead of living solely for those who happened to be basking in her rays, she was now and then comparatively inattentive, thoughtful, and *distraite.*

Mr. Fountain watched her keenly; ditto Mrs. Bazalgette. A slight reaction had taken place in both their bosoms. "Hang the girl! there were we breaking our hearts for her, and she was alive." She had "*beguiled* them of their tears." — *Othello.* But they still loved her quite well enough to take charge of her fate.

A sort of itch for settling other people's destinies, and so gaining a title to their curses for our pragmatical and fatal interference, is the commonest of all the forms of sanctioned lunacy.

Moreover, these two had imbibed the spirit of rivalry, and each was stimulated by the suspicion that the other was secretly at work.

Lucy's voluntary promise in the ball-room was a double sheet anchor to Mr. Fountain. It secured him against the only rival he dreaded. Talboys, too, was out of the way just now, and the absence of the suitor is favorable to his success, where the lady has no personal liking for him. To work went our Machiavel again heart and soul; and whom do you think he had the cheek, or, as the French say, the forehead, to try and win over? Mrs. Bazalgette.

This bold step, however, was not so strange as it would have been a month ago. The fact is, I have brought you unfairly close to this pair. When you meet them in the world, you will be charmed with both of them, and recognize neither. There are whose faults are all on the surface: these are generally disliked: there are whose faults are all at the core: they charm creation. Mrs. Bazalgette is allowed by both sexes to be the most delightful, amiable woman in the county, and will carry that reputation to her grave. Fountain is "the jolliest old buck ever went on two legs." I myself would rather meet twelve such agreeable humbugs — six of a sex — *at dinner* — than the twelve apostles; and so would you,

though you don't know it. These two, then, had long ere this found each other mighty agreeable. The woman saw the man's vanity, and flattered it. The man the woman's, and flattered it. Neither saw — am I to say — his own, or her own? or what? Hang language! In short, they had long ago oiled one another's asperities, and their intercourse was smooth and frequent; they were always chatting together: strewing flowers of speech over their mines and countermines.

Mr. Fountain, then, who, in virtue of his sex had the less patience, broke ground.

"My dear Mrs. Bazalgette, I would not have missed this visit for a thousand pounds. Certainly there is nothing like contact for rubbing off prejudices. I little thought when I first came here, the principal attraction of the place would prove to be my fair hostess."

"I know you were prejudiced, my dear Mr. Fountain. I can't say I ever had any against you; but certainly I did not know half your good qualities. However, your courtesy to me when I invaded you at Font Abbey prepared me for your real character: and now this visit, I trust, makes us friends."

"Ah! my dear Mrs. Bazalgette, one thing only is wanting to make you my benefactor as well as friend: if I could only persuade you to withdraw your powerful opposition to a poor old fellow's dream."

"What poor old fellow?"

"Me."

"You? why, you are not so very old. You are not above fifty."

"Ah, fair lady, you must not evade me. Come, can nothing soften you?"

"I don't know what you mean, Mr. Fountain," and the mellifluous tones dried suddenly.

"You are too sagacious not to know everything; you

know my heart is set on marrying my niece to a man of ancient family."

"With all my heart. You have only to use your influence with her. If she consents, I will not oppose."

"You cruel little lady, you know it is not enough to withdraw opposition; I can't succeed without your kind aid and support."

"Now, Mr. Fountain, I am a great coward, but really I could almost venture to scold you a little. Is not a poor little woman to be allowed to set her heart on things as well as a poor old gentleman, who does not look fifty? You know my poor little heart is bent on her marrying into our own set; yet you can ask me to influence her the other way; me, who have never once said a word to her for my own favorites. No; the fairest, kindest, and best way is to leave her to select her own happiness."

"A fine thing it would be if young people were left to marry whom they like," retorted Fountain. "My dear lady, I would never have asked your aid so long as there was the least chance of her marrying Mr. Hardie; but now that she has of her own accord declined him" —

"What is that? declined Mr. Hardie? when did he ever propose for her?"

"You misunderstand me. She came to me and told me she would never marry him."

"When was that? I don't believe it."

"It was in the ballroom."

Mrs. Bazalgette reflected; then she turned very red. "Well, sir," said she, "don't build too much on that, for four months ago she made me a solemn promise she would never marry any lover you should find her, and she repeated that promise in your very house."

"I don't believe it, madam."

"That is polite, sir. Come, Mr. Fountain, you are

agitated and cross, and it is no use being cross either with me or with Lucy. You asked my co-operation. You gentlemen can ask anything; and you are wise to do these droll things — that is where you gain the advantage over us poor cowards of women. Well, I will co-operate with you. Now listen: Lucy's *penchant* is neither for Mr. Hardie nor Mr. Talboys, but for Mr. Dodd."

"You don't mean it?"

"Oh! she does not care *much* for him; she has refused him to my knowledge, and would again. Besides, he is gone to India, so there is an end of *him*. She seems a little languid and out of spirits; it may be because he *is* gone. Now, then, is the very time to press a marriage upon her."

"The very worst time, surely, if she is really such an idiot as to be fretting for a fellow who is away."

Mrs. Bazalgette informed her new ally, condescendingly, that he knew nothing of the sex he had undertaken to tackle.

"When a cold-blooded girl like this, who has no strong attachment, is out of spirits, and all that sort of thing, then is the time she falls to any resolute wooer. She will yield if we both insist, and we *will* insist. Only keep your temper, and let nothing tempt you to say an unkind word to her."

She then rang the bell, and desired that Miss Fountain might be requested to come into the drawing-room for a minute.

"But what are you going to do?"

"Give her the choice of two husbands — Mr. Talboys or Mr. Hardie."

"She will take neither, I am afraid."

"Oh, yes, she will."

"Which?"

"Ah! the one she dislikes the least."

"By Jove! you are right; you are an angel;" and the old gentleman, in his gratitude to her who was outwitting him, and *vice versa*, kissed Mrs. Bazalgette's hand with great devotion, in which act he was surprised by Lucy, who floated through the folding-doors. She said nothing, but her face, volumes.

"Sit down, love."

"Yes, aunt."

She sat down, and her eye mildly bored both relatives, like, if you can imagine, a gentle gimlet worked by insinuation, not force.

Then the favored Fountain enjoyed the inestimable privilege of beholding a small bout of female fence.

The accomplished actress of forty began.

The novice held herself apparently all open with a sweet smile, the eye being the only weapon that showed point.

"My love, your uncle and I, who were not always just to one another, have been united by our love for you."

"So I observed as I came in — ahem!"

"Henceforth we are one, where your welfare is concerned, and we have something serious to say to you now. There is a report, dearest, creeping about, that you have formed an unfortunate attachment — to a person beneath you."

"Who told you that, aunt? Name, as they say in the House."

"No matter. These things are commonly said without foundation in this wicked world; but, still, it is always worth our while to prove them false, not, of course, directly: '*qui s'excuse s'accuse*,' but indirectly."

"I agree with you, and I shall do so in my uncle's presence. You were present, aunt, though uninvited, when the gentleman you allude to offered me what I

consider a great honor, and you heard me decline it. You are therefore fully able to contradict that report whose source, by the by, you have not given me; and of course you will contradict it."

Mrs. Bazalgette colored a little. But she said, affectionately, "These silly rumors are best contradicted by a good marriage, love, and that brings me to something more important. We have two proposals for you, and both of them excellent ones. Now, in a matter where your happiness is at stake, your uncle and I are determined not to let our private partialities speak. We do press you to select one of these offers, but leave you quite free as to which you take. Mr. Talboys is a gentleman of old family and large estates. Mr. Hardie is a wealthy and able and rising man. They are both attached to you, both excellent matches. Whichever you choose, your uncle and I shall both feel that an excellent position for life is yours, and no regret that you did not choose our especial favorite shall stain our joy or our love." With this generous sentiment tears welled from her eyes; whereat Fountain worshipped her, and felt his littleness.

But Lucy was of her own sex, and had observed what an unlimited command of eye-water an hysterical female possesses. She merely bowed her head graciously, and smiled politely. Thus encouraged to proceed, her aunt dried her eyes with a smile, and with genial cheerfulness proceeded: "Well, then, dear, which shall it be? Mr. Talboys?"

Lucy opened her eyes *so* innocently. "My dear aunt, I wonder at that question from you. Did you not make me promise you I would never marry that gentleman, nor any friend of my uncle's?"

"And did you?" cried Fountain.

"I did," replied the penitent, hanging her head. "My

aunt was so kind to me about something or other, I forget what."

Fountain bounced up and paced the room.

Mrs. Bazalgette lowered her voice. "It is to be Mr. Hardie, then?"

"Mr. Hardie!" cried Lucy, rather loudly, to attract her uncle's attention. "Oh, no! the same objection applies there. I made my uncle a solemn promise not to marry any friend of yours, aunt. Poor uncle! I refused at first; but he looked so unhappy, my resolution failed, and I gave my promise. I will keep it, uncle. Don't fear me."

It cost Mrs. Bazalgette a fierce struggle to command her temper. Both she and Fountain were dumb for a minute. Then elastic Mrs. Bazalgette said, —

"We were both to blame; you and I did not really know each other. The best thing we can do now is to release the poor girl from these silly promises, that stand in the way of her settlement in life."

"I agree, madam."

"So do I. There, Lucy, choose: for we both release you."

"Thank you," said Lucy, gravely; "but how can you? No unfair advantage was taken of me. I plighted my word knowingly and solemnly, and no human power can release persons of honor from a solemn pledge. Besides, just now you would release me; but you might not always be in the same mind. No, I will keep faith with you both, and not place my truth at the mercy of any human being, nor of any circumstance. If that is all, please permit me to retire. The less a young lady of my age thinks or talks about the other sex, the more time she has for her books and her needle." And having delivered this precious sentence with a deliberate and most deceiving imitation of the pedantic prude, she departed; and,

outside the door, broke instantly into a joyous chuckle at the expense of the plotters she had left looking moon-struck in one another's faces.

If the new allies had been both Fountain, the apple of discord this sweet novice threw down between them would have dissolved the alliance, as the sly novice meant it to do. But while the gentleman went storming about the room ripe for civil war, the lady leaned back in her chair and laughed heartily.

"Come, Mr. Fountain, it is no use your being cross with a female, or she will get the better of you. She has outwitted us. We took her for a fool, and she is a clever girl. I'll — tell — you — what — she is a very clever girl. Never mind that, she is only a girl; and if you will be ruled by me, her happiness shall be secured in spite of her, and she shall be engaged in less than a week."

Fountain recognized his superior, and put himself under the lady's orders — in an evil hour for Lucy.

The poor girl's triumph over the forces was but momentary; her ground was not tenable. The person promised can release the person who promises — *volenti non fit injuria.* Lucy found herself attacked with female weapons, that you and I, sir, should laugh at; but they made her miserable. Cold looks; short answers; solemnity; distance; hints at ingratitude and perverseness; kisses intermitted all day, and the parting one at night degraded to a dignified ceremony. Under this impalpable persecution, the young thorough-bred that had steered the boat across the breakers winced and pined.

She did not want a husband or a lover, but she could not live without being loved. She was not sent into the world for that. She began secretly to hate the two gentlemen that had lost her her relations' affection, and she looked round to see how she could get rid of them

without giving fresh offence to her dear aunt and uncle. If she could only make it their own act! Now, a man in such a case inclines to give the obnoxious parties a chance of showing themselves generous and delicate; he would reveal the whole situation to them, and indicate the generous and manly course; but your thorough woman cannot do this: it is physically as well as morally impossible to her. Misogynists say it is too wise, and not cunning enough. So what does Miss Lucy do but turn round and make love to Captain Kenealy! And the cold virgin being at last by irrevocable fate driven to love-making, — I will say this for her, — she did not do it by halves. She felt quite safe here. The good-natured, hollow captain was fortified against passion by self-admiration. She said to herself, "Now, here is a peg with a military suit hanging to it; if I can only fix my eyes on this piece of wood and regimentals, and make warm love to it, the love that poets have dreamed and romances described, I may surely hope to disgust my two admirers, and then they will abandon me and despise me. Ah! I could love them if they would only do that."

Well, for a young lady that had never, to her knowledge, felt the tender passion, the imitation thereof which she now favored that little society with, was a wonderful piece of representation. Was Kenealy absent, behold Lucy uneasy and restless; was he present, but at a distance, her eye demurely devoured him. Was he near her, she wooed him with such a godlike mixture of fire, of tenderness, of flattery, of tact; she did so serpentinely approach and coil round the soldier and his mental cavity, that all the males in creation should have been permitted to defile past (like the beasts going into the ark), and view this sweet picture a moment, and infer how woman would be wooed, — and then go and do it.

Effect — Talboys and Hardie — mortified to the heart's core: thought they had altogether mistaken her character. "She is a lovesick fool."

On Bazalgette: "Ass! Dodd was worth a hundred of him!"

On Kenealy: made him twirl his mustache.

On Fountain: filled him with dismay.

There remained only one to be hoodwinked.

Scena.

A letter is brought in and handed to Captain Kenealy. He reads it and looks a little, a very little, vexed. Nobody else notices it.

Lucy. "What is the matter? Oh! what has occurred?"

Kenealy. "Nothing particulaa."

Lucy. "Don't deceive us: it is an order for you to join the horrid army." (Clasps her hands.) "You are going to leave us."

Kenealy. "No; it is from my tailaa. He waunts to be paed." (Glares astonished.)

Lucy. "Pay the creature, and never more employ him."

Kenealy. "Can't: haven't got the money. Uncle won't daie. The beggaa knows I can't pay him. That is the only reason why he duns."

Lucy. "He knows it: then what business has he to annoy you thus? Take my advice. Return no reply. That is not courteous. But when the sole motive of an application is impertinence, silent contempt is the course best befitting your dignity."

Kenealy (twirling his mustache). "Dem the fellaa. Shan't take any notice of him."

Mrs. Bazalgette (to Lucy in passing). "Do you think we are *all* fools?"

Ibi omnis effusus amor: for La Bazalgette undeceived her ally and Mr. Hardie, and the screw was put harder still on poor Lucy. She was no longer treated like an equal, but made for the first time to feel that her uncle and aunt were her elders and superiors, and that she was in revolt. All external signs of affection were withdrawn; and this was like docking a strawberry of its water. A young girl may have flashes of spirit, heroism even, but her mind is never steel from top to toe: it is sure to be wax in more places than one.

"Nobody loves me now that poor Mr. Dodd is gone," sighed Lucy. "Nobody ever will love me, unless I consent to sacrifice myself. Well, why not? I shall never love any gentleman as others of my sex can love. I will go and see Mrs. Wilson."

So she ordered out her captain, and rode to Mrs. Wilson, and made her captain hold her pony while she went in. Mrs. Wilson received her with a tenor scream of delight, that revived Lucy's heart to hear; and then it was nothing but one broad gush of hilarity and cordiality: showed her the house, showed her the cows, showed her the parlor at last, and made her sit down.

"Come, set ye down, set ye down, and let me have a downright good look at ye. It is not often I clap eyes on ye, or on anything like ye, for that matter. Aren't ye well, my dear?"

"Oh, yes."

"Are ye sure? Haven't ye ailed anything since I saw ye up at the house?"

"No, dear nurse."

"Then you are in care. Bless you! it is not the same face: to a stranger, belike, but not to the one that suckled you. Why, there is next door to a wrinkle on your pretty brow, and a little hollow under your eye, and your face is drawn like, and not half the color.

You are in trouble or grief of some sort, Miss Lucy; and who knows? mayhap you be come to tell it your poor old nurse. You might go to a worse part: ay! what touches you will touch me, my nursling dear; all one as if it was your own mother."

"Ah! *you* love me," cried Lucy. "I don't know why you love me so; I have not deserved it of you, as I have of others that look coldly on me. Yes, you love me, or you would not read my face like this. It is true; I am a little — oh, nurse, I am so unhappy!" And in a moment she was weeping and sobbing in Mrs. Wilson's arms.

The amazon sat down with her, and rocked to and fro with her as if she was still a child. "Don't check it, my lamb," said she; "have a good cry; never drive a cry back on your heart." And so Lucy sobbed and sobbed, and Mrs. Wilson rocked her.

When she had done sobbing she put up a grateful face and kissed Mrs. Wilson. But the good woman would not let her go: she still rocked with her, and said, "Ay, ay! it wasn't for nothing I was drawed so to go to your house that day. I didn't know you were there; but I was drawed. I WAS WANTED. Tell me all, my lamb; never keep grief on your heart; give it a vent; put a part on't on me; I do claim it: you will see how much lighter your heart will feel. Is it a young man?"

"Oh, no, no! I hate young men: I wish there were no such things. But for them no dissension could ever have entered the house. My uncle and aunt both loved me once, and oh! they were so kind to me. Yes; since you permit me, I will tell you all."

And she told her a part.

She told her the whole Talboys and Hardie part.

Mrs. Wilson took a broad and somewhat vulgar view of the distress.

"Why, Miss Lucy," said she, "if that is all, you can soon sew up their stockings. You don't depend on *them* any ways: you are a young lady of property."

"Oh, am I?"

"Sure. I have heard your dear mother say often as all her money was settled on you by deed. Why, you must be of age, Miss Lucy, or near it."

"The day after to-morrow, nurse."

"There, now: I knew your birthday could not be far off. Well, then, you must wait till you are of age, and then if they torment you, or put on you, 'good-morning,' says you; 'if we can't agree together, let's agree to part,' says you."

"What! leave my relations?"

"It is their own faults. Good friends before bad kindred! They only want to make a handle of you to get 'em rich son-in-laws. You pluck up a sperrit, Miss Lucy. There's no getting through the world without a bit of a sperrit. You'll get put upon at every turn else; and if they don't vally you in that house, why, off to another: y'ain't chained to their door, I do suppose."

"But, nurse, a young lady cannot live by herself: there is no instance of it."

"All wisdom had a beginning. 'Oh! shan't I spoil the pudding once I cut it?' quoth Jack's wife."

"What would people say?"

"What could they say? You come to me, which I am all the mother you have got left upon earth; and what scandal could they make out of that, I should like to know? Let them try it. But don't let me catch it atween their lips, or down they do go on the bare ground, and their caps in pieces to the winds of heaven." And she flourished her hand and a massive arm with a gesture free, inspired, and formidable.

"Ah, nurse! with you I should indeed feel safe from

every ill. But for all that I shall never go beyond the usages of society. I shall never leave my aunt's house."

"I don't say as you will. But I shall get your room ready this afternoon, and no later."

"No, nurse, you must not do that."

"Tell ee I shall. Then, whether you come or not, there 'tis. And when they put on you, you have no call to fret. Says you, 'There's my room a-waiting, and likewise my welcome, too, at Dame Wilson's: I don't need to stand no more nonsense here than I do choose,' says you. Dear heart! even a little foolish simple thought like that will help keep your sperrit up. You'll see else; you'll see."

"Oh, nurse, how wise you are! You know human nature."

"Well, I am older than you, miss, a precious sight; and if I hadn't got one eye open at this time of day, why, when should I, you know?"

After this, a little home-made wine forcibly administered, and then much kissing, and Lucy rode away revivified and cheered, and quite another girl. Her spirits rose so that she proposed to Kenealy to extend their ride by crossing the country to ——. She wanted to buy some gloves.

"Yaas," said the assenter; and off they cantered.

In the glove-shop whom should Lucy find but Eve Dodd! She held out her hand, but Eve affected not to observe, and bowed distantly. Lucy would not take the hint: after a pause she said, —

"Have you any news of Mr. Dodd?"

"I have," was the stiff reply.

"He left us without even saying good-by."

"Did he?"

"Yes, after saving all our lives. Need I say that we are anxious, in our turn, to hear of his safety? It was

still very tempestuous when he left us to catch the great ship, and he was in an open boat."

"My brother is alive, Miss Fountain, if that is what you wish to know."

"Alive? Is he not well? Has he met with any accident? any misfortune? Is he in the East Indiaman? Has he written to you?"

"You are very curious. It is rather late in the day. But if I am to speak about my brother, it must be at home, and not in an open shop. I can't trust my feelings."

"Are you going home, Miss Dodd?"

"Yes."

"Shall I come with you?"

"If you like. It is close by."

Lucy's heart quaked. Eve was so stern, and her eyes like basilisks'.

"Sit down, Miss Fountain, and I will tell you what you have done for my brother. I did not court this, you know. I would have avoided your eye if I could; it is your doing."

"Yes, Miss Dodd," faltered Lucy, "and I should do it again. I have a right to inquire after his welfare, who saved my life."

"Well, then, Miss Fountain, his saving your life has lost him his ship, and ruined him for life."

"Oh!"

"He came in sight of the ship, but the captain, that was jealous of him like all the rest, made all sail, and ran from him. He chased her, and often was near catching her, but she got clear out of the Channel, and my poor David had to come back disgraced, ruined for life, and broken-hearted. The Company will never forgive him for deserting his ship. His career is blighted, and all for one that never cared a straw for him. Oh, Miss

Fountain, it was an evil day for my poor brother when first he saw your face!" Eve would have said more, for her heart was burning with wrath and bitterness, but she was interrupted.

Lucy raised both her hands to heaven, and then, bowing her head, wept tenderly and humbly.

A woman's tears do not always affect another woman; but one reason is, they are very, very often no sign of grief or of any worthy feeling. The sex, accustomed to read the nicer shades of emotion, distinguishes tears of pique, tears of disappointment, tears of spite, tears various, from tears of grief. But Lucy's was a burst of regret so sincere, of sorrow and pity so tender and innocent, that it fell on Eve's hot heart like the dew.

"Ah, well!" she cried, "it was to be, it was to be. And I suppose I oughtn't to blame you. But all he does for you tells against himself, and that does seem hard; it isn't as if you and he were anything to one another, then I shouldn't grudge it so much. He has lost his character as a seaman."

"Oh, dear!"

"He valued it a deal more than his life. He was always ready to throw THAT away for you or anybody else. He has lost his standing in the *service.*"

"Oh!"

"You see he has no interest, like some of them. He only got on by being better and cleverer than all the rest. So the Company won't listen to any excuses from him, and, indeed, he is too proud to make them. He will never be captain of a ship now. What do I say? captain of a ship? Will he ever leave the bed of sickness he lies on?"

"The bed of sickness! Is he ill? Oh, what have I done?"

"Is he ill? What, do you think my brother is made

of iron? Out all night with you, then off, with scarce a wink of sleep; then two days and two nights chasing the Combermere, sometimes gaining, sometimes losing, and his credit and his good name hanging on it; then to beat back against wind, heart-broken, and no food on board."

"Oh, it is too horrible!"

"He staggered in to me white as a ghost. I got him to bed. He was in a burning fever. In the night he was light-headed, and all his talk was about you. He kept fretting lest you should not have got safe home. It is always so. We care the most for those that care the least for us."

"Is he in the Indiaman?"

"No, Miss Fountain, he is not in the Indiaman," cried Eve, her wrath suddenly rising again. "He lies there, Miss Fountain, in that room, at death's door, and you to thank for it."

At this stab Lucy uttered a cry like a wounded deer. But this cry was followed immediately by one of terror. The door opened suddenly, and there stood David Dodd, looking as white as his sister had said, but as usual not in the humor to succumb. "Me at death's port, did you say?" cried he, in a loud tone of cheerful defiance. "Tell that to the marines!"

CHAPTER XXII.

"I HEARD your voice, Miss Lucy. I would know it among a million, so I rigged myself directly. Why, what is the matter?"

"Oh, Mr. Dodd," sobbed Lucy, "she has told me all you have gone through, and I am the wicked, wicked cause!"

David groaned. "If I didn't think as much. I heard the mill going. — Ah, Eve, my girl, your jawing-tackle is too well hung. — Eve is a good sister to me, Miss Lucy, and, where I am concerned, let her alone for making a mountain out of a mole-hill. If you believe all she says, you are to blame. The thing that went to my heart was to see my skipper run out his stunsel booms the moment he saw me overhauling him; it was a dirty action, and him an old ship-mate. I am glad now I couldn't catch her, for, if I had, my foot would not have been on the deck two seconds before his carcass would have been in the Channel. — And pray, Eve, what has Miss Fountain got to do with that? the dirty lubber wasn't bred at her school, or he would not have served an old messmate so. Belay all that, and let's hear something worth hearing. — Now, Miss Lucy, you tell me. — O Lord, Eve, I say, isn't the thundering old dingy room bright now? — You spin me your own yarn, if you will be so good. Here you are safe and sound, the Lord be praised! But I left you under the lee of that thundering island. Wasn't very polite, was it? but you will excuse, won't you? Duty, you know; a seaman must leave his pleasure for his duty. Tell me, now, how did you come on? Was the

vessel comfortable? You would not sail till the wind fell. Had you a good voyage? A tiresome one, I am afraid. The sloop wasn't built for fast sailing. When did you land?"

To this fire of eager questions, Lucy was in no state to answer. "Oh, no, Mr. Dodd!" she cried, "I can't. I am choking. — Yes, Miss Dodd, I am the heartless, unfeeling girl you think me." Then with a sudden dart, she took David's hand and kissed it, and both her hands hiding her blushing face, she fled, and a single sob she let fall at the door was the last of her. So sudden was her exit, it left both brother and sister stupefied.

"Eve, she is offended," said David, with dismay.

"What if she is?" retorted Eve; "and — no, she is not offended; but I have made her feel at last, and a good job too. Why should she escape? she has done all the mischief. Come, you go to bed."

"Not I; I have been long enough on my beam-ends. And I have heard her voice, and I have seen her face, and they have put life into me. I shall cruise about the port. I have gone to leeward of John Company's favor; but there are plenty of coasting vessels. I may get the command of one. I'll try. A seaman never strikes his flag while there's a shot in the locker."

"Here, put me up, Captain Kenealy. Oh, do pray make haste; don't dawdle so!" Off cantered Lucy, and fanned her pony along without mercy. At the door of the house she jumped off without assistance, and ran to Mr. Bazalgette's study and knocked hastily; and that gentleman was not a little surprised when this unusual visitor came to his side with some signs of awe at having penetrated his sanctum, but evidently driven by an overpowering excitement. "Oh, Uncle Bazalgette! Oh, Uncle Bazalgette!"

"Why, what is the matter? Why, the child is ill. Don't gasp like that, Lucy. Come, pluck up courage, I am sure to be on your side, you know. What is it?"

"Uncle, you are always so kind to me! you know you are."

"Oh, am I? Noble old fellow!"

"Oh, don't make me laugh! Ha! ha! oh! oh! oh! ha! oh!"

"Confound it! I have sent her into hysterics; no, she is coming round. Ten thousand million plagues, has anybody been insulting the child in my house? They have. My wife, for a guinea."

"No! no! no! It is about Mr. Dodd."

"Mr. Dodd? oho!"

"I have ruined him."

"How have you managed that, my dear?"

Then Lucy, all in a flutter, told Mr. Bazalgette what the reader has just learned.

He looked grave. "Lucy," said he, "be frank with me. Is not Mr. Dodd in love with you?"

"I *will* be frank with *you*, dear uncle, because you are frank. Poor Mr. Dodd did love me once. But I refused him, and so his good-sense and manliness cured him directly."

"And now that he no longer loves you, you love him. That is so like you girls."

"Oh, no, uncle, how ridiculous! If I loved Mr. Dodd I could repair the cruel injuries I have done him with a single word. I have only to recall my refusal, and he — But I do not love Mr. Dodd. Esteem him I do, and he has saved my life; and is he to lose his health and his character and his means of honorable ambition for that? Do you not see how shocking this is, and how galling to my pride? Yes, uncle, I *have* been insulted. His sister

told me to my face it was an evil day for him when he and I first met. That was at Uncle Fountain's."

"Well, and what am I to do, Lucy?"

"Dear uncle, what I thought was, if you would be so kind as to use your influence with the Company in his favor: tell them that if he did miss his ship, it was not by a fault, but by a noble virtue; tell them that it was to save a fellow-creature's life, a young lady's life, one that did not deserve it from him: your own niece's; tell them it is not for your honor that he should be disgraced. Oh, uncle, you know what to say so much better than I do."

Bazalgette grinned, and straightway resolved to perpetrate a practical joke, and a very innocent one. "Well," said he, "the best way I can think of to meet your views will be, I think, to get him appointed to the new ship the Company is building."

Lucy opened her eyes, and the blood rushed to her cheek. "Oh, uncle, do I hear aright? a ship? are you so powerful? are you so kind? do you love your poor niece so well as all this? Oh, Uncle Bazalgette!"

"There is no end to my power," said the old man, solemnly; "no limit to my goodness, no bounds to my love for my poor niece. Are you in a hurry, my poor niece? shall we have his commission down to-morrow, or wait a month?"

"To-morrow? is it possible? Oh, yes. I count the minutes till I say to his sister, 'There, Miss Dodd, I have friends who value me too highly to let me lie under these galling obligations.' Dear, dear uncle, I don't mind being under them to *you*, because I love you" (kisses).

"And not Mr. Dodd?"

"No, dear. And that is the reason I would rather give him a ship, than — the only other thing that would make him happy. And really, but for your goodness, I

should have been tempted to — ha! ha! Oh! I am so happy, now. No; much as I admire my preserver's courage and delicacy, and unselfishness, and goodness, I don't love him; so but for this he MUST have been unhappy for life: and then I should have been miserable forever."

"Perfectly clear and satisfactory, my dear. Now, if the commission is to be down to-morrow, you must not stay here, because I have other letters to write to go by the same courier that takes my application for the ship."

"And do you really think I will go till I have kissed you, Uncle Bazalgette?"

"On a subject so important, I hardly venture to give an opin— Hallo! kissing, indeed! Why, it is like a young wolf flying at horse-flesh."

"Then that will teach you not to be kinder to me than anybody else is."

Lucy ran out radiant and into the garden. Here she encountered Kenealy, and coming on him with a blaze of beauty and triumph, fired a resolution that had smouldered in him a day or two.

He twirled his mustache, and popped briefly.

CHAPTER XXIII.

After the first start of rueful astonishment, the indignation of the just fired Lucy's eyes.

She scolded him well.

"Was this his return for all her late kindness?"

She hinted broadly at the viper of Æsop, and indicated more faintly an animal, that when one bestows the choicest favors on it, turns and rends one. Then becoming suddenly just to the brute creation, she said, "No, it is only your abominable sex that would behave so perversely, so ungratefully."

"Don't understand," drawled Kenealy; "I thought you would laike it."

"Well, you see, I don't laike it."

"You seemed to be getting rather spooney on me."

"Spooney! what is that? one of your mess-room terms, I suppose."

"Yaas; so I thought you waunted me to paup."

"Captain Kenealy, this subterfuge is unworthy of you. You know perfectly well why I distinguished you: others pestered me with their attachments and nonsense, and you spared me that annoyance: in return, I did all in my power to show you the grateful friendship I thought you worthy of. But you have broken faith, you have violated the clear though tacit understanding that subsisted between us, and I am very angry with you. I have some little influence left with my aunt, sir, and unless I am much mistaken, you will shortly rejoin the army, sir."

"What a boa! what a dem-d boa!"

"And don't swear; that is another foolish custom you gentlemen have: it is almost as foolish as the other. Yes, I'll tell my aunt of you, and then you will see."

"What a boa! How horrid spaiteful you are!"

"Well, I am rather vindictive. But my aunt is ten times worse, as her deserter shall find, — unless" —

"Unless whawt?"

"Unless you beg my pardon directly."

And at this part of the conversation Lucy was fain to turn her head away, for she found it getting difficult to maintain that severe countenance which she thought necessary to clothe her words with terror, and subjugate the gallant captain.

"Well, then, I apolojaize," said Kenealy.

"And I accept your apology, and don't do it again."

"I won't, pon honaa. Look heaa; I swear I didn't mean to affront yah; I don't waunt yah to mayrry me; I only poposed out of civility."

"Come, then, it was not so black as it appeared. Courtesy is a good thing: and if you thought that, after staying a month in a house, you were bound by etiquette to propose to the marriageable part of it, it is pardonable, only don't do it again, *please.*"

"I'll take caa — I'll take caa. I say, your tempaa is not — quite — what those other fools think it is — no, by Jove;" and the captain glared.

"Nonsense; I am only a little fiendish on this one point. Well, then, steer clear of it, and you will find me a good crechaa on every other."

Kenealy vowed he would profit by the advice.

"Then, there is my hand: we are friends again."

"You won't tell your aunt, nor the other fellaas?"

"Captain Kenealy, I am not one of your garrison ladies: I am a young person who has been educated;

your extra civility will never be known to a soul; and you shall not join the army but as a volunteer."

"Then hang me, Miss Fountain, if I wouldn't be cut in pieces to oblaige you: just you tray me and you'll faind if I am not very braight, I am a man of honah. If those other begaas annoy you, jaast tell me, and I'll parade 'em at twelve paces, dem me."

"I must try and find some less insane vent for your friendly feelings; and what can I do for you?"

"Yah couldn't go on pretending to be spooney on me, could yah?"

"Oh, no, no! What for?"

"I laike it; makes the other begaas misable."

"What worthy sentiments! it is a sin to balk them. I am sure there is no reason why I should not appear to adore you in public, so long as you let me keep my distance in private; but persons of my sex cannot do just what they would like. We have feelings that pull us this way and that, and, after all this, I am afraid I shall never have the courage to play those pranks again: and that is a pity, since it amused you, and teased those that tease me."

In short, the house now contained two "holy alliances" instead of one. Unfortunately for Lucy the hostile one was by far the stronger of the two; and even now it was preparing a terrible *coup*. This evening the storm that was preparing blew good to one of a depressed class, which cannot fail to gratify the just.

Mrs. Bazalgette. "Jane, come to my room a minute, I have something for you. Here is a cashmere gown and cloak; the cloak I want; I can wear it with anything; but you may have the gown."

"Oh, thank you, mum, it is beautiful, and a'most as good as new. I am sure, mum, I am very much obliged to you for your kindness."

"No, no, you are a good girl, and a sensible girl. By-the-by, you might give me your opinion upon something. Does Miss Lucy prefer any one of our guests? you understand me?"

"Well, mum, it is hard to say. Miss Lucy is as reserved as ever."

"Oh, I thought she might — humph!"

"No, mum, I do assure you, not a word."

"Well, but you are a shrewd girl. Tell me what you think: now, for instance, suppose she was compelled to choose between, say Mr. Hardie and Mr. Talboys; which would it be?"

"Well, mum, if you ask *my* opinion, I don't think Miss Lucy is the one to marry a fool: and by all accounts there's a deal more in Mr. Hardies's head than what there isn't in Mr. Talboysese's."

"You are a clever girl. You shall have the cloak as well, and if my niece marries, you shall remain in her service all the same."

"Thank you kindly, mum. I don't desire no better mistress, married or single; and Mr. Hardies is much respected in the town, and heaps o' money; so miss and me we couldn't do no better, neither of us. Your servant, mum, and thanks you for your bounty;" and Jane courtesied twice and went off with the spoils.

In the corridor she met old Fountain. "Stop, Jane," said he, "I want to speak to you."

"At your service, sir."

"In the first place, I want to give you something to buy a new gown," and he took out a couple of sovereigns. "Where am I to put them? in your breast pocket?"

"Put them under the cloak, sir," murmured Jane, tenderly; she loved sovereigns.

He put his hand under the heap of cashmere, and a quick little claw hit the coins and closed on them by mighty instinct.

"Now I want to ask your opinion. Is my niece in love with any one?"

"Well, Mr. Fountains, if she is, she don't show it."

"But doesn't she like one man better than another?"

"You may take your oath of that if we could but get to her mind."

"Which does she like best, this Hardie, or Mr. Talboys? come, tell me, now."

"Well, sir, you know Mr. Talboys is an old acquaintance, and like brother and sister at Font Abbey. I do suppose she have been a score of times alone with him for one with Mr. Hardies. That she should take up with a stranger and jilt an old acquaintance, now is it feasible?"

"Why, of course not. It was a foolish question; you are a young woman of sense. Here's a £5 note for you; you must not tell I spoke to you."

"Now, is it likely, sir? My character would be broken forever."

"And you shall be with my niece when she is Mrs. Talboys."

"I might do worse, sir, and so might she. He is respected far and wide, and a grand house, and a carriage-and-four, and everything to make a lady comfortable. Your servant, sir, and wishes you many thanks."

"And such as Jane was, all true servants are."

The ancients used to bribe the oracle of Delphi. Curious.

CHAPTER XXIV.

Lucy's twenty-first birthday dawned. But it was not to her the gay exultant day it is to some. Last night her uncle and aunt had gone a step farther, and, instead of kissing her ceremoniously, had evaded her. They were drawing matters to a climax; once of age, each day would make her more independent in spirit as in circumstances. This morning she hoped custom would shield her from unkindness for one day at least. But no, they made it clear there was but one road back to their smiles; their congratulations at the breakfast-table were cold and constrained; her heart fell; and long before noon on her birthday she was crying. Thus weakened she had to encounter a thoroughly-prepared attack. Mr. Bazalgette summoned her to his study at one o'clock, and there she found him, and Mrs. Bazalgette, and Mr. Fountain, seated solemnly in conclave. The merchant was adding up figures.

"Come now, business," said he. "Dick has added them up; his figures are in that envelope; break the seal and open it, Lucy. If his total corresponds with mine, we are right; if not, I am wrong, and you will all have to go over it with me till we are right." A general groan followed this announcement. Luckily, the sums total corresponded to a fraction.

Then Mr. Bazalgette made Lucy a little speech.

"My dear, in laying down that office, which your amiable nature has made so agreeable, I feel a natural regret on your account, that the property my colleague there, and I, have had to deal with on your account, has

not been more important. However, as far as it goes, we have been fortunate. Consols have risen amazingly, since we took you off land, and funded you. The rise in value of your little capital since your mother's death is calculated on this card. You have also some loose cash, which I will hand over to you immediately. Let me see, eleven hundred and sixty pounds, and five shillings. Write your name in full on that paper, Lucy."

He touched a bell; a servant came. He wrote a line, and folded it enclosing Lucy's signature.

"Let this go to Mr. Hardie's bank immediately. Hardie will give you three per cent. for your money. Better than nothing. You must have a check-book. He sent me a new one yesterday. Here it is: you shall have it. I wonder whether you know how to draw a check?"

"No, uncle."

"Look here, then. You note the particulars first on this counterfoil, which thus serves, in some degree, for an account-book. In drawing the check, place the sum in letters close to these printed words, and the sum in figures close to the £. For want of this precaution the holder of the check has been known to turn a £10 check into £110."

"Oh! how wicked!"

"No. Dexterous. Dexterity is the one virtue left in England; so we must be on our guard; especially in what we write with our name attached."

"I must say, Mr. Bazalgette, you are unwise to put such a sum as that into a young girl's hands."

"The young girl has been a woman an hour and ten minutes, and come into her property, movables, and cash, aforesaid."

"If you were her real friend, you would take care of her money for her, till she marries."

"The eighth commandment, my dear, the eighth commandment, and other primitive axioms; *suum cuique*, and such odd sayings; 'Him as keeps what isn't his'n, soon or late shall go to prison;' with similar apothegms. Total, let us keep the British merchant and the Newgate thief as distinct as the times permit. Fountain and Bazalgette, account squared; books closed; and I'm off."

"Oh, uncle! pray stay!" said Lucy. "When you are by me, rectitude and sense seem present in person, and I can lean on them."

"Lean on yourself; the law has cut your leading-strings; why patch 'em? it has made you a woman from a baby; rise to your new rank. Rectitude and sense are just as much wanted in the town of ——, where I am due, as they are in this house. Besides, sense has spoken uninterrupted for ten minutes; prodigious! so now it is nonsense's turn for the next ten hours." He made for the door, then suddenly returning he said, "I will leave a grain of sense, etc., behind me. What is marriage? Do you give it up? Marriage is a contract. Who are the parties? the papas and mammas, uncles and aunts? by George, you would think so to hear them talk. No, the contract is between two parties, and these two only. It is a printed contract. Anybody can read it, gratis. None but idiots sign a contract without reading it; none but knaves sign a contract, which, having read, they find they cannot execute. Matrimony is a mercantile affair; very well, then, import into it sound mercantile morality. Go to market; sell well; but d——n it all, deliver the merchandise as per sample; viz., a woman warranted to love, honor, and obey the purchaser. If you swindle the other contracting party in the essentials of the contract, don't complain when you are unhappy. Are shufflers entitled to happiness? and what are those who shuffle and prevaricate in a church

any better than those who shuffle and prevaricate in a counting-house ? " and the brute bolted.

" My husband is a worthy man," said Mrs. Bazalgette, languidly, " and makes one blush for him."

" Our good friend is a humorist," replied Fountain, good-humoredly, " and dearly loves a paradox ; " and they pooh-poohed him without a particle of malice.

Then Mrs. Bazalgette turned to Lucy, and hoped that she did her the justice to believe she had none but affectionate motives in wishing to see her speedily established.

" Oh, no, aunt ! " said Lucy. " Why should you wish to part with me ? I give but little trouble in your great house."

" Trouble, child ? you know you are a comfort to have in any house."

This pleased Lucy ; it was the first gracious word for a long time. Having thus softened her, Mrs. Bazalgette proceeded to attack her by all the weaknesses of her sex and age, and for a good hour pressed her so hard that the tears often gushed from Lucy's eyes, over her red cheeks. The girl was worn by the length of the struggle, and the pertinacity of the assault. She was as determined as ever to do nothing; but she had no longer the power to resist in words. Seeing her reduced to silence, and not exactly distinguishing between impassibility and yielding, Mrs. Bazalgette delivered the *coup-de-grace.*

" I must now tell you plainly, Lucy, that your character is compromised by being out all night with persons of the other sex. I would have spared you this ; but your resistance compels those who love you to tell you all. Owing to that unfortunate trip, you are in such a situation that you *must* marry."

" The world is surely not so unjust as all this," sighed Lucy.

"You don't know the world as I do," was the reply. "And those who live in it cannot defy it. I tell you plainly, Lucy, neither your uncle nor I can keep you any longer, except as an engaged person. And even that engagement ought to be a very short one."

"What, aunt? what, uncle? your house is no longer mine?" and she buried her head upon the table.

"Well, Lucy," said Mr. Fountain, "of course we would not have told you this yesterday. It would have been ungenerous. But you are now your own mistress; you are independent. Young persons in your situation can generally forget in a day or two a few years of kindness. You have now an opportunity of showing us whether you are one of that sort."

Here Mrs. Bazalgette put in her word.

"You will not lack people to encourage you in ingratitude; perhaps my husband himself. But if he does, it will make a lasting breach between him and me, of which you will have been the cause."

"Heaven forbid!" said Lucy with a shudder. "Why should dear Mr. Bazalgette be drawn into my troubles? He is no relation of mine; only a loyal friend, whom may God bless and reward for his kindness to a poor fatherless, motherless girl! Aunt, uncle, if you will let me stay with you I will be more kind, more attentive to you, than I have been. Be persuaded; be advised. If you succeeded in getting rid of me, you might miss me, indeed you might. I know all your little ways so well."

"Lucy, we are not to be tempted to do wrong," said Mrs. Bazalgette, sternly. "Choose which of these two offers you will accept. Choose which you please. If you refuse both, you must pack up your things, and go and live by yourself, or with Mr. Dodd."

"Mr. Dodd? why is his name introduced? was it necessary to insult me?" and her eyes flashed.

"Nobody wishes to insult you, Lucy. And I propose, madam, we give her a day to consider."

"Thank you, uncle."

"With all my heart; only, until she decides, she must excuse me if I do not treat her with the same affection as I used, and as I hope to do again. I am deeply wounded, and I never *could* feign."

"You need not fear me, aunt; my heart is turned to ice. I shall never intrude that love on which you set no value. May I retire?"

Mrs. Bazalgette looked to Mr. Fountain, and both bowed acquiescence. Lucy went out pale, but dry-eyed; despair never looked so lovely, nor carried its head more proudly.

"I don't like it," said Mr. Fountain; "I am afraid we have driven the poor girl too hard."

"What are you afraid of, pray?"

"She looked to me just like a girl who would go and take an ounce of laudanum; poor Lucy! she has been a good niece to me after all;" and the water stood in the old bachelor's eyes.

Mrs. Bazalgette tapped him on the shoulder, and said, archly, but with a tone that carried conviction: "She will take no poison. She will hate us for an hour: then she will have a good cry: to-morrow she will come to our terms: and this day next year she will be very much obliged to us for doing what all women like, forcing her to her good with a little harshness."

CHAPTER XXV.

Said Lucy as she went from the door, "Thank Heaven they have insulted me!"

This does not sound logical; but that is only because the logic is so subtle and swift. She meant something of this kind: "I am of a yielding nature: I might have sacrificed myself to retain their affection; but they have roused a vice of mine, my pride, against them, so now I shall be immovable in right, thanks to my wicked pride. Thank Heaven they have insulted me!" She then laid her head upon the bed and moaned, for she was stricken to the heart. Then she rose and wrote a hasty note, and putting it in her bosom, came down-stairs and looked for Captain Kenealy. He proved to be in the billiard-room, playing the spotted ball against the plain one. "Oh, Captain Kenealy, I am come to try your friendship: you said I might command you."

"Yaas!"

"Then *will* you mount my pony and ride with this to Mrs. Wilson, to that farm where I kept you waiting so long, and you were not angry as any one else would have been?"

"Yaas!"

"But not a soul must see it, or know where you are gone."

"All raight, Miss Fountain. Don't you be fraightened. I'm close as the grave, and I'll be there in less than haelf an hour."

"Yes: but don't hurt my dear pony either; don't beat him; and above all, don't come back without an answer."

"I'll bring you an answer in an hour and twenty minutes." The captain looked at his watch, and went out with a smartness that contrasted happily with his slowness of speech.

Lucy went back to her own room, and locked herself in, and with trembling hands began to pack up her jewels and some of her clothes. But when it came to this, wounded pride was sorely taxed by a host of reminiscences and tender regrets; and every now and then the tears suddenly gushed and fell upon her poor hands, as she put things out, or patted them flat, to wander in the world.

While she is thus sorrowfully employed, let me try and give an outline of the feelings that had now for some time been secretly growing in her, since without their co-operation she would never have been driven to the strange step she now meditated.

Lucy was a very unselfish and very intelligent girl. The first trait had long blinded her to something; the second had lately helped to open her eyes.

If ever you find a person quick to discover selfishness in others, be sure that person is selfish; for it is only the selfish who come into habitual collision with selfishness, and feel how sharp-pointed a thing it is. When unselfish meets selfish, each acts after his kind; unselfish gives way, selfish holds his course; and so neither is thwarted, and neither finds out the other's character.

Lucy, then, of herself, would never have discovered her relatives' egotism. But they helped her; and she was too bright not to see anything that was properly pointed out to her.

When Fountain kept showing and proving Mrs. Bazalgette's egotism; and Mrs. Bazalgette kept showing and proving Mr. Fountain's egotism; Lucy ended by seeing both their egotisms as clearly as either could desire;

and, as she despised egotism, she lost her respect for both these people, and let them convince her they were both persons against whom she must be on her guard.

This was the direct result of their mines and countermines — but not the only result. It followed indirectly, but inevitably, that the present holy alliance failed. Lucy had not forgotten the past; and to her this seemed not a holy, but an unholy, hollow, and empty alliance.

"They hate one another," said she; "but it seems they hate me worse, since they can hide their mutual dislike to combine against poor me."

Another thing; Lucy was one of those women who thirst for love, and though not vain enough to be always showing they think they ought to be beloved, have quite secret *amour propre* enough to feel at the bottom of their hearts, that they were sent here to that end, and that it is a folly and a shame not to love them more or less.

If ever Madame Ristori plays "Maria Stuarda" within a mile of you, go and see her. Don't chatter; you can do that at home: attend to the scene. The worst play ever played is not so unimproving as chit-chat. Then, when the scaffold is even now erected, and the poor queen, pale and tearful, palpitates in death's grasp, you shall see her suddenly illumined with a strange joy, and hear her say, with a marvellous burst of feminine triumph, —

"I have been *amata molto!*"

Uttered under a scaffold, as the Italian utters it, this line is a revelation of womanhood.

The English virgin of our humbler tale had a soul full of this feeling, only she had never learned to set the love of sex above other loves: but, mark you, for that very reason, a mortal insult to her heart from her beloved relatives was as mortifying, humiliating, and

unpardonable as is, to other high-spirited girls, an insult from their favored lover.

What could she do more than she had done to win their love? No! their hearts were inaccessible to her.

"They wish to get rid of me. Well, they shall. They refuse me their houses: well, I will show them the value of their houses to me. It was their hearts I clung to, not their houses."

A tap came to Lucy's door.

"Who is that? I am busy."

"Oh, miss!" said an agitated voice, "may I speak to you? — the captain!"

"What captain?" inquired Lucy, without opening the door.

"Knealys, miss."

"I will come out to you. Now. Has Captain Kenealy returned already?"

"La! No, miss. He haven't been anywhere as I know of. He had them about him as couldn't spare him."

"Something is the matter, Jane. What is it?"

Jane lowered her voice mysteriously. "Well, miss, the captain is — in trouble."

"Oh, dear! what has happened?"

"Well, the fact is, miss, the captain's — took."

"I cannot understand you. Pray speak intelligibly."

"Arrested, miss."

"Captain Kenealy arrested! Oh, Heaven! for what crime?"

"La, miss! no crime at all. Leastways not so considered by the gentry. He is only took in payment of them beautiful reg-mentals. However, black or red, he is always well put on; I am sure he looks just out of a bandbox; and I got it all out of one of the men as it's a army tailor, which he wrote again and again, and sent his bill,

and the captain he took no notice; then the tailor he sent him a writ; and the captain he took no notice; then the tailor he lawed him; but the captain he kep' on a-taking no more notice nor if it was a dog a-barking, and then a-putting all them ere barks one after another in a letter, and sending them by the post. So the end is, the captain is arrested; and now he behoves to attend a bit to what is a-going on around an' about him, as the saying is; and so he is waiting to pay you his respects, before he starts for Bridewell."

"My fatal advice! I ruin all my friends."

"'Keep dark!' says he; 'don't tell a soul, except Miss Fountain.'"

"Where is he? Oh!"

Jane offered to show her that, and took her to the stable-yard. Arriving with a face full of tender pity and concern, Lucy was not a little surprised to find the victim smoking cigars in the centre of his smoking captors. The men touched their hats, and Captain Kenealy said, "Isn't it a boa, Miss Fountain? they won't let me do your little commission. In London they will go anywhere with a fellow."

"London ve knows," explained the assistant; "but this here is full of hins and houts and folyidge."

"Oh, sir," cried Lucy to the best-dressed captor, "surely you will not be so cruel as to take a gentleman like Captain Kenealy to a prison?"

"Very sorry, marm; but we ave no hoption: takes 'em every day, don't we, Bill?"

Bill nodded.

"But, sir, as it is only for money, can you not be induced by — by — money"—

"Bill, lady's going to pay the debtancosts. Show her the ticket. Debt eighty pund, costs seven pund eighteen six."

"What! will you liberate him, if I pay you eighty-eight pounds?"

"Well, marm, to oblige you, we will; won't we, Bill?" He winked. Bill nodded.

"Then pray stay here a minute, and this shall be arranged to your entire satisfaction;" and she glided swiftly away, followed by Jane, wriggling.

"Quite the lady, Bill."

"Kevite. Capt'n is in luck. Hare ve to be at the vedding, capt'n?"

"Dem your impudence! I'll cross-buttock yah."

"Hold your tongue, Bill — queering a gent! Draw it mild, captain. Debtancosts ain't paid yet. Here they come though."

Lucy returned swiftly, holding aloft a slip of paper. "There, sir, that is a check for ninety pounds; it is the same thing as money, you are doubtless aware." The man took it, and inspected it keenly.

"Very sorry, marm, but can't take it. It is a lady's check."

"What, is it not written properly?"

"Beautiful, marm! But when we takes these beautiful-wrote checks to the bank, the cry is always, 'No assets.'"

"But Uncle Bazalgette said everybody would give me money for it."

"What! is Mr. Bazalgette your uncle, marm? Then, you go to him, and get his check in place of yours, and the captain will be free as the birds in the hair."

"Oh, thank you, sir!" cried Lucy, and the next minute she was in Mr. Bazalgette's study. "Uncle, don't be angry with me; it is for no unworthy purpose; only, don't ask me: it might mortify another; but *would* you give me a check of your own for mine? They will not receive mine."

Mr. Bazalgette looked grave and even sad; but he sat quietly down without a word, and drew her a check, taking hers, which he locked in his desk. The tears were in Lucy's eyes at his gravity and his delicacy. "Some day I will tell you," said she. "I have nothing to reproach myself, indeed, indeed."

"Make the rogue, or jade, give you a receipt," groaned Bazalgette.

"All right, marm, this time. Captain, the world it's hall before you where to chewse. But this is for ninety, marm," and he put his hand very slowly into his pocket.

"Do me the favor to keep the rest for your trouble, sir."

"Trouble's a pleasure, marm. It is not often we gets a tip for taking a gent. We are funk shin hairies as is not depreciated, marm; and the more genteel we takes 'em, the rougher they cuts; and the very women no more like you nor dark to light, but flies at us like ryal Bengal tigers, through taking of us for the creditors."

"Verehas ve hare honly servants of the ke veen," suggested No. 2, hashing his mistress's English.

"Stow your gab, Bill, and mizzle! Let the captain thank the lady. Good-day, marm."

"O my poor friend! what language! and my ill advice threw you into their company."

Captain Kenealy told her, in his brief way, that the circumstance was one of no import, except in so far as it had impeded his discharge of his duty to her. He then mounted the pony which had been waiting for him more than half an hour.

"But it is five o'clock," said Lucy: "you will be too late for dinner."

"Dinner be dem-d," drawled the man of action, and rode off like a flash.

"It is to be, then," said Lucy, and her heart ebbed.

It had ebbed and flowed a good many times the last hour or two.

Captain Kenealy reappeared in the middle of dinner. Lucy scanned his face, but it was like the outside of a copy-book, and she was on thorns. Being too late, he lost his place near her at dinner, and she could not whisper to him. However, when the ladies retired, he opened the door, and Lucy let fall a word at his feet, — "Come up before the rest!"

Acting on this order, Kenealy came up, and found Lucy playing sad tunes softly on the piano, and Mrs. Bazalgette absent. She was trying something on upstairs. He gave Lucy a note from Mrs. Wilson. She opened it, and the joyful color suffused her cheek, and she held out her hand to him; but, as she turned her head away mighty prettily at the same time, she did not see the captain was proffering her a second document; and she was a little surprised when, instead of a warm grasp, all friendship and no love, a piece of paper was shoved into her delicate palm. She took it, looked first at Kenealy, then at at, and was sore puzzled.

The document was in Kenealy's handwriting, and at first Lucy thought it must be intended as a mere specimen of calligraphy, for not only was it beautifully written, but in letters of various sizes. There were three gigantic vowels, I O U. There were little wee notifications of time and place, and other particulars of medium size. The general result was that Henry Kenealy O'd Lucy Fountain ninety pound for value received per loan. Lucy caught at the meaning. "But, my dear friend," said she innocently, "you mistake. I did not lend it you; I meant to give it you. Will you not accept it? Are we not friends?"

"Much oblaiged. Couldn't do it. Dishonable."

"Oh, pray do not let me wound your pride. I know

what it is to have one's pride wounded: call it a loan, if you wish. But, dear friend, what am I to do with this?"

"When you want the money, order your man of business to present it to me, and, if I don't pay, lock me up, for I shall deserve it."

"I think I understand. This is a memorandum — a sort of reminder."

"Yaas."

"Then, clearly I am not the person to whom it should be given. No, if you want to be reminded of this mighty matter, put this in your own desk. If it gets into mine, you will never see it again. I give you fair warning. There, hide it, quick; here they come!"

They did come, all but Mr. Bazalgette, who was at work in his study. Mr. Talboys came up to the piano, and said gravely, "Miss Fountain, are you aware of the fate of the lugger, of the boat we went out in?"

"Indeed, I am! I have sent the poor widow some clothes and a little money."

"I have only just been informed of it," said Mr. Talboys; "and I feel under considerable obligations to Mr. Dodd."

"The feeling does you credit."

"Should you meet him, will you do me the honor to express my gratitude to him?"

"I would, with pleasure, Mr. Talboys; but there is no chance whatever of my seeing Mr. Dodd. His sister is staying in Market Street, No. 80; and if you would call on them, or write to them, it would be a kindness, and I think they would both feel it."

"Humph!" said Talboys doubtfully. Here a servant stepped up to Miss Fountain: "Master would be glad to see you in his study, miss."

"I have got something for you, Lucy. I know what it is; so run away with it, and read it in your own room,

for I am busy." He handed her a long sealed packet. She took it, trembling, and flew to her own room with it, like a hawk carrying off a little bird to its nest.

She broke the enormous seal, and took out the enclosure. It was David Dodd's commission; he was captain of the Rajah, the new ship of eleven hundred tons burden.

While she gazes at it with dilating eye and throbbing heart, I may as well undeceive the reader. This was not really effected in forty-eight hours. Bazalgette only pretended that, partly out of fun, partly out of nobility. Ever since a certain interview in his study with David Dodd, who was a man after his own heart, he had taken a note, and had worked for him with "the Company;" for Bazalgette was one of those rare men who reduce performance to a certainty long before they promise. His promises were like pie-crust — made to be eaten, and eaten hot.

Lucy came out of her room, and, at the same moment, issued forth from hers Mrs. Bazalgette, in a fine new dress. It was that black glacé silk, divested of gloom by cheerful accessories, in which she had threatened to mourn eternally Lucy's watery fate. Fire flashed from the young lady's eyes at the sight of it. She went down to her uncle, muttering between her ivory teeth, "All the same. All the same." And her heart flowed. The next minute, at sight of Mr. Bazalgette, it ebbed. She came into his room, saying, "O Uncle Bazalgette! it is not to thank you: that I can never do worthily; it is to ask another favor. Do, pray, let me spend this evening with you! let me be where you are. I will be as still as a mouse. See, I have brought some work; or, if you *would* but let me help you. Indeed, uncle, I am not a fool! I am very quick to learn at the bidding of those I love. Let me write your letters for you, or fold them up, or direct them — or something. Do, pray."

"Oh, the caprices of young ladies! Well, can you write large and plain? — not you."

"I can *imitate* anything, or anybody."

"Imitate this hand, then. I'll walk and dictate; you sit and write."

"Oh, how nice."

"Delicious! The first is to — Hetherington. Now, Lucy, this is a dishonest, ungrateful, old rogue, who has made thousands by me, and now wants to let me into a mine with nothing in it but water. It would suck up twenty thousand pounds as easily as that blotting-paper will suck up our signatures."

"Heartless traitor! monster!" cried Lucy.

"Are you ready?"

"Yes!" and her eye flashed, and the pen was to her a stiletto.

Bazalgette dictated, "My dear sir" —

"What! to a cheat?"

"Custom, child. I'll have a stamp made. Besides, if we let them see we saw through them, they would play closer and closer."

"'My dear sir, — In answer to yours of date 11th instant — I regret to say — that circumstances prevent — my closing — with your obliging — and friendly offer.'"

They wrote eight letters; and Lucy's quick fingers folded up prospectuses; and her rays brightened the room. When the work was done, she clung round Mr. Bazalgette and caressed him, and seemed strangely unwilling to part with him at all; in fact, it was twelve o'clock, and the drawing-room empty, when they parted.

At one o'clock the whole house was dark, except one room, and both windows of that room blazed with light. And it happened there was a spectator of this phenomenon. A man stood upon the grass and eyed those lights as if they were the stars of his destiny.

It was David Dodd. Poor David! He had struck a bargain, and was to command a coasting vessel, and carry wood from the Thames to our southern ports. An irresistible impulse brought him to look, before he sailed, on the place that held the angel who had destroyed his prospects, and whom he loved as much as ever, though he was too proud to court a second refusal.

"She watches, too," thought David; "but it is not for me, as I for her."

At half-past one the lights began to dance before his wearied eyes; and, presently, David, weakened by his late fever, dozed off and forgot all his troubles, and slept as sweetly on the grass as he had often slept on the hard deck with his head upon a gun.

Luck was against the poor fellow. He had not been unconscious much more than ten minutes, when Lucy's window opened, and she looked out, and he never saw her. Nor did she see him, for, though the moon was bright, it was not shining on him; he lay within the shadow of a tree. But Lucy did see something: a light upon the turnpike road, about forty yards from Mr. Bazalgette's gates. She slipped cautiously down, a bandbox in her hand, and unbolting the door that opened on the garden, issued out, passed within a few yards of Dodd, and went round to the front, and finally reached the turnpike-road. There she found Mrs. Wilson, with a light covered cart and horse, and a lantern. At sight of her Mrs. Wilson put out the light, and they embraced. Then they spoke in whispers. "Come, darling, don't tremble; have you got much more?"

"Oh, yes, several things."

"Look at that, now! But, dear heart, I was the same at your age, and should be now, like enough. Fetch them all, as quick as you like. I am feared to leave Blackbird, or I'd help you down with 'em."

"Is there nobody with you to take care of us?"

"What do you mean? — men folk? Not if I know it."

"You are right. You are wise. Oh, how courageous!" And she went back for her finery. And certain it is she had more baggage than I should choose for a forced march.

But all has an end — even a female luggage-train; so at last she put out all her lights and came down, stepping like a fairy, with a large basket in her hand.

Now, it happened that by this time the moon's position was changed, and only a part of David lay in the shade; his head and shoulders glittered in broad moonlight; and Lucy, taking her farewell of a house where she had spent many happy days, cast her eyes all around to bid good-by, and spied a man lying within a few paces, and looking like a corpse in the silver sheen. She dropped her basket; her knees knocked together with fear, and she fled towards Mrs. Wilson. But she did not go far, for the features, indistinct as they were by distance and pale light, struck her mind, and she stopped and looked timidly over her shoulder. The figure never moved. Then, with beating heart, she went towards him slowly and so stealthily that she would have passed a mouse without disturbing it; and presently she stood by him and looked down on him as he lay.

And, as she looked at him lying there, so pale, so uncomplaining, so placid, under her windows, this silent proof of love, and the thought of the raging sea this helpless form had steered her through, and all he had suffered as well as acted for her, made her bosom heave, and stirred all that was woman within her. He loved her still, then; or why was he here? And then the thought that she had done something for him, too, warmed her heart still more towards him. And there was nothing for her to repel now, for he lay motionless;

there was nothing for her to escape, — he did not pursue her; nothing to negative, — he did not propose anything to her. Her instinct of defence had nothing to lay hold of; so, woman-like, she had a strong impulse to wake him, and be kind to him — as kind as she could be without committing herself. But, on the other hand, shy, trembling, virgin modesty, and shame that he should detect her making a midnight evasion, and fear of letting him think she loved him. While she stood thus, with something drawing her on, and something drawing her back, and palpitating in every fibre, Mrs. Wilson's voice was heard in low but anxious tones calling her. A feather turned the balanced scale. She must go. Fate had decided for her. She was called. Then the sprites of mischief tempted her to let David know she *had been* near him. She longed to put his commission into his pocket; but that was impossible; it was at the very bottom of her box. She took out her tablets, wrote the word "Adieu," tore out half the leaf, and, bending over David, attached the little bit of paper by a pin to the tail of his coat. If he had been ever so much awake he could not have felt her doing it; for her hand touching him, and the white paper settling on his coat, it was all done as lights a spot of down on still water from the bending neck of a swan.

"No, dear Mrs. Wilson, we must not go yet; I will hold the horse, and you must go back for me for something."

"I'm agreeable. What is it? Why, what is up? How you do pant!"

"I have made a discovery. There is a gentleman lying asleep there on the wet grass."

"Lack-a-daisy! Why, you don't say so!"

"It is a friend, and he will catch his death."

"Why, of course he will. He will have had a drop

too much, Miss Lucy. I'll wake him, and we will take him along home with us."

"Oh, not for the world, nurse! I would not have him see what I am doing, — oh, not for all the world!"

"Where is he?"

"In there, under the great tree."

"Well, you get into the cart, miss, and hold the reins." And Mrs. Wilson went into the grounds and soon found David. She put her hand on his shoulder, and he awoke directly, and looked surprised at Mrs. Wilson.

"Are you better, sir?" said the good woman. "Why, if it isn't the handsome gentleman that was so kind to me! Now, do ee go in, sir, do ee go in. You will catch your death o' cold." She made sure he was staying at the house.

David looked up at Lucy's windows. "Yes, I will go home, Mrs. Wilson; there is nothing to stay for now," and he accompanied her to the cart. But Mrs. Wilson remembered Lucy's desire not to be seen; so she said very loud, "I'm sure it's very lucky me and *my niece* happened to be coming home so late, and see you lying there. Well, one good turn deserves another. Come and see me at my farm — you go through the village of Harrowden, and anybody there will tell you where Dame Wilson do live. I *would* ask you to-night, but" — she hesitated, and Lucy let down her veil.

"No, thank you, not now. My sister will be fretting as it is. Good-morning;" and his steps were heard retreating, as Mrs. Wilson mounted the cart.

"Well, I should have liked to have taken him home and warmed him a bit," said the good woman to Lucy. "It is enough to give him the rheumatics for life. However, he is not the first honest man as has had a drop too much, and taken 'a rest without a feather-bed. Alack, miss! why, you are all of a tremble! What ails *you?*

I'm a fool to ask. Ah, well, you'll soon be at home, and nought to vex you. That is right: have a good cry, do! Ay, ay! *'tis* hard to be forced to leave our nest, but all places are bright where love abides. And there's honest hearts both here and there, and the same sky above us wherever we wander. And the God of the fatherless above all. And better a peaceful cottage than a palace full of strife." And with many such homely sayings the rustic consoled her nursling on their little journey, nor quite in vain.

CHAPTER XXVI.

Next morning the house was in an uproar. Servants ran to and fro; and the fish-pond was dragged at Mr. Fountain's request. But on these occasions everybody claims a right to speak; so Jane came into the breakfast-room, and said, "If you please, mum, Miss Lucy isn't in the pond, for she have taken a good part of her clothes and all her jewels."

This piece of common-sense convinced everybody on the spot except Mrs. Bazalgette. That lady, if she had decided on "making a hole in the water," would have sat on the bank first, and clapped on all her jewels, and all her richest dresses, one on the top of another. Finally, Mr. Bazalgette, who wore a sombre air, and had not said a word, requested everybody to mind their own business. "I have a communication from Lucy," said he; "and I do not at present disapprove the step she has taken."

All eyes turned with astonishment towards him, and the next moment all voices opened on him like a pack of hounds. But he declined to give them any further information: between ourselves, he had none to give. The little note Lucy left on his table merely begged him to be under no anxiety, and prayed him to suspend his judgment of her conduct till he should know the whole case. It was his strong good-sense which led him to pretend he was in the whole secret. By this means he substituted mystery for scandal, and contrived that the girl's folly might not be irreparable.

At the same time he was deeply indignant with her,

and, above all, with her hypocrisy in clinging round him and kissing him the very night she meditated flight from his house.

"I must find the girl out, and get her back," said he; and directly after breakfast he collected his myrmidons and set them to discover her retreat.

The outward frame-work of the holy alliance remained standing, but within it was dissolving fast. Each of the allies was even now thinking how to find Lucy, and make a separate peace. During the flutter, which now subsided, one person had done nothing but eat pigeon-pie.

It was Kenealy, captain of horse.

Now eating pigeon-pie is not, in itself, a suspicious act; but ladies are so sharp. Mrs. Bazalgette said to herself, "This creature alone is not a bit surprised (for Bazalgette is fibbing). Why is this creature not surprised? Humph! Captain Kenealy," said she in honeyed tones, "what would you advise us to do?"

"Advertaize," drawled the captain, as cool as a cucumber.

"Advertise? What, publish her name?"

"No! no names. I'll tell yah," and he proceeded to drawl out very slowly, from memory, the following advertisement. N.B. — The captain was a great reader of advertisements, and of little else.

"WANDERAA, RETARN!

"If L. F. will retarn — to her afflicted — relatives — she shall be received with open aams — all shall be forgotten and forgiven — and reunaited affection shall solace every wound."

"That is the style. It always brings 'em back. Dayvilish good paie. Have some moa?"

Mr. Fountain and Mrs. Bazalgette raised an outcry against the captain's advice, and when the table was calm again, Mrs. Bazalgette surprised them all by fixing her eyes on Kenealy, and saying quietly, "You know

where she is." She added more excitedly, "Now, don't deny it! On your honor, sir, have you no idea where my niece is?"

"Upon my honah, I have an idea."

"Then tell me."

"I'd rayther not."

"Perhaps you would prefer to tell me in private."

"No; prefer not to tell at all."

Then the whole table opened on him, and appealed to his manly feeling, his sense of hospitality, his humanity, to gratify their curiosity.

Kenealy stretched himself out from the waist downwards, and delivered himself thus, with a double infusion of his drawl: —

"See yah all dem-d first."

At noon on the same day, by the influence of Mrs. Bazalgette, the British army was swelled by Kenealy, captain of horse.

The whole day passed, and Lucy's retreat was not yet discovered. But more than one hunter was hemming her in.

The next day, being the second after her elopement with her nurse, at eleven in the forenoon, Lucy and Mrs. Wilson sat in the little parlor working. Mrs. Wilson had seen the poultry fed, the butter churned, and the pudding safe in the pot, and her mind was at ease for a good hour to come, so she sat quiet and peaceful. Lucy, too, was at peace. Her eye was clear, and her color coming back; she was not bursting with happiness, for there was a sweet pensiveness mixed with her sweet tranquillity; but she looked every now and then smiling from her work up at Mrs. Wilson, and the dame kept looking at her with a motherly joy caused by her bare presence on that hearth. Lucy basked in these maternal glances. At last she said, —

"Nurse."

"My dear?"

"If you had never done anything for me, still I should know you love me."

"Should ye now?"

"Oh, yes! there is the look in your eye that I used to long to see in my poor aunt's; but it never came."

"Well, Miss Lucy, I can't help it. To think it is really you setting there by my fire. I do feel like a cat with one kitten. You should check me, glaring you out o' countenance like that!"

"Check you! I could not bear to lose one glance of that honest, tender eye. I would not exchange one for all the flatteries of the world. I am so happy here, so tranquil, under my nurse's wing."

With this declaration came a little sigh.

Mrs. Wilson caught it. "Is there nothing wanting, dear?"

"No."

"Well, I do keep wishing for one thing."

"What is that?"

"Oh, I can't help my thoughts."

"But you can help keeping them from me, nurse."

"Well, my dear, I am like a mother, I watch every word of yours and every look; and it is my belief you blind yourself a bit: many a young maid has done that. I do judge there is a young man that is more to you than you think for."

"Who on earth is that, nurse?" asked Lucy, coloring.

"The handsome young gentleman."

"Oh, they are all handsome — all my pests."

"The one I found under your window, Miss Lucy. He wasn't in liquor, so what was he there for? and you know you were not at your ease till you had made me go and wake him and send him home, and you were all of

a tremble. I'd a widdy now, and can speak my mind to men-folk all one as women-folk; but I've been a maid, and I can mind how I was in those days. Liking did use to whisper me to do so and so; Shyness up and said, 'La! not for all the world, what ever'll he think?'"

"Oh, nurse! do you believe me capable of loving one who does not love me?"

"No. Who said he doesn't love you? What was he there for? I stick to that."

"Now, nurse dear, be reasonable; if Mr. Dodd loved me, would he go to sleep in my presence?"

"Eh, Miss Lucy! the poor soul was, maybe, asleep before you left your room."

"It is all the same. He slept while I stood close to him ever so long. Slept while I — if I loved anybody as these gentlemen pretend they love us, should I sleep while the being I adored was close to me?"

"You are too hard upon him. 'The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak.' Why, miss, we do read of Eutychus, how he snoozed off setting under Paul himself — up in the windy, and down a-tumbled. But parson says it wasn't that he didn't love religion, or why should Paul make it his business to bring him to life again, 'stead of letting un lie for a warning to the sleepy-headed ones. 'Twas a wearied body, not a heart cold to God,' says our parson."

"Now, nurse, I take you at your word. If Eutychus had been Eutycha, and in love with St. Paul, Eutycha would never have gone to sleep, though St. Paul preached all day and all night; and if Dorcas had preached instead of St. Paul, and Eutychus in love with her, he would never have gone to sleep, and you know it."

At this home thrust Mrs. Wilson was staggered; but the next moment her sense of discomfiture gave way to a broad expression of triumph at her nursling's wit.

"Eh, Miss Lucy!" cried she, showing a broadside of

great white teeth, in a rustic chuckle, "but ye've got a tongue in your head. Ye've sewed up my stocking, and 'tisn't many of 'em can do that." Lucy followed up her advantage.

"And, nurse, even when he was wide awake, and stood by the cart, no inward sentiment warned him of my presence — a sure sign he did not love me. Though I have never experienced love, I have read of it, and know all about it." *Justice des femmes!*

"Well, Miss Lucy, have it your own way; after all, if he loves you he will find you out."

"Of course he would, and you will see he will do nothing of the kind."

"Then I wish I knew where he was, I would pull him in at my door by the scruff of the neck."

"And then I should jump out at the window. Come, try on your new cap, nurse, that I have made for you; and let us talk about anything you like, except gentlemen. Gentlemen are a sore subject with me. Gentlemen have been my ruin."

"La, Miss Lucy!"

"I assure you they have; why, have they not set my uncle's heart against me, and my aunt's, and robbed me of the affection I once had for both? I believe gentlemen to be the pest of society; and oh! the delight of being here in this calm retreat, where love dwells, and no gentleman can find me. Ah! ah! oh! What is that?"

For a heavy blow descended on the door. "That is Jenny's *knock*," said Mrs. Wilson, dryly. "Come in, Jenny." The servant, thus invited, burst the door open as savagely as she had struck it, and announced with a knowing grin, "A GENTLEMAN — FOR MISS FOUNTAIN."

CHAPTER XXVII.

David and Eve sat together at their little breakfast, and pressed each other to eat; but neither could eat. David's night excursion had filled Eve with new misgivings. It was the act of a madman; and we know the fears that beset her on that head, and their ground. He had come home shivering, and she had forced him to keep his bed all that day. He was not well now, and bodily weakness, added to his other afflictions, bore his spirit down, though nothing could cow it.

"When are you to sail?" inquired Eve, sick-like.

"In three days: cargo won't be on board before."

"A coasting-vessel!"

"A man can do his duty in a coaster as well as a merchantman, or a frigate." But he sighed.

"Would to God you had never seen her!"

"Don't blame her, blame me! I had good advice from my little sister; but I was wilful. Never mind, Eve, I needn't to blush for loving her. She is worthy of it all."

"Well, think so, David, if you can." And Eve, thoroughly depressed, relapsed into silence. The postman's rap was heard, and, soon after, a long enclosure was placed in Eve's hand.

Poor little Eve did not receive many letters, and, sad as she was, she opened this with some interest; but how shall I paint its effect! She kept uttering shrieks of joy, one after another, at each sentence. And when she had shrieked with joy many times, she ran with the large paper round to David. "You are captain of the

Rajah! ah, the new ship! ah, eleven hundred tons! Oh, David! oh, my heart! oh, oh, oh!" and the poor little thing clasped her arms round her brother's neck, and kissed him again and again, and cried and sobbed for joy.

All men, and most women, go through life without once knowing what it is to cry for joy; and it is a comfort to think that Eve's pure and deep affection brought her such a moment as this in return for much trouble and sorrow.

David, stout-hearted as he was, was shaken as the sea and the wind had never yet shaken him. He turned red and white alternately, and trembled. "Captain of the Rajah! it is too good, it is too good! I have done nothing *for* it." And he was incredulous.

Eve was devouring the enclosure. "It is her doing," she cried: "it is all her doing."

"Whose?"

"Who do you think? I am in the air. I am in heaven. Bless her! Oh, God bless her for this! Never speak against cold-blooded folk before me; they have twice the principle of us hot ones: I always said so. She is a good creature! she is a true friend; and you accused her of ingratitude."

"That I never did."

"You did! Rajah — he, he, oh! and I defended her. Here, take and read that: is that a commission or not? Now, you be quiet, and let us see what she says. No, I can't: I cannot keep the nasty tears out of my eyes. Do take and read it, David: I'm blind."

David took the letter, kissed it, and read it out to Eve; and she kept crowing and shedding tears all the time:

DEAR MISS DODD, — I admire too much your true affection for your brother to be indifferent to your good opinion. Think of me as leniently as you can. Perhaps it gives me as much pleasure to be able to forward you the enclosed as the receipt

of it, I hope, may give you. It would, I think, be more wise, and certainly more generous, not to let Mr. Dodd think he owes in any degree to me that, which, if the world were just, would surely have been his long ago. Only, some few months hence, when it can do him no harm, I could wish him not to think his friend Lucy was ungrateful, or even cold in his service, who saved her life, and once honored her with so warm an esteem. But all this I confide to your discretion and your justice. Dear Miss Dodd, those who give pain to others do not escape it themselves, nor is it just they should: my insensibility to the merit of persons of the other sex has provoked my relatives: they have punished me for declining Mr. Dodd's inferiors, with a bitterness Mr. Dodd, with far more cause, never showed me. So you see, at each turn I am reminded of his superiority. The result is, I am separated from my friends, and am living all alone with my dear old nurse, at her farmhouse.

Since, then, I am unhappy, and you are generous, you will, I think, forgive me all the pain I have caused you, and will let me, in bidding you adieu, subscribe myself,

Yours affectionately,

LUCY FOUNTAIN.

"It is the letter of a sweet girl, David, with a noble heart; and she has taken a noble revenge of me for what I said to her the other day, and made her cry, like a little brute as I am. Why, how glum you look!"

"Eve," said David, "do you think I will accept this from her, without herself?"

"Of course you will. Don't be too greedy, David. Leave the girl in peace; she has shown you what she will do, and what she won't. One such friend as this is worth a hundred lovers. Give me her dear little note."

While Eve was perusing it, David went out, but soon returned, with his best coat on, and his hat in his hand. Eve asked with some surprise where he was going in such a hurry.

"To her."

"Well, David, now I come to read her letter quietly, it is a woman's letter all over; you may read it which way you like. What need had she to tell me she has just refused offers? And then she tells me she is all alone. That sounds like a hint the company of a friend might be agreeable. Brush your coat first, at any rate: there's something white on it: it is a paper: it is pinned on. Come here! Why, what is this? it is written on, 'Adieu.'" And Eve opened her eyes and mouth as well.

She asked him when he wore the coat last.

"The day before yesterday."

"Were you in company of any girls?"

"Not I."

"But this is written by a girl, and it is pinned on by a girl: see how it is quilted in: that's proof positive. Oh, oh, oh! look here! Look at these two 'adieus,'—the one in the letter, and this. They are the same, precisely the same. What, in heaven's name, is the meaning of this? Were you in her company that night?"

"No."

"Will you swear that?"

"No; I can't swear it, because I was asleep a part of the time: but, waking, in her company I was not."

"It is her writing, and she pinned it on you."

"How can that be, Eve?"

"I don't know; I am sure she did, though. Look at this 'adieu' and that; you'll never get it out of my head one hand wrote them both. You are so green; a girl would come behind you and pin it on you, and you never feel her."

While saying these words, Eve slyly repinned it on him without his feeling or knowing anything about it.

David was impatient to be gone, but she held him a minute to advise him.

"Tell her she must and shall. Don't take a denial.

If you are cowardly, she will be bold; but if you are bold and resolute, she will knuckle down; mind that, and don't go about it with such a face as that, as long as my arm. If she says 'No,' you have got the ship to comfort you. Oh, I am so happy!"

"No, Eve," said David; "if she won't give me herself, I'll never take her ship. I'd die a fore-top man sooner;" and, with these parting words, he renewed all his sister's anxiety. She sat down sorrowfully, and the horrible idea gained on her that there was mania in David's love for Lucy.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

David had one advantage over others that were now hunting Lucy. Mrs. Wilson had unwittingly given him pretty plain directions how to find her farmhouse; and as Eve, in the exercise of her discretion, or indiscretion, had shown David Lucy's letter, he had only to ride to Harrowden and inquire. But, on the other hand, his competitors were a few miles nearer the game, and had a day's start.

David got a horse and galloped to Harrowden; fed him at the inn, and asked where Mrs. Wilson's farm was. The waiter, a female, did not know, but would inquire. Meantime David asked for two sheets of paper, and wrote a few lines on each; then folded them both (in those days envelopes were not), but did not seal them. Mrs. Wilson's farm turned out to be only two miles from Harrowden, and the road easy to find. He was soon there; gave his horse to one of the farm-boys, and went into the kitchen and asked if Miss Fountain lived there. This question threw him into the hands of Jenny, who invited him to follow her, and, unlike your powdered and noiseless lackey, pounded the door with her fist, kicked it open with her foot, and announced him with that thunderbolt of language which fell so inopportunely on Lucy's self-congratulations.

The look Mrs. Wilson cast on Lucy was droll enough; but when David's square shoulders and handsome face filled up the doorway, a second look followed that spoke folios.

Lucy rose, and with heightened color, but admirable self-possession, welcomed David like a valued friend.

Mrs. Wilson's greeting was broad and hearty: and very soon after she had made him sit down, she bounced up, crying, "You will stay dinner now you be come: and I must see as they don't starve you." So saying, out she went: but looking back at the door, was transfixed by an arrow of reproach from her nursling's eye.

Lucy's reception of David, kind as it was, was not encouraging to one coming on David's errand, for there was the wrong shade of amity in it.

In times past, it would have cooled David with misgivings; but now he did not give himself time to be discouraged: he came to make a last desperate effort, and he made it at once. "Miss Lucy, I have got the Rajah, thanks to you."

"Thanks to me, Mr. Dodd? Thanks to your own high character and merit."

"No, Miss Lucy, you know better; and I know better; and there is your own sweet handwriting to prove it."

"Miss Dodd has showed you my letter?"

"How could she help it?"

"What a pity! how injudicious!"

"The truth is like the light: why keep it out? Yes; what I have worked for, and battled the weather so many years, and been sober and prudent, and a hard student at every idle hour, — that has come to me in one moment, from your dear hand."

"It is a shame."

"Bless you, Miss Lucy!" cried David, not noting the remark.

Lucy blushed, and the water stood in her eyes. She murmured softly, "You should not say Miss Lucy; it is not customary. You should say Lucy, or Miss Fountain."

This *apropos* remark by way of a female diversion.

"Then let me say, Lucy, to-day, for perhaps I shall never say that, or anything that is sweet to say, again. Lucy, you know what I came for?"

"Oh, yes! to receive my congratulations."

"More than that — a great deal. To ask you to go halves in the Rajah."

Lucy's eyebrows demanded an explanation.

"She is worth two thousand a year to her commander: and that is too much for a bachelor."

Lucy colored and smiled. "Why, it is only just enough for most of them to live upon."

"It is too much for me alone, under the circumstances," said David gravely: and there was a little silence.

"Lucy — I love you. With you the Rajah would be a godsend. She will help me keep you in the company you have been used to, and were made to brighten and adorn: but without you, I cannot take her from your hand — and to speak plain, I won't."

"Oh! Mr. Dodd!"

"No, Lucy, before I knew you, to command a ship was the height of my ambition, her quarter-deck my heaven on earth; and this is a clipper, I own it: I saw her in the docks. But you have taught me to look higher. Share my ship and my heart with me, and certainly the ship will be my child, and all the dearer to me that she came to us from her I love. But don't say to me, 'Me you shan't have, you are not good enough for that; but there is a ship for you in my place!' I wouldn't accept a star out of the firmament on those terms."

"How unreasonable! On the contrary, you should say, 'I am doubly fortunate: I escape a foolish, weak companion for life, and I have a beautiful ship.' But friendship such as mine for you was never appreciated; I do you injustice; you only talk like that to tease me and make me unhappy."

"Oh, Lucy, Lucy! did you ever know me" —

"There, now, forgive me! and own you are not in earnest."

"This will show you," said David sadly, and he took out two letters from his bosom. "Here are two letters to the secretary. In one I accept the ship with thanks, and offer to superintend her when her rigging is being set up: and in this one I decline her altogether, with my humble and sincere thanks."

"Oh, yes; you are very humble, sir," said Lucy. "Now — dear friend — listen to reason. You have others" —

"Excuse my interrupting you, but it is a rule with me never to reason about right and wrong: I notice that whoever does that, ends by choosing wrong. I don't go to my head to find my duty, I go to my heart; and what little manhood there is in me all cries out against me compounding with the woman I love, and taking a ship instead of her."

"How unkind you are! it is not as if I was under no obligations to you. Is not my life worth a ship? You said I was an angel."

"I can't see it so. It was a greater pleasure to me to save your life, as you call it, than it could be to you. I can't let that into the account. A woman is a woman, but a man is a man; and I will be under no obligation to you but one."

"What arrogance!"

"Don't you be angry! I'll love you and bless you all the same. But I am a man, and a man I'll die, whether I die captain of a ship or of a foretop. Poor Eve!"

"See how power tries people, and brings out their true character. Since you commanded the Rajah, you are all changed. You used to be submissive: now you must have your own way entirely; you will fling my poor ship in my face unless I give you — but this is really using force; yes, Mr. Dodd, this is using force. Somebody has told you that my sex yield when downright compul-

sion is used. It is true. And the more ungenerous to apply it." And she melted into a few placid tears.

David did not know this sign of yielding in a woman, and he groaned at the sight of them, and hung his head.

"Advise me what I had better do!"

To this singular proposal David, listening to the ill advice of the fiend generosity, groaned out, "Why should you be tormented, and made cry?"

"Why, indeed?"

"Nothing can change me. I advise you to cut it short."

"Oh! do you? very well. Why did you say 'poor Eve'?"

"Ah, poor thing! she cried for joy when she read your letter, but when I go back she will cry for grief," and his voice faltered.

"I *will* cut this short, Mr. Dodd: give me that paper."

"Which?"

"The wicked one, where you refuse my Rajah."

David hesitated.

"You are no gentleman, sir, if you refuse a lady — give it me this instant," cried Lucy, so haughtily and imperiously that David did not know her, and gave her the letter with a half-cowed air.

She took it, and with both her supple white hands tore it with insulting precision exactly in half. "There, sir; and there, sir" (exactly in four); "and there" (in eight with malicious exactness); "and there" and though it seemed impossible to effect another separation, yet the taper fingers and a resolute will reduced it to tiny bits. She then made a gesture to throw them in the fire, and thought better of it, and held them.

David looked on, almost amused at this zealous demolition of a thing he could so easily replace. He said,

part sadly, part doggedly, part apologetically, "I can write another."

"But you will not. Oh, Mr. Dodd; don't you see?"

He looked up at her eagerly. To his surprise, her haughty eagle look had gone, and she seemed a pitying goddess, all tenderness and benignity; only her mantling, burning cheek showed her to be woman.

She faltered in answer to his wild eager look, "Was I ever so rude before? what right have I to tear your letter, unless I" —

The characteristic full stop, and above all, the heaving bosom, the melting eye, and the red cheek were enough even for poor simple David. Heaven seemed to open on him. His burning kisses fell on the sweet hands that had torn his death-warrant. No resistance. She blushed higher, but smiled. His powerful arm curled round her. She looked a little scared, but not much. He kissed her sweet cheek: the blush spread to her very forehead at that, but no resistance. As the winged and rapid bird, if her feathers be but touched with a speck of bird-lime, loses all power of flight, so it seemed as if that one kiss, the first a stranger had ever pressed on Lucy's virgin cheek, paralyzed her eel-like and evasive powers; under it her whole supple frame seemed to yield as David drew her closer and closer to him, till she hid her forehead and wet eyelashes on his shoulder, and murmured —

"How could I let *you* be unhappy?"

Neither spoke awhile. Each felt the other's heart beat: and David drank that ecstasy of silent, delirious bliss, which comes to great hearts once in a life.

Had he not earned it?"

CHAPTER XXIX.

By some mighty instinct Mrs. Wilson knew when to come in. She came to the door just one minute after Lucy had capitulated; and turning the handle, but without opening the door, bawled some fresh directions to Jenny: this was to enable Lucy to smooth ruffled feathers, if necessary, and look Agnes. But Lucy's actual contact with that honest heart seemed to have made a change in her: instead of doing Agnes, she confronted (after a fashion of her own) the situation she had so long evaded.

"Oh, nurse!" she cried, and wreathed her arms round her.

"Don't cry, my lamb! I can guess."

"Cry?—oh, no! I would not pay him so poor a compliment. It was to say: 'Dear nurse, you must love Mr. Dodd as well as me now.'"

The dame received this indirect intelligence with hearty delight.

"That won't cost me much trouble," said she. "He is the one I'd have picked out of all England for my nursling. When a man is kind to an old woman, it is a good sign; but, la! his face is enough for me—who ever saw guile in such a face as that? Aren't ye hungry by this time? Dinner will be ready in about a minute."

"Nurse, can I speak to you a word?"

"Yes, sure."

It was to inquire whether she would invite Miss Dodd.

"She loves her brother very dearly, and it is cruel to separate them. Mr. Dodd will be nearly always here now—will he not?"

"You may take your davy of that."

In a very few minutes a note was written, and Mrs. Wilson's eldest son, a handsome young farmer, started in the covered cart with his mother's orders "to bring the young lady, willy-nilly."

The holy allies both openly scouted Kenealy's advice; and both slyly stepped down into the town and acted on it. Mr. Fountain then returned to Font Abbey. Their two advertisements appeared side by side, and exasperated them.

After dinner, Mrs. Wilson sent Lucy and David out to take a walk. At the gate they met with a little interruption — a carriage drove up; the coachman touched his hat, and Mrs. Bazalgette put her head out of the window.

"I came to take you back, love."

David quaked.

"Thank you, aunt! but it is not worth while, now."

"Ah!" said Mrs. Bazalgette, casting a venomous look on David; "I am too late, am I? Poor girl!"

Lucy soothed her aunt with the information that she was much happier now than she had been for a long time past. For this was a fencing-match beginning.

"May I have a word in private with my niece?" inquired Mrs. Bazalgette, bitterly, of David.

"Why not?" said David, stoutly; but his heart turned sick as he retired. Lucy saw the look of anxiety.

"Lucy," said Mrs. Bazalgette, "you left me because you are averse to matrimony, and I urged you to it; of course, with those sentiments, you have no idea of marrying that man there! I don't suspect you of such hypocrisy; and, therefore, I say come home with me, and you shall marry nobody: your inclination shall be free as air."

"Aunt," said Lucy, demurely, "why didn't you come yesterday? I always said, those who loved me best would find me first; and you let Mr. Dodd come first. I am so sorry."

"Then your pretended aversion to marriage was all hypocrisy — was it?"

Lucy informed her that marriage was a contract, and the contracting parties two, and no more — the bride and bridegroom; and that to sign a contract without reading it is silly, and meaning not to keep it is wicked. "So," said she, "I read the contract over in the prayer-book this morning, for fear of accidents."

My reader may, perhaps, be amused at this admission; but Mrs. Bazalgette was disgusted, and inquired, "What stuff is the girl talking now?"

"It is called common sense. Well, I find the contract is one I can carry out with Mr. Dodd, and with nobody else. I can love him a little; can honor him a great deal; and obey him entirely. I begin now. There he is; and if you feel you cannot show him the courtesy of making him one in our conversation, permit me to retire and relieve his solitude."

"Mighty fine; and if you don't instantly leave him and come home, you shall never enter my house again."

"Unless sickness or trouble should visit your house; and then you will send for me and I shall come."

Mrs. Bazalgette (to the coachman). "Home."

Lucy made her a polite obeisance, to keep up appearances before the servants and the farm people, who were gaping. She, whose breeding was inferior, flounced into a corner without returning it. The carriage drove off.

David inquired, with great anxiety, whether something had not been said to vex her?

"Not in the least," replied Lucy, calmly. "Little things and little people can no longer vex me. I have

great duties to think of, — and — a great heart to share them with me. Let us walk towards Harrowden; we may perhaps meet a friend."

Sure enough, just on this side Harrowden, they met the covered cart, and Eve in it, radiant with unexpected delight. The engaged ones — for such they had become in those two miles — mounted the cart, and the two men sat in front, and Eve and Lucy intertwined at the back, and opened their hearts to each other.

Eve. "And you have taken off the paper, I see."

Lucy. "What paper? It was no longer applicable."

CHAPTER XXX.

I HAVE already noticed that Lucy, after capitulation, laid down her arms gracefully and sensibly. And, being asked to name a very early day for the wedding, she opposed no childish delay to David's happiness; for the Rajah was to sail in six weeks and separate them. So the license was got, and the wedding-day came; and all Lucy's previous study of the contract did not prevent her from being deeply affected by the solemn words that joined her to David in holy matrimony. She bore up, though, stoutly; for her sense of propriety and courtesy forbade her to cloud a festivity. But when the post-chaise came, to convey bride and bridegroom on their little tour, and she had to leave Mrs. Wilson and Eve for a whole week, the tears would not be denied; and, to show how perilous a road matrimony is, these two risked a misunderstanding on their wedding-day: thus; Lucy, all alone in the post-chaise with David, dissolved; a perfect Niobe, gushing at short intervals. Sometimes a faint explanation gurgled out with the tears. "Poor Eve! her dear little face was working so, not to cry. Oh! oh! I should not have minded so much if she had cried right out." Then again, it was, "Poor Mrs. Wilson, I was only a week with her, for all her love. I have made a c—at's-p—paw of her, oh!"

Then again, "Uncle Bazalgette had never noticed us; he thinks me a h—hypocrite." But quite as often they flowed without any accompanying reason.

Now if David had been a poetaster, he would have said, "Why these tears? she has got me! Am I not

more than an equivalent to these puny considerations?" and all this salt water would have burnt into his vanity like liquid caustic. If he had been a poet he would have said, "Alas! I make her unhappy whom I hoped to make happy," and with this he would have been sad, and so prolonged her sadness, and perhaps ended by sulking. But David had two good things, a kind heart, and a skin not too thin; and such are the men that make women happy in spite of their weak nerves and craven spirits.

He gave her time; soothed her kindly; but did not check her weakness dead short.

At last my Lady Chesterfield said to him, penitently, "This is a poor compliment to you, Mr. Dodd;" and then Niobized again, partly, I believe, with regret that she was behaving so discourteously.

"It is very natural," said David, kindly; "but we shall soon see them all again, you know."

Presently she looked in his radiant face, with wet eyes, but a half smile. "You amaze me; you don't seem the least terrified at what we have done."

"Not a bit," cried David, like a cheerful horn; "I have been in worse peril than this, and so have you. Our troubles are all over; I see nothing but happiness ahead." He then drew a sunny picture of their future life, to all which she listened demurely; and, in short, he treated her little feminine distress as the summer sun treats a mist that tries to damp it. He soon dried her up, and when they reached their journey's end she was as bright as himself.

CHAPTER XXXI.

They had been married a week. A slight change, but quite distinct to an observer of her sex, shone in Lucy's face and manner. A new beauty was in her face — the bloom of wifehood. Her eyes, though not less modest, were less timid than before; and now they often met David's full, and seemed to sip affection at them. When he came near her, her lovely frame showed itself conscious of his approach. His queen, though he did not know it, was his vassal. They sat at table at a little inn, twenty miles from Harrowden, for they were on their return to Mrs. Wilson. Lucy went to the window, while David settled the bill. At the window it is probable she had her own thoughts; for she glided up behind David, and fanning his hair with her cool, honeyed breath, she said, in the tone of a humble inquirer seeking historical or antiquarian information, "I want to ask you a question, David:

"Are you happy *too?*"

David answered promptly, but inarticulately. So his reply is lost to posterity.

But conjecture survives.

One disappointment awaited Lucy at Mrs. Wilson's. There were several letters for both David and her; but none from Mr. Bazalgette. She knew by that, she had lost his respect. She could not blame him, for she saw how like disingenuousness and hypocrisy her conduct must look to him. "I must trust to time and opportunity," she said, with a sigh. She proposed to David to read her letters, and she would read his. He thought

this a droll idea; but nothing that identified him with his royal vassal came amiss. The first letter of Lucy's David opened was from Mr. Talboys: —

DEAR MADAM, — I have heard of your marriage with Mr. Dodd, and desire to offer both you and him my cordial congratulations.

I feel under considerable obligation to Mr. Dodd: and, should my house ever have a mistress, I hope she will be able to tempt you both to renew our acquaintance under my roof, and so give me once more that opportunity I have too little improved, of showing you both the sincere respect and gratitude, with which I am,

Your very faithful servant,

REGINALD TALBOYS.

Lucy was delighted with this note. "Who says it is nothing to have been born a gentleman?"

The second letter was from Reginald 2; and, if I only give the reader a fragment of it, I still expect his gratitude, all one as if I had disinterred a fragment of Orpheus or Tiresias.

Dear lucy.
It is very ungust of you to go and
Mary other peeple wen you
Promised me. but it is mr. dod.
So i dont so much mind i like
Mr. dod. he is a duc. and they all
Say i am too litle and jane says
Sailors always end by been
Drouned so it is only put off.
But you reely must keep your
Promise to me. wen i am biger
And mr. Dod is drouned. my
Ginnypigs ——

Here a white hand drew the pleasing composition out of David's hand and dropped it on the floor; two piteous,

tearful eyes were bent on him, and a white arm went tenderly round his neck to save him from the threatened fate.

At this sight, Eve pounced on the horrid scroll, and hurled it, by general acclamation, into the flames.

Thus that sweet infant revenged himself, and, like Samson, hit hardest of all at parting; in tears and flames vanished from written fiction; and, I conclude, went back to Gavarni.

There was a letter from Mr. Fountain — all fire and fury. She was never to write or speak to him any more. He was now looking out for a youth of good family to adopt and make a Fontaine of by act of Parliament, etc., etc. A fusillade of written thunderbolts.

There was another from Mrs. Bazalgette, written with cream — of tartar, and oil — of vitriol. She forgave her niece, and wished her every happiness it was possible for a young person to enjoy who had deceived her relations and married beneath her. She felt pity rather than anger; and there was no reason why Mr. and Mrs. Dodd should not visit her house, as far as she was concerned. But Mr. Bazalgette was a man of very stern rectitude; and, as she could not make sure that he would treat them with common courtesy after what had passed, she thought a temporary separation might be the better course for all parties.

I may as well take this opportunity of saying, that these two egotists carried out the promise of their respective letters. Mr. Fountain blustered for a year or two, and then showed manifest signs of relenting.

Mrs. Bazalgette kept cool, and wrote, in oils, twice a year to Mrs. Dodd.

"Et gardait tout doucement une haine irréconciliable."

Lucy had to answer these letters. In signing one of them she took a look at her new signature, and smiled.

"WHAT A DEAR QUAINT LITTLE NAME MINE IS," SAID SHE. "LUCY DODD," AND SHE KISSED THE SIGNATURE.

A MONTH AFTER MARRIAGE.

The Dodds took a house in London, and Eve came up to them. David was nearly all day superintending the ship, but spent the whole evening with his wife at home. Zeal always produces irritation. The servant that is anxious for his employer's interest is sure to get in a passion or two with the deadness, indifference, and heartless injustice of the genuine hireling. So David was often irritated and worried, and in hot water, while superintending the Rajah; but the moment he saw his own door, away he threw it all, and came into the house like a jocund sunbeam. Nothing wins a woman more than this, if she is already inclined in the man's favor. As the hour that brought David approached, Lucy's spirits and Eve's used both to rise by anticipation, and that anticipation his hearty genial temper never disappointed.

One day Lucy came to David for information. "David, there is a singular change in me. It is since we came to London. I used to be a placid girl: now I am a fidget."

"I don't see it, love."

"No: how should you, dear? It always goes away when you come. Now, listen! When five o'clock comes near, I turn hot and restless, and can hardly keep from the window; and if you are five minutes after your time, I really cannot keep from the window; and my nerves *se crispent*, and I cannot sit still, and it is very foolish: what does it mean? can you tell me?"

"Of course I can. I am just the same when people are unpunctual; it is inexcusable, and nothing is so vexing. I ought to be"—

"Oh! David, what nonsense! it is not that. Could I ever be vexed with my David?"

"Well, then, there is Eve, we'll ask her."

"If you dare, sir!" and Mrs. Dodd was carnation.

FOUR YEARS AFTER THE ABOVE EVENTS.

Two ladies were gossiping.

1*st Lady.* "What I like about Mrs. Dodd is that she is so truthful."

2*d Lady.* "Oh! is she?"

1*st Lady.* "Yes; she is, indeed! Certainly, she is not a woman that blurts out unpleasant things without any necessity: she is kind and considerate in word and deed; but she is always true. She has got an eye that meets you like a little lion's eye, and a tongue without guile."

Two *Qui his* were talking in Leadenhall Street.

1*st Qui hi.* "Well, so you are going out again."

2*d Qui hi.* "Yes; they have offered me a commissionership. I must make another lac for the children."

1*st Qui hi.* "When do you sail?"

2*d Qui hi.* "By the first good ship. I should like a good ship."

1*st Qui hi.* "Well, then, you had better go out with Gentleman Dodd."

2*d Qui hi.* "Gentleman Dodd? I should prefer Sailor Dodd. I don't want to founder off the Cape."

1*st Qui hi.* "Oh! but this is a first-rate sailor, and a first-rate fellow altogether."

2*d Qui hi.* "Then, why do you call him Gentleman Dodd?"

1*st Qui hi.* "Oh, because he is so polite. Won't

stand an oath within hearing of his quarter-deck; and particularly kind and courteous to the passengers, especially to the ladies. His ship is always full."

2*d Qui hi.* "Is it? then I'll go out with 'Gentleman Dodd.'"

TO MY MALE READERS.

I SEE with some surprise that there still linger in the field of letters, writers who think that, in fiction, when a personage speaks with an air of conviction, the sentiments must be the author's own. (When two of his personages give each other the lie, which represents the author? both?)

I invite you to shun this error: for instance, do not go and take Eve Dodd's opinion of my heroine, or Mrs. Bazalgette's, for mine.

Miss Dodd, in particular, however epigrammatic she may appear, is shallow: her criticism *peche par la base.* She talks as if young girls were in the habit of looking into their own minds, like little metaphysicians, and knowing all that goes on there: but, on the contrary, this is just what women in general don't do, and young women can't do.

No male will understand Lucy Fountain, who does not take "instinct" and "self-deception" into the account. But with those two clews you cannot, I think, fail to unravel her; and will, I hope, thank me in your hearts for leaving you something to study, and not clogging a languid narrative with a mass of comment and explanation.

CHRISTIE JOHNSTONE.

CHRISTIE JOHNSTONE.

CHAPTER I.

Viscount Ipsden, aged twenty-five, income eighteen thousand pounds per year, constitution equine, was unhappy! This might surprise some people; but there are certain blessings, the non-possession of which makes more people discontented than their possession renders happy.

Foremost among these are "Wealth and Rank:" were I to add "Beauty" to the list, such men and women as go by fact, not by conjecture, would hardly contradict me.

The fortunate man is he who, born poor, or nobody, works gradually up to wealth and consideration, and having got them, dies before he finds they were not worth so much trouble.

Lord Ipsden started with nothing to win; and naturally lived for amusement. Now nothing is so sure to cease to please, as pleasure, — to amuse, as amusement: unfortunately for himself he could not at this period of his life, warm to politics; so, having exhausted his London clique, he rolled through the cities of Europe in his carriage, and cruised its shores in his yacht. But he was not happy!

He was a man of taste, and sipped the arts and other knowledge, as he sauntered Europe round.

But he was not happy.

"What shall I do?" said *l'ennuyé.*

"Distinguish yourself," said one.

"How?"

No immediate answer.

"Take a prima donna over," said another.

Well, the man took a prima donna over, which scolded its maid from the Alps to Dover in the *lingua Toscana* without the *bocca Romana,* and sang in London without applause; because what goes down at La Scala does not generally go down at Il Teatro della Regina, Haymarket.

So, then my lord strolled into Russia; there he drove a pair of horses, one of whom put his head down and did the work; the other pranced and caprioled alongside, all unconscious of the trace. He seemed happier than his working brother; but the biped, whose career corresponded with this playful animal's, was not happy.

At length an event occurred that promised to play an adagio upon Lord Ipsden's mind. He fell in love with Lady Barbara Sinclair; and he had no sooner done this than he felt, as we are all apt to do on similar occasions, how wise a thing he had done.

Besides a lovely person, Lady Barbara Sinclair had a character that he saw would make him; and, in fact, Lady Barbara Sinclair was, to an inexperienced eye, the exact opposite of Lord Ipsden.

Her mental pulse was as plethoric as his was languid.

She was as enthusiastic as he was cool.

She took a warm interest in everything.

She believed that Government is a science, and one that goes with *copia verborum.*

She believed that, in England, Government is administered, not by a set of men whose salaries range from eighty to five hundred pounds a year, and whose names

are never heard, but by the First Lord of the Treasury, and other great men.

Hence she inferred, that it matters very much to all of us in whose hand is the rudder of that state vessel which goes down the wind of public opinion without veering a point, let who will be at the helm.

She also cared very much who was the new bishop. Religion, if not religion, theology, would be affected thereby.

She was enthusiastic about poets; imagined their verse to be some sort of clew to their characters, and so on.

She had other theories, which will be indicated by and by; at present it is enough to say that her mind was young, healthy, somewhat original, full of fire and faith, and empty of experience.

Lord Ipsden loved her! it was easy to love her.

First, there was not, in the whole range of her mind and body, one grain of affectation of any sort.

She was always, in point of fact, under the influence of some male mind or other, generally some writer. What young woman is not, more or less, a mirror? But she never imitated or affected; she was always herself, by whomsoever colored.

Then she was beautiful and eloquent; much too high-bred to put a restraint upon her natural manner, she was often more naïve, and even brusque, than your would-be aristocrats dare to be; but what a charming abruptness hers was!

I do not excel in descriptions, and yet I want to give you some carnal idea of a certain peculiarity and charm this lady possessed; permit me to call a sister art to my aid.

There has lately stepped upon the French stage a charming personage, whose manner is quite free from

the affectation that soils nearly all French actresses — Mademoiselle Madeleine Brohan! When you see this young lady play Mademoiselle La Seglière, you see high-bred sensibility personified, and you see something like Lady Barbara Sinclair.

She was a connection of Lord Ipsden's, but they had not met for two years, when they encountered each other in Paris just before the commencement of this "Dramatic Story," "Novel" by courtesy.

The month he spent in Paris, near her, was a bright month to Lord Ipsden. A by-stander would not have gathered, from his manner, that he was warmly in love with this lady, but for all that, his lordship was gradually uncoiling himself, and gracefully, quietly, basking in the rays of Barbara Sinclair.

He was also just beginning to take an interest in subjects of the day — ministries, flat paintings, controversial novels, Cromwell's spotless integrity, etc. — why not? They interested her.

Suddenly the lady and her family returned to England. Lord Ipsden, who was going to Rome, came to England instead.

She had not been five days in London, before she made her preparations to spend six months in Perthshire.

This brought matters to a climax.

Lord Ipsden proposed in form.

Lady Barbara was surprised; she had not viewed his graceful attentions in that light at all. However, she answered by letter his proposal which had been made by letter.

After a few of those courteous words a lady always bestows on a gentleman who has offered her the highest compliment any man has it in his power to offer any woman, she came to the point in the following characteristic manner:

The man I marry must have two things, virtues and vices — you have neither: you do nothing, and never will do anything but sketch and hum tunes, and dance and dangle: forget this folly the day after to-morrow, my dear Ipsden, and if I may ask a favor of one to whom I refuse that which would not be a kindness, be still good friends with her who will always be

Your affectionate *cousin*,

BARBARA SINCLAIR.

Soon after this effusion she vanished into Perthshire, leaving her cousin stunned by a blow which she thought would be only a scratch to one of his character.

Lord Ipsden relapsed into greater listlessness than before he had cherished these crushed hopes. The world now became really dark and blank to him. He was too languid to go anywhere or do anything; a republican might have compared the settled expression of his handsome, hopeless face, with that of most day-laborers of the same age, and moderated his envy of the rich and titled.

At last he became so pale as well as languid, that Mr. Saunders interfered.

Saunders was a model valet and factotum; who had been with his master ever since he left Eton, and had made himself necessary to him in their journeys.

The said Saunders was really an invaluable servant, and with a world of obsequiousness, contrived to have his own way on most occasions. He had, I believe, only one great weakness, that of imagining a beau-ideal of aristocracy, and then out-doing it in the person of John Saunders.

Now this Saunders was human, and could not be eight years with this young gentleman and not take some little interest in him. He was flunky, and took a great interest in him, as stepping-stone to his own greatness.

So when he saw him turning pale and thin, and reading one letter fifty times, he speculated and inquired what was the matter. He brought the intellect of Mr. Saunders to bear on the question at the following angle:

"Now if I was a young lord with twenty thousand pounds a year, and all the world at my feet, what would make me in this way?

"Why, the liver! Nothing else.

"And that is what is wrong with him, you may depend."

This conclusion arrived at, Mr. Saunders coolly wrote his convictions to Dr. Aberford, and desired that gentleman's immediate attention to the case. An hour or two later, he glided into his lord's room, not without some secret trepidation, no trace of which appeared on his face — he pulled a long histrionic countenance. "My lord," said he, in soft, melancholy tones, "your lordship's melancholy state of health gives me great anxiety; and with many apologies to your lordship, the doctor is sent for, my lord."

"Why, Saunders, you are mad; there is nothing the matter with me."

"I beg your lordship's pardon, your lordship is very ill, and Dr. Aberford sent for."

'You may go, Saunders."

"Yes, my lord. I couldn't help it; I've outstepped my duty, my lord, but I could not stand quiet and see your lordship dying by inches." Here Mr. S. put a cambric handkerchief artistically to his eyes, and glided out, having disarmed censure.

Lord Ipsden fell into a reverie.

"Is my mind or my body disordered? Dr. Aberford! — absurd! — Saunders is getting too pragmatical. The doctor shall prescribe for him instead of me; by Jove, that would serve him right." And my lord faintly

chuckled. "No! this is what I am ill of," — and he read the fatal note again. "I do nothing! — cruel, unjust," sighed he. "I could have done, would have done, anything to please her. Do nothing! nobody does anything now — things don't come in your way to be done as they used centuries ago, or we should do them just the same; it is their fault, not ours," argued his lordship somewhat confusedly; then leaning his brow upon the sofa he wished to die; for, at that dark moment, life seemed to this fortunate man an aching void; a weary, stale, flat, unprofitable tale: a faded flower; a ball-room after daylight has crept in, and music, motion, and beauty are fled away.

"Dr. Aberford, my lord."

This announcement, made by Mr. Saunders, checked his lordship's reverie.

"Insults everybody, does he not, Saunders?"

"Yes, my lord," said Saunders, monotonously.

"Perhaps he will me; that might amuse me," said the other.

A moment later the doctor bowled into the apartment, tugging at his gloves, as he ran.

The contrast between him and our poor rich friend is almost beyond human language.

Here lay on a sofa, Ipsden, one of the most distinguished young gentlemen in Europe; a creature incapable, by nature, of a rugged tone or a coarse gesture; a being without the slightest apparent pretension, but refined beyond the wildest dream of dandies. To him, enter Aberford, perspiring and shouting. He was one of those globules of human quicksilver one sees now and then, for two seconds; they are, in fact, two globules; their head is one, invariably bald, round, and glittering; the body is another in activity and shape, *totus teres atque rotundus;* and in fifty years they live five cent

uries. *Horum rex* Aberford — of these our doctor was the chief. He had hardly torn off one glove, and rolled as far as the third flower from the door on his lordship's carpet, before he shouted:

"This is my patient, lolloping in pursuit of health. — Your hand," added he. For he was at the sofa long before his lordship could glide off it.

"Tongue. — Pulse is good. — Breathe in my face."

"Breathe in your face, sir! how can I do that?" (With an air of mild doubt.)

"By first inhaling, and then exhaling in the direction required, or how can I make acquaintance with your bowels?"

"My bowels!"

"The abdomen, and the greater and lesser intestines. Well, never mind, I can get at them another way; give your heart a slap, so. — That's your liver. — And that's your diaphragm."

His lordship having found the required spot (some people that I know could not) and slapped it, the Aberford made a circular spring and listened eagerly at his shoulder-blade: the result of this scientific pantomime seemed to be satisfactory, for he exclaimed, not to say bawled:

"Hallo! here is a viscount as sound as a roach. Now, young gentleman," added he, "your organs are superb, yet you are really out of sorts; it follows you have the maladies of idle minds, love, perhaps, among the rest; you blush, a diagnostic of that disorder; make your mind easy; cutaneous disorders, such as love, etc., shall never kill a patient of mine, with a stomach like yours: so, now to cure you!" And away went the spherical doctor, with his hands behind him, not up and down the room, but slanting and tacking like a knight on a chessboard. He had not made many steps, before, turning

his upper globule, without affecting his lower, he hurled back, in a cold business-like tone, the following interrogatory:

"What are your vices?"

"Saunders," inquired the patient, "which are my vices?"

"M' lord, lordship hasn't any vices," replied Saunders, with dull matter-of-fact solemnity.

"Lady Barbara makes the same complaint," thought Lord Ipsden.

"It seems I have not any vices, Dr. Aberford," said he, demurely.

"That is bad; nothing to get hold of. What interests you then?"

"I don't remember."

"What amuses you?"

"I forget."

"What! no winning horse to gallop away your rents?"

"No, sir!"

"No opera girl, to run her foot and ankle through your purse?"

"No, sir! and I think their ankles are not what they were."

"Stuff! just the same, from their ankles up to their ears, and down again to their morals; it is your eyes that are sunk deeper into your head. Hum! no horses, no vices, no dancers, no yacht; you confound one's notions of nobility, and I ought to know them, for I have to patch them all up a bit just before they go to the deuce."

"But I have, Dr. Aberford."

"What!"

"A yacht! and a clipper she is, too."

"Ah! (Now I've got him.)"

"In the Bay of Biscay she lay a half a point nearer the wind than Lord Heavyjib."

"Oh, bother Lord Heavyjib, and his Bay of Biscay!"

"With all my heart; they have often bothered me."

"Send her round to Granton Pier, in the Firth of Forth."

"I will, sir."

"And write down this prescription." And away he walked again, thinking the prescription.

"Saunders," appealed his master.

"Saunders be hanged!"

"Sir!" said Saunders, with dignity, "I thank you."

"Don't thank me; thank your own deserts," replied the modern Chesterfield. "Oblige me by writing it yourself, my lord; it is all the bodily exercise you will have had to-day, no doubt."

The young viscount bowed, seated himself at a desk, and wrote from dictation: "DR. ABERFORD'S PRESCRIPTION:

"Make acquaintance with all the people of low estate who have time to be bothered with you; learn their ways, their minds, and, above all, their troubles."

"Won't all this bore me?" suggested the writer.

"You will see. Relieve one fellow-creature every day, and let Mr. Saunders book the circumstances."

"I shall like this part," said the patient, laying down his pen. "How clever of you to think of such things; may not I do two sometimes?"

"Certainly not; one pill per day. — Write, Fish the herring! (that beats deer-stalking.) Run your nose into adventures at sea; live on tenpence, and earn it; is it down?"

"Yes, it is down, but Saunders would have written it better."

"If he hadn't, he ought to be hanged," said the Aberford, inspecting the work. "I'm off; where's my

hat? oh, there; where's my money? oh, here. Now, look here; follow my prescription, and

> You will soon have *Mens sana in corpore sano;*
> And not care whether the girls say yes or say no.

Neglect it, and — my gloves; oh, in my pocket — you will be *blasé* and *ennuyé* and — (an English participle that means something as bad); God bless you!"

And out he scuttled, glided after by Saunders, for whom he opened and shut the street door.

Never was a greater effect produced by a doctor's visit: patient and physician were made for each other. Dr. Aberford was the specific for Lord Ipsden. He came to him like a shower to a fainting strawberry.

Saunders, on his return, found his lord pacing the apartment.

"Saunders," said he, smartly; "send down to Gravesend, and order the yacht to this place — what is it?"

"Granton Pier. Yes, my lord."

"And, Saunders, take clothes and books and violins and telescopes and things — and me — to Euston Square in an hour."

"Impossible, my lord," cried Saunders, in dismay. "And there is no train for hours."

His master replied with a hundred-pound note, and a quiet but wickedish look; and the prince of gentlemen's gentlemen had all the required items with him, in a special train, within the specified time, and away they flashed northwards.

CHAPTER II.

It is said that opposite characters make a union happiest; and perhaps Lord Ipsden, diffident of himself, felt the value to him of a creature so different as Lady Barbara Sinclair; but the lady, for her part, was not diffident of herself, nor was she in search of her opposite; on the contrary, she was waiting patiently to find just such a man as she was, or fancied herself, a woman.

Accustomed to measure men by their characters alone, and to treat with sublime contempt the accidents of birth and fortune, she had been a little staggered by the assurance of this butterfly that had proposed to settle upon her hand — for life.

In a word, the beautiful writer of the fatal note was honestly romantic, according to the romance of 1848, and of good society; of course she was not affected by hair tumbling back or plastered down forwards, and a rolling eye went no farther with her than a squinting one.

Her romance was stern, not sickly. She was on the lookout for iron virtues; she had sworn to be wooed with great deeds, or never won; on this subject she had thought much, though not enough to ask herself whether great deeds are always to be got at, however disposed a lover may be.

No matter; she kept herself in reserve for some earnest man, who was not to come flattering and fooling to her, but look another way and do exploits.

She liked Lord Ipsden, her cousin once removed, but

despised him for being agreeable, handsome, clever, and nobody.

She was also a little bitten with what she and others called the Middle Ages, in fact with that picture of them which Grub Street, imposing on the simplicity of youth, had got up for sale by arraying painted glass, gilt rags, and fancy, against fact.

With these vague and sketchy notices we are compelled to part, for the present, with Lady Barbara: but it serves her right; she has gone to establish her court in Perthshire, and left her rejected lover on our hands.

Journeys of a few hundred miles are no longer described.

You exchange a dead chair for a living chair; Saunders puts in your hand a new tale like this; you mourn the superstition of booksellers, which still inflicts uncut leaves upon humanity, though tailors do not send home coats with the sleeves stitched up, nor chambermaids put travellers into apple-pie beds as well as damp sheets. You rend and read, and are at Edinburgh, fatigued more or less, but not by the journey.

Lord Ipsden was, therefore, soon installed by the Firth side, full of the Aberford.

The young nobleman not only venerated the doctor's sagacity, but half admired his brusquerie and bustle; things of which he was himself never guilty.

As for the prescription, that was a Delphic Oracle. Worlds could not have tempted him to deviate from a letter in it.

He waited with impatience for the yacht; and, meantime, it struck him that the first part of the prescription could be attacked at once.

It was the afternoon of the day succeeding his arrival. The Fifeshire hills, seen across the Firth from his windows, were beginning to take their charming violet tinge,

a light breeze ruffled the blue water into a sparkling smile, the shore was tranquil, and the sea full of noiseless life, with the craft of all sizes gliding and dancing and courtesying on their trackless roads.

The air was tepid, pure, and sweet as heaven; this bright afternoon, nature had grudged nothing that could give fresh life and hope to such dwellers in dust and smoke and vice, as were there, to look awhile on her clean face and drink her honeyed breath.

This young gentleman was not insensible to the beauty of the scene. He was a little lazy by nature, and made lazier by the misfortune of wealth, but he had sensibilities; he was an artist of great natural talent; had he only been without a penny, how he would have handled the brush! And then he was a mighty sailor; if he had sailed for biscuit a few years, how he would have handled a ship!

As he was, he had the eye of a hawk for nature's beauties, and the sea always came back to him like a friend after an absence.

This scene, then, curled round his heart a little, and he felt the good physician was wiser than the tribe that go by that name, and strive to build health on the sandy foundation of drugs.

"Saunders! do you know what Dr. Aberford means by the lower classes?"

"Perfectly, my lord."

"Are there any about here?"

"I am sorry to say they are everywhere, my lord."

"Get me some" (*cigarette*).

Out went Saunders, with his useful graceful *empressement*, but an internal shrug of his shoulders.

He was absent an hour and a half; he then returned with a double expression on his face — pride at his success in diving to the very bottom of society, and contempt of what he had fished up thence.

He approached his lord mysteriously, and said, *sotto voce*, but impressively, "This is low enough, my lord." Then glided back, and ushered in, with polite disdain, two lovelier women than he had ever opened a door to in the whole course of his perfumed existence.

On their heads they wore caps of Dutch or Flemish origin, with a broad lace border, stiffened and arched over the forehead, about three inches high, leaving the brow and cheeks unencumbered.

They had cotton jackets, bright red and yellow, mixed in patterns, confined at the waist by the apron-strings, but bobtailed below the waist; short woollen petticoats, with broad vertical stripes, red and white, most vivid in color; white worsted stockings, and neat, though high-quartered shoes. Under their jackets they wore a thick spotted cotton handkerchief, about one inch of which was visible round the lower part of the throat.

Of their petticoats, the outer one was kilted, or gathered up towards the front, and the second, of the same color, hung in the usual way.

Of these young women, one had an olive complexion, with the red blood mantling under it, and black hair, and glorious black eyebrows.

The other was fair, with a massive but shapely throat, as white as milk; glossy brown hair, the loose threads of which glittered like gold, and a blue eye, which being contrasted with dark eyebrows and lashes, took the luminous effect peculiar to that rare beauty.

Their short petticoats revealed a neat ankle, and a leg with a noble swell; for Nature, when she is in earnest, builds beauty on the ideas of ancient sculptors and poets, not of modern poetasters, who with their airy-like sylphs and their smoke-like verses, fight for want of flesh in woman and want of fact in poetry as parallel beauties.

They are, my lads. — *Continuez!*

These women had a grand corporeal tract; they had never known a corset, so they were straight as javelins; they could lift their hands above their heads! — actually! Their supple persons moved as Nature intended; every gesture was ease, grace, and freedom.

What with their own radiance, and the snowy cleanliness and brightness of their costume, they came like meteors into the apartment.

Lord Ipsden, rising gently from his seat, with the same quiet politeness with which he would have received two princes of the blood, said, "How do you do?" and smiled a welcome.

"Fine! hoow's yoursel?" answered the dark lass, whose name was Jean Carnie, and whose voice was not so sweet as her face.

"What'n lord are ye?" continued she. "Are you a juke? I wad like fine to hae a crack wi' a juke."

Saunders, who knew himself the cause of this question, replied, *sotto voce*, "His lordship is a viscount."

"I didna ken't," was Jean's remark. "But it has a bonny soond."

"What mair would ye hae?" said the fair beauty, whose name was Christie Johnstone. Then appealing to his lordship as the likeliest to know, she added, "Nobeelity is just a soond itsel, I'm tauld."

The viscount finding himself expected to say something on a topic he had not attended much to, answered dryly, "We must ask the republicans, they are the people that give their minds to such subjects."

"And yon man," asked Jean Carnie, "is he a lord, too?"

"I am his lordship's servant," replied Saunders, gravely, not without a secret misgiving whether fate had been just.

"Na!" replied she, not to be imposed upon, "ye are statelier and prooder than this ane."

CHRISTIE JOHNSTONE.

"I will explain," said his master. "Saunders knows his value; a servant like Saunders is rarer than an idle viscount."

"My lord, my lord!" remonstrated Saunders, with a shocked and most disclamatory tone. "Rather!" was his inward reflection.

"Jean," said Christie, "ye hae muckle to laern. Are ye for herrin' the day, Vile Count?"

"No! are you for this sort of thing?"

At this, Saunders, with a world of *empressement*, offered the Carnie some cake that was on the table.

She took a piece, instantly spat it out into her hand, and with more energy than delicacy flung it into the fire.

"Augh!" cried she, "just a sugar and saut butter thegither; buy nae mair at yon shoep, Vile Count."

"Try this, out of Nature's shop," laughed their entertainer; and he offered them, himself, some peaches and things.

"Hech! a medi—cine!" said Christie.

"Nature, my lad," said Miss Carnie, making her ivory teeth meet in their first nectarine, "I didna ken whaur ye stoep, but ye beat the other confectioners, that div ye."

The fair lass, who had watched the viscount all this time as demurely as a cat cream, now approached him.

This young woman was the thinker; her voice was also rich, full, and melodious, and her manner very engaging; it was half advancing, half retiring, not easy to resist, or to describe.

"Noo," said she, with a very slight blush stealing across her face, "ye maun let me catecheeze ye, wull ye?"

The last two words were said in a way that would have induced a bear to reveal his winter residence.

He smiled assent. Saunders retired to the door, and

excluding every shade of curiosity from his face, took an attitude, half majesty, half obsequiousness.

Christie stood by Lord Ipsden, with one hand on her hip (the knuckles downwards), but graceful as Antinous, and began.

"Hoo muckle is the Queen greater than y' are?"

His lordship was obliged to reflect.

"Let me see — as is the moon to a wax taper, so is her Majesty the Queen to you and me, and the rest."

"An' whaur does the Juke [1] come in?"

"On this particular occasion, the Duke [2] makes one of us, my pretty maid."

"I see! Are na ye awfu' prood o' being a lorrd?"

"What an idea!"

"His lordship did not go to bed a spinning-jenny, and rise up a lord, like some of them," put in Saunders.

"Saunders," said the peer, doubtfully, "eloquence rather bores people."

"Then I mustn't speak again, my lord," said Saunders, respectfully.

"Noo," said the fair inquisitor, "ye shall tell me how ye came to be lorrds, your faemily?"

"Saunders!"

"Na! ye mauna flee to Sandy for a thing, ye are no a bairn, are ye?"

Here was a dilemma, the Saunders prop knocked rudely away, and obliged to think for ourselves.

But Saunders would come to his distressed master's assistance. He furtively conveyed to him a plump book, — this was Saunders's manual of faith; the author was Mr. Burke, not Edmund.

Lord Ipsden ran hastily over the page, closed the book, and said, "Here is the story.

"Five hundred years ago" —

[1] Buccleuch. [2] Wellington.

"Listen, Jean," said Christie; "we're gaun to get a boeny story. 'Five hundre' years ago,'" added she, with interest and awe.

"Was a great battle," resumed the narrator, in cheerful tones, as one larking with history, — "between a king of England and his rebels. He was in the thick of the fight" —

"That's the king, Jean, he was in the thick o't."

"My ancestor killed a fellow who was sneaking behind him, but the next moment a man-at-arms prepared a thrust at his Majesty, who had his hands full with three assailants."

"Eh! that's no fair," said Christie, "as sure as deeth."

"My ancestor dashed forward, and as the king's sword passed through one of them, he clove another to the waist with a blow."

"Weel done! weel done!"

Lord Ipsden looked at the speaker, her eyes were glittering, and her cheek flushing.

"Good Heavens!" thought he; "she believes it!" So he began to take more pains with his legend.

"But for the spearsman," continued he, "he had nothing but his body; he gave it, it was his duty, and received the death levelled at his sovereign."

"Hech! puir mon." And the glowing eyes began to glisten.

"The battle flowed another way, and God gave victory to the right; but the king came back to look for him, for it was no common service."

"Deed no!"

Here Lord Ipsden began to turn his eye inwards, and call up the scene. He lowered his voice.

"They found him lying on his back, looking death in the face.

"The nobles, by the king's side, uncovered as soon as

he was found, for they were brave men, too. There was a moment's silence; eyes met eyes, and said, This is a stout soldier's last battle.

"The king could not bid him live."

"Na! lad, King Deeth has ower strong a grrip."

"But he did what kings can do, he gave him two blows with his royal sword."

"Oh! the robber, and him a deeing mon."

"Two words from his royal mouth, and he and we were barons of Ipsden and Hawthorn Glen from that day to this."

"But the puir dying creature?"

"What poor dying creature?"

"Your forbear, lad."

"I don't know why you call him poor, madam; all the men of that day are dust; they are the gold dust, who died with honor.

"He looked round, uneasily, for his son, — for he had but one, — and when that son knelt, unwounded, by him, he said, 'Good-night, Baron Ipsden;' and so he died, fire in his eye, a smile on his lip, and honor on his name forever. I meant to tell you a lie, and I've told you the truth."

"Laddie," said Christie, half admiringly, half reproachfully, "ye gar the tear come in my een. Hech! look at yon lassie! how could you think t'eat plums through siccan a bonny story?"

"Hets," answered Jean, who had, in fact, cleared the plate, "I aye listen best when my ain mooth's stappit."

"But see, now," pondered Christie, "twa words fra a king, — thir titles are just breeth."

"Of course," was the answer. "All titles are. What is popularity? Ask Aristides and Lamartine: — the breath of a mob, — smells of its source, — and is gone

before the sun can set on it. Now the royal breath does smell of the rose and crown, and stays by us from age to age."

The story had warmed our marble acquaintance. Saunders opened his eyes, and thought, "We shall wake up the House of Lords some evening, — *we* shall."

His lordship then added, less warmly, looking at the girls, —

"I think I should like to be a fisherman." So saying, my lord yawned slightly.

To this aspiration the young fishwives deigned no attention, doubting, perhaps, its sincerity; and Christie, with a shade of severity, inquired of him how he came to be a Vile Count.

"A baron's no' a Vile Count, I'm sure," said she; "sae tell me how ye came to be a Vile Count."

"Ah!" said he, "that is by no means a pretty story, like the other; you will not like it, I am sure."

"Ay, will I, — ay, will I; I'm aye seeking knoewledge."

"Well, it is soon told. One of us sat twenty years on one seat, in the same house, so one day he got up a — viscount."

"Ower muckle pay for ower little wark."

"Now don't say that, I wouldn't do it to be emperor of Russia."

"Aweel, I hae gotten a heap out o' ye; sae noow I'll gang, since ye are no' for herrin'; come away, Jean."

At this their host remonstrated, and inquired, why bores are at one's service, night and day, and bright people are always in a hurry; he was informed, in reply, "Labor is the lot o' man. Div ye no ken that muckle? And abune a' o' women." [1]

[1] A local idea, I suspect. — C. R.

"Why, what can two such pretty creatures have to do, except to be admired?"

This question coming within the dark beauty's scope, she hastened to reply.

"To sell our herrin' — we hae three hundre' left in the creel."

"What is the price?"

At this question the poetry died out of Christie Johnstone's face, she gave her companion a rapid look, indiscernible by male eye, and answered, —

"Three a penny, sirr; they are no plenty the day," added she, in smooth tones that carried conviction.

(Little liar, they were selling six a penny everywhere.)

"Saunders, buy them all, and be ever so long about it; count them, or some nonsense."

"He's daft! he's daft! Oh, ye ken, Jean, an Ennglishman and a lorrd, twa daft things thegither, he could na' miss the road. Coont them, lassie."

"Come away, Sandy, till I count them till ye," said Jean.

Saunders and Jean disappeared.

Business being out of sight, curiosity revived.

"An' what brings ye here from London, if ye please?" recommenced the fair inquisitor.

"You have a good countenance; there is something in your face. I could find it in my heart to tell you, but I should bore you."

"De'el a fear! Bore me, bore me! whaat's thaat, I wonder?"

"What is your name, madam? Mine is Ipsden."

"They ca' me Christie Johnstone."

"Well, Christie Johnstone, I am under the doctor's hands."

"Puir lad! What's the trouble?" (solemnly and tenderly.)

"*Ennui!*" (rather piteously.)

"Yawn-we? I never heerd tell o't."

"Oh, you lucky girl," burst out he; "but the doctor has undertaken to cure me: in one thing you could assist me, if I am not presuming too far on our short acquaintance. I am to relieve one poor distressed person every day, but I mustn't do two; is not that a bore?"

"Gie's your hand, gie's your hand. I'm vexed for ca'ing you daft. Hech! what a saft hand ye hae. Jean, I'm saying, come here, feel this."

Jean, who had run in, took the viscount's hand from Christie.

"It never wroucht any," explained Jean.

"And he has bonny hair," said Christie, just touching his locks on the other side.

"He's a bonny lad," said Jean, inspecting him scientifically and point-blank.

"Ay, is he," said the other. "Aweel, there's Jess Rutherford, a widdy, wi' four bairns, ye meicht do waur than ware your siller on her."

"Five pounds to begin?" inquired his lordship.

"Five pund! Are ye made o' siller? Ten schell'n!"

Saunders was rung for, and produced a one-pound note.

"The herrin is five and saxpence: it's four and saxpence I'm awin ye," said the young fishwife, "and Jess will be a glad woman the neicht."

The settlement was effected, and away went the two friends saying, —

"Good-boye, Vile Count."

Their host fell into thought.

"When have I talked so much?" asked he of himself. "Dr. Aberford, you are a wonderful man; I like your lower classes amazingly."

"*Méfiez-vous,* Monsieur Ipsden!" should some mentor have said.

As the devil puts into a beginner's hands ace, queen, five trumps, to give him a taste for whist, so these lower classes have perhaps put forward one of their best cards to lead you into a false estimate of the strength of their hand.

Instead, however, of this, who should return to disturb the equilibrium of truth, but this Christina Johnstone. She came thoughtfully in, and said, —

"I've been taking a thoucht, and this is no what yon gude physeecian meaned: ye are no to fling your chaerity like a bane till a doeg; ye'll gang yoursel to Jess Rutherford; Flucker Johnstone, that's my brother, will convoy ye."

"But how is your brother to know me?"

"How? Because I'll gie him a sair, sair hiding, if he lets ye gang by."

She then returned the one-pound note, a fresh settlement was effected, and she left him.

At the door she said, "And I am muckle obleeged to ye for your story and your goodness."

Whilst uttering these words, she half kissed her hand to him, with a lofty and disengaged gesture, such as one might expect from a queen, if queens did not wear stays; and was gone.

When his lordship, a few minutes after, sauntered out for a stroll, the first object he beheld was an exact human square, a handsome boy, with a body swelled out, apparently to the size of a man's, with blue flannel, and blue cloth above it, leaning against a wall, with his hands in his pockets, — a statuette of *insouciance.*

This marine puff-ball was Flucker Johnstone, aged fourteen.

Stain his sister's face with diluted walnut-juice, as they make the stage gypsy and red Indian (two animals imagined by actors to be one), and you have Flucker's face.

A slight moral distinction remains, not to be so easily got over.

She was the best girl in the place, and he a baddish boy.

He was, however, as sharp in his way as she was intelligent in hers.

This youthful mariner allowed his lordship to pass him, and take twenty steps, but watched him all the time, and compared him with a description furnished him by his sister.

He then followed, and brought him to, as he called it.

"I daur say it's you I'm to convoy to yon auld faggitt!" said this baddish boy.

On they went, Flucker rolling and pitching and yawing to keep up with the lordly galley, for a fisherman's natural waddle is two miles an hour.

At the very entrance of Newhaven, the new pilot suddenly sung out, "Starboard!"

Starboard it was, and they ascended a filthy "close" or alley. They mounted a staircase which was out of doors, and, without knocking, Flucker introduced himself into Jess Rutherford's house.

"Here a gentleman to speak till ye, wife."

CHAPTER III.

The widow was weather-beaten and rough. She sat mending an old net.

"The gentleman's welcome," said she; but there was no gratification in her tone, and but little surprise.

His lordship then explained that, understanding there were worthy people in distress, he was in hopes he might be permitted to assist them, and that she must blame a neighbor of hers if he had broken in upon her too abruptly with this object. He then, with a blush, hinted at ten shillings, which he begged she would consider as merely an instalment, until he could learn the precise nature of her embarrassments, and the best way of placing means at her disposal.

The widow heard all this with a lack-lustre mind.

For many years her life had been unsuccessful labor: if anything ever had come to her, it had always been a misfortune; her incidents had been thorns, her events daggers.

She could not realize a human angel coming to her relief, and she did not realize it, and she worked away at her net.

At this Flucker, to whom his lordship's speech appeared monstrously weak and pointless, drew nigh, and gave the widow, in her ear, his version, namely, his sister's embellished. It was briefly this: "That the gentleman was a daft lord from England, who had come with the bank in his breeks, to remove poverty from Scotland, beginning with her. 'Sae speak loud aneuch, and ye'll no want siller,'" was his polite corollary.

His lordship rose, laid a card on a chair, begged her to make use of him, *et cetera ;* he then, recalling the oracular prescription, said, "Do me the favor to apply to me for any little sum you have a use for, and in return I will beg of you (if it does not bore you too much) to make me acquainted with any little troubles you may have encountered in the course of your life."

His lordship, receiving no answer, was about to go, after bowing to her, and smiling gracefully upon her.

His hand was on the latch, when Jess Rutherford burst into a passion of tears.

He turned with surprise.

"*My troubles,* laddie," cried she, trembling all over. "The sun wad set, and rise, and set again, ere I could tell ye a' the trouble I hae come through.

"Oh! ye need na vex yourself for an auld wife's tears; tears are a blessin', lad, I shall assure ye. Mony's the time I hae prayed for them, and could na hae them. Sit ye doon! sit ye doon! I'll no let ye gang fra my door till I hae thankit ye — but gie me time, gie me time. I canna greet a' the days of the week."

Flucker, *ætat.* 14, opened his eyes, unable to connect ten shillings and tears.

Lord Ipsden sat down, and felt very sorry for her.

And she cried at her ease.

If one touch of nature make the whole world kin, methinks that sweet and wonderful thing, sympathy, is not less powerful. What frozen barriers, what ice of centuries, it can melt in a moment!

His bare mention of her troubles had surprised the widowed woman's heart, and now she looked up, and examined his countenance ; it was soon done.

A woman, young or old, high or low, can discern and appreciate sensibility in a man's face, at a single glance.

What she saw there was enough. She was sure of sympathy. She recalled her resolve, and the tale of her sorrows burst from her like a flood.

Then the old fishwife told the young aristocrat how she had borne twelve children, and buried six as bairns; how her man was always unlucky; how a mast fell on him, and disabled him a whole season; how they could but just keep the pot boiling by the deep-sea fishing, and he was not allowed to dredge for oysters, because his father was not a Newhaven man. How, when the herring-fishing came, to make all right, he never had another man's luck; how his boat's crew would draw empty nets, and a boat alongside him would be gunwale down in the water with the fish. How, at last, one morning, the 20th day of November, his boat came in to Newhaven Pier without him, and when he was inquired for, his crew said, "He had stayed at home, like a lazy loon, and not sailed with them the night before." How she was anxious, and had all the public-houses searched, "For he took a drop now and then, nae wonder, and him aye in the weather." Poor thing! when he was alive she used to call him a drunken scoundrel to his face. How, when the tide went down, a mad wife, whose husband had been drowned twenty years ago, pointed out something under the pier, that the rest took for sea-weed floating — how it was the hair of her man's head, washed about by the water, and he was there, drowned without a cry or a struggle, by his enormous boots, that kept him in an upright position, though he was dead; there he stood, — dead — drowned by slipping from the slippery pier, close to his comrades' hands, in a dark and gusty night; how her daughter married, and was well-to-do, and assisted her; how she fell into a rapid decline, and died, a picture of health to inexperienced eyes. How she, the mother, saw and knew, and watched

the treacherous advance of disease and death; how others said gayly, "Her daughter was better," and she was obliged to say "Yes." How she had worked, eighteen hours a day, at making nets; how, when she let out her nets to the other men at the herring-fishing, they always cheated her, because her man was gone. How she had many times had to choose between begging her meal and going to bed without it, but, thank Heaven! she had always chosen the latter.

She told him of hunger, cold and anguish. As she spoke they became real things to him; up to that moment they had been things in a story-book. And as she spoke she rocked herself from side to side.

Indeed, she was a woman "acquainted with grief." She might have said, "Here I and sorrow sit! This is my throne, bid kings come and bow to it!"

Her hearer felt this, and therefore this woman, poor, old and ugly, became sacred in his eye; it was with a strange sort of respect that he tried to console her.

He spoke to her in tones gentle and sweet as the south wind on a summer evening.

"Madam," said he, "let me be so happy as to bring you some comfort. The sorrows of the heart I cannot heal; they are for a mightier hand; but a part of your distress appears to have been positive need; that, we can at least dispose of, and I entreat you to believe, that from this hour want shall never enter that door again. Never! upon my honor!"

The Scotch are icebergs, with volcanoes underneath; thaw the Scotch ice, which is very cold, and you shall get to the Scotch fire, warmer than any sun of Italy or Spain.

His lordship had risen to go. The old wife had seemed absorbed in her own grief; she now dried her tears.

"Bide ye, sirr," said she, "till I thank ye."

So she began to thank him, rather coldly and stiffly.

"He says ye are a lord," said she; "I dinna ken, an' I dinna care; but ye're a gentleman, I daur say, and a kind heart ye hae."

Then she began to warm.

"And ye'll never be a grain the poorer for the siller ye hae gien me; for he that giveth to the poor lendeth to the Lord."

Then she began to glow.

"But it's no your siller; dinna think it — na, lad, na! Oh, fine! I ken there's mony a supper for the bairns and me in yon bits metal; but I canna feel your siller as I feel your winsome smile — the drop in your young een — an' the sweet words ye gied me, in the sweet music o' your Soothern tongue, Gude bless ye!" (Where was her ice by this time?) "Gude bless ye! and I bless ye!"

And she did bless him; and what a blessing it was; — not a melodious generality, like a stage parent's, or papa's in a damsel's novel. It was like the son of Barak on Zophim.

She blessed him, as one who had the power and the right to bless or curse.

She stood on the high ground of her low estate, and her afflictions — and demanded of their Creator to bless the fellow-creature that had come to her aid and consolation.

This woman had suffered to the limits of endurance; yesterday she had said, "Surely the Almighty does na *see* me a' these years!"

So now she blessed him, and her heart's blood seemed to gush into words.

She blessed him by land and water.

She knew most mortal griefs, for she had felt them.

She warned them away from him one by one.

She knew the joys of life, for she had felt their want.

She summoned them one by one to his side.

"And a fair wind to your ship," cried she; "an' the storms aye ten miles to leeward o' her."

Many happy days, "an' weel spent," she wished him.

"His love should love him dearly, or a better take her place.

"Health to his side by day; sleep to his pillow by night."

A thousand good wishes came like a torrent of fire from her lips, with a power that eclipsed his dreams of human eloquence; and then, changing in a moment from the thunder of a Pythoness to the tender music of some poetess mother, she ended —

"An' O my boenny, boenny lad, may ye be wi' the rich upon the airth a' your days, AND WI' THE PUIR IN THE WARLD TO COME!"

His lordship's tongue refused him the thin phrases of society.

"Farewell for the present," said he, and he went quietly away.

He paced thoughtfully home.

He had drunk a fact with every sentence, and an idea with every fact.

For the knowledge we have never realized is not knowledge to us, — only knowledge's shadow.

With the banished duke, he now began to feel "we are not alone unhappy;" this universal world contains other guess sorrows than yours, viscount, *scilicet* than unvarying health, unbroken leisure, and incalculable income.

Then this woman's eloquence! bless me! he had seen folk murmur politely in the Upper House, and drone or hammer away at the Speaker down below, with more heat than warmth.

He had seen nine hundred wild beasts fed with peppered tongue, in a menagerie called *L'Assemblée Nationale.*

His ears had rung often enough, for that matter.

This time his heart beat.

He had been in the principal courts of Europe; knew what a handful of gentlefolks call "the world;" had experienced the honeyed words of courtiers; the misty nothings of diplomatists; and the innocent prattle of mighty kings.

But hitherto he seemed to have undergone gibberish and jargon:

Gibberish and jargon — Political!

Gibberish and jargon — Social!

Gibberish and jargon — Theological!

Gibberish and jargon — Positive!

People had been prating. Jess had spoken.

But it is to be observed he was under the double effect of eloquence and novelty; and so situated, we overrate things, you know.

That night he made a provision for this poor woman, in case he should die before next week.

"Who knows?" said he, "she is such an unlucky woman."

Then he went to bed, and whether from the widow's blessing, or the air of the place, he slept like a ploughboy.

Leaving Richard, Lord Ipsden, to work out the Aberford problem — to relieve poor people, one or two of whom, like the Rutherford, were grateful, the rest acted it to the life — to receive now and then a visit from Christina Johnstone, who borrowed every mortal book in his house, who sold him fish, invariably cheated him by the indelible force of habit, and then remorsefully undid the bargain, with a peevish entreaty that "he would not be so green, for there was no doing business

with him," — to be fastened upon by Flucker, who, with admirable smoothness and cunning, wormed himself into cabin-boy on board the yacht, and man-at-alms ashore; to cruise in search of adventures, and meet nothing but disappointments; to acquire a browner tint, a lighter step, and a jacket, our story moves for a while towards humbler personages.

CHAPTER IV.

Jess Rutherford, widow of Alexander Johnstone, for Newhaven wives, like great artists, change their conditions without changing their names, was known in the town only as a dour wife, a sour old carline. Whose fault?

Do wooden faces and iron tongues tempt sorrow to put out its snails' horns?

She hardly spoke to any one, or any one to her, but four days after the visit we have described, people began to bend looks of sympathy on her, to step out of their way to give her a kindly good-morrow. After a bit, fish and meal used to be placed on her table by one neighbor or another when she was out, and so on. She was at first behindhand in responding to all this, but by degrees she thawed to those who were thawing to her. Next, Saunders called on her, and showed her a settlement, made for her benefit, on certain lands in Lanarkshire. She was at ease for life.

The Almighty had seen her all these years.

But how came her neighbors to melt?

Because a nobleman had visited her.

Not exactly, dear novel-reader.

This was it.

That same night, by a bright fire lighting up snowy walls, burnished copper, gleaming candlesticks, and a dinner-table floor, sat the mistress of the house, Christie Johnstone, and her brother, Flucker.

She with a book, he with his reflections opposite her.

"Lassie, hae ye ony siller past ye?"

"Ay, lad, an' I mean to keep it!"

The baddish boy had registered a vow to the contrary, and proceeded to bleed his flint (for to do Christie justice the process was not very dissimilar). Flucker had a versatile genius for making money; he had made it in forty different ways, by land and sea, tenpence at a time.

"I hae gotten the life o' Jess Rutherford, till ye," said he.

"Giest then."

"I'm seeking half a crown for 't," said he.

Now he knew he should never get half a crown; but he also knew that if he asked a shilling he should be beaten down to fourpence.

So half a crown was his first bode.

The enemy, with anger at her heart, called up a humorous smile, and saying "an ye'll get saxpence," went about some household matter; in reality, to let her proposal rankle in Flucker.

Flucker lighted his pipe slowly, as one who would not do a sister the injustice to notice so trivial a proposition.

He waited fresh overtures.

They did not come.

Christie resumed her book.

Then the baddish boy fixed his eye on the fire, and said softly and thoughtfully to the fire, "Hech, what a heap o' troubles yon woman has come through."

This stroke of art was not lost. Christie looked up from her book, pretended he had spoken to her, gave a fictitious yawn, and renewed the negotiation with the air of one disposed to kill time.

She was dying for the story.

Commerce was twice broken off, and renewed by each power in turn.

At last the bargain was struck at fourteen pence.

Then Flucker came out, the honest merchant.

He had listened intently, with mercantile views.

He had the widow's sorrows all off pat.

He was not a bit affected himself, but by pure memory he remembered where she had been most agitated or overcome.

He gave it Christie, word for word, and even threw in what dramatists call "the business," thus:

"Here ye suld greet" —

"Here ye'll play your hand like a geraffe."

"Geraffe? That's a beast, I'm thinking."

"Na; it's the thing on the hill that maks signals."

"Telegraph, ye fulish goloshen!"

"Oo ay, telegraph! Geraffe's sunest said for a'."

Thus Jess Rutherford's life came into Christie Johnstone's hands.

She told it to a knot of the natives next day; it lost nothing, for she was a woman of feeling, and by intuition an artist of the tongue. She was the best *raconteur* in a place where there are a hundred, male and female, who attempt that art.

The next day she told it again, and then inferior narrators got hold of it, and it soon circulated through the town.

And this was the cause of the sudden sympathy with Jess Rutherford.

As our prigs would say, —

"Art had adopted her cause and adorned her tale."

CHAPTER V.

The fishing village of Newhaven is an unique place; it is a colony that retains distinct features; the people seldom intermarry with their Scotch neighbors.

Some say the colony is Dutch, some Danish, some Flemish. The character and cleanliness of their female costume points rather to the latter.

Fish, like horse-flesh, corrupts the mind and manners.

After a certain age, the Newhaven fishwife is always a blackguard, and ugly; but among the younger specimens, who have not traded too much, or come into much contact with larger towns, a charming modesty, or else slyness (such as no man can distinguish from it, so it answers every purpose), is to be found, combined with rare grace and beauty.

It is a race of women that the Northern sun peachifies instead of rosewoodizing.

On Sundays the majority sacrifice appearance to fashion; these turn out rainbows of silk, satin, and lace. In the week they were all grace, and no stays; now they seem all stays and no grace. They never look so ill as when they change their "costume" for "dress."

The men are smart fishermen, distinguished from the other fishermen of the Firth chiefly by their "dredging song."

This old song is money to them. Thus:

Dredging is practically very stiff rowing for ten hours.

Now both the Newhaven men, and their rivals, are agreed that this song lifts them through more work than untuned fishermen can manage.

I have heard the song, and seen the work done to it; and incline to think it helps the oar, not only by keeping the time true, and the spirit alive, but also by its favorable action on the lungs. It is sung in a peculiar way: the sound is, as it were, expelled from the chest in a sort of musical ejaculations; and the like, we know, was done by the ancient gymnasts, and is done by French bakers, in lifting their enormous dough, and by our paviors.

The song, in itself, does not contain above seventy stock verses, but these perennial lines are a nucleus, round which the men improvise the topics of the day, giving, I know not for what reason, the preference to such as verge upon indelicacy.

The men and women are musical and narrative; three out of four can sing a song or tell a story, and they omit few opportunities.

Males and females suck whiskey like milk, and are quarrelsome in proportion; the men fight (round handed), the women fleicht or scold, in the form of a teapot, — the handle fixed and the spout sawing the air.

A singular custom prevails here.

The maidens have only one sweetheart apiece!

So the whole town is in pairs.

The courting is all done on Saturday night, by the lady's fire. It is hard to keep out of a groove in which all the town is running; and the Johnstone had possessed, as mere property — a lad!

She was so wealthy that few of them could pretend to aspire to her, so she selected for her chattel a young man called Willy Liston; a youth of an unhappy turn; he contributed nothing to hilarity, his face was a kill-joy, nobody liked him; for this female reason Christie distinguished him.

He found a divine supper every Saturday night, in her house: he ate, and sighed! Christie fed him, and laughed at him.

Flucker ditto.

As she neither fed nor laughed at any other man, some twenty were bitterly jealous of Willy Liston, and this gave the blighted youth a cheerful moment or two.

But the bright alliance received a check some months before our tale.

Christie was *helluo librorum!* and like others who have that taste, and can only gratify it in the interval of manual exercise, she read very intensely in her hours of study. A book absorbed her. She was like a leech on these occasions, *non missura cutem:* even Jean Carnie, her coadjutor or "neebor," as they call it, found it best to keep out of her way till the book was sucked.

One Saturday night Willy Liston's evil star ordained that a gentleman of French origin and Spanish dress, called Gil Blas, should be the Johnstone's companion.

Willy Liston arrived.

Christie, who had bolted the door, told him from the window, civilly enough, but decidedly, "She would excuse his company, that night."

"Vara weel," said Willy, and departed.

Next Saturday — no Willy came.

Ditto the next. Willy was waiting the *amende.*

Christie forgot to make it.

One day she was passing the boats, Willy beckoned her mysteriously; he led her to his boat, which was called the "Christie Johnstone;" by the boat's side was a paint-pot and brush.

They had not supped together for five Saturdays.

Ergo, Mr. Liston had painted out the four first letters of "Christie;" he now proceeded to paint out the fifth, giving her to understand, that if she allowed the whole name to go, a letter every blank Saturday, her image would be gradually, but effectually, obliterated from the heart Listonian.

My reader has done, what Liston did not, anticipate her answer. She recommended him, whilst his hand was in, to paint out the entire name, and with white paint and a smaller brush, to substitute some other female appellation. So saying, she tripped off.

Mr. Liston on this was guilty of the following inconsistency; he pressed the paint carefully out of the brush into the pot: having thus economized his material, he hurled the pot which contained his economy, at "tie Johnstone," he then adjourned to the "Peacock," and "away at once with love and reason."

Thenceforth, when men asked who was Christie Johnstone's lad, the answer used to be, "She's seeking ane." *Quelle horreur!*

Newhaven doesn't know everything, but my intelligent reader suspects, and if confirming his suspicions can reconcile him to our facts, it will soon be done.

But he must come with us to Edinburgh; it's only three miles.

CHAPTER VI.

A LITTLE band of painters came into Edinburgh from a professional walk. Three were of Edinburgh: Groove, aged fifty; Jones and Hyacinth, young; the latter long-haired.

With them was a young Englishman, the leader of the expedition — Charles Gatty.

His step was elastic, and his manner wonderfully animated, without loudness.

"A bright day," said he. "The sun forgot where he was, and shone; everything was in favor of art."

"Oh dear, no," replied old Groove, "not where I was."

"Why, what was the matter?"

"The flies kept buzzing and biting, and sticking in the work: that's the worst of out o' doors!"

"The flies! is that all? Swear the spiders in special constables next time," cried Gatty. "We shall win the day:" and light shot into his hazel eye.

"The world will not always put up with the humbugs of the brush, who, to imitate Nature, turn their back on her. Paint an out-o'-door scene in-doors! I swear by the sun it's a lie! the one stupid, impudent lie, that glitters amongst the lies of vulgar art, like Satan amongst Belial, Mammon, and all those beggars.

"Now look here; the barren outlines of a scene must be looked at, to be done; hence the sketching system slop-sellers of the Academy! but the million delicacies of light, shade, and color, can be trusted to memory, can they?"

"It's a lie big enough to shake the earth out of her

course; if any part of the work could be trusted to memory or imagination, it happens to be the bare outlines, and they can't. The million subtleties of light and color; learn them by heart, and say them off on canvas! the highest angel in the sky must have his eye upon them, and look devilish sharp, too, or he shan't paint them: I give him Charles Gatty's word for that."

"That's very eloquent, I call it," said Jones.

"Yes," said poor old Groove, "the lad will never make a painter."

"Yes, I shall, Groove; at least I hope so, but it must be a long time first."

"I never knew a painter who could talk and paint both," explained Mr. Groove.

"Very well," said Gatty. "Then I'll say but one word more, and it is this. The artifice of painting is old enough to die; it is time the art was born. Whenever it does come into the world, you will see no more dead corpses of trees, grass, and water, robbed of their life, the sunlight, and flung upon canvas in a studio, by the light of a cigar, and a lie — and" —

"How much do you expect for your picture?" interrupted Jones.

"What has that to do with it? With these little swords (waving his brush), we'll fight for nature-light, truth-light, and sun-light, against a world in arms, — no, worse, in swaddling-clothes."

"With these little swerrds," replied poor old Groove, "we shall cut our own throats if we go against people's prejudices."

The young artist laughed the old daubster a merry defiance, and then separated from the party, for his lodgings were down the street.

He had not left them long, before a most musical voice was heard, crying,

"A caallerr owoo!"

And two young fishwives hove in sight.

The boys recognized one of them as Gatty's sweetheart.

"Is he in love with her?" inquired Jones.

Hyacinth the long-haired undertook to reply.

"He loves her better than anything in the world, except Art. Love and Art are two beautiful things," whined Hyacinth.

"She, too, is beautiful. I have done her," added he with a simper.

"In oil?" asked Groove.

"In oil? no, in verse, here," and he took out a paper.

"Then hadn't we better cut? you might propose reading them," said poor old Groove.

"Have you any oysters?" inquired Jones of the Carnie and the Johnstone, who were now alongside.

"Plenty," answered Jean. "Hae ye ony siller?"

The artists looked at one another, and didn't all speak at once.

"I, madam," said old Groove, insinuatingly, to Christie, "am a friend of Mr. Gatty's: perhaps, on that account, you would *lend* me an oyster or two."

"Na," said Jean, sternly.

"Hyacinth," said Jones, sarcastically, "give them your verses, perhaps that will soften them."

Hyacinth gave his verses, descriptive of herself, to Christie.

This youngster was one of those who mind other people's business.

Alienis studiis delectatus contempsit suum.

His destiny was to be a bad painter, so he wanted to be an execrable poet.

All this morning he had been doggerelling, when he ought to have been daubing; and now he will have to sup off a colored print, if he sups at all.

Christie read, blushed, and put the verses in her bosom.

"Come awa, Custy," said Jean.

"Hets," said Christie, "gie the puir lads twarree oysters, what the waur will we be?"

So they opened oysters for them; and Hyacinth, the long-haired, looked down on the others with sarcastico-benignant superiority. He had conducted a sister art to the aid of his brother brushes.

> "The poet's empire, all our hearts allow;
> But doggerel's power was never known till now."

CHAPTER VII.

At the commencement of last chapter, Charles Gatty, artist, was going to usher in a new state of things, true art, etc. Wales was to be painted in Wales, not Poland Street.

He and five or six more youngsters were to be in the foremost files of truth, and take the world by storm.

This was at two o'clock; it is now five; whereupon the posture of affairs, the prospects of art, the face of the world, the nature of things, are quite the reverse.

In the artist's room, on the floor, was a small child, whose movements, and they were many, were viewed with huge dissatisfaction by Charles Gatty, Esq. This personage, pencil in hand, sat slouching and morose, looking gloomily at his intractable model.

Things were going on very badly; he had been waiting two hours for an infantine pose, as common as dirt, and the little viper would die first.

Out of doors everything was nothing, for the sun was obscured, and to all appearance extinguished forever.

"Ah! Mr. Groove," cried he, to that worthy, who peeped in at that moment; "you are right, it is better to plough away upon canvas blindfold, as our grandfathers, no, grandmothers, used, than to kill ourselves toiling after such coy ladies as Nature and Truth."

"A weel, I dinna ken, sirr," replied Groove, in smooth tones. "I didna like to express my warm approbation of you before the lads, for fear of making them jealous."

"They be — No!"

"I ken what ye wad say, sirr, an it wad hae been a

vara just an' sprightly observaation. Aweel, between oursels, I look upon ye as a young gentleman of amazing talent and moedesty. Man, ye dinna do yoursel justice; ye should be in th' Academy — at the hede o't."

"Mr. Groove, I am a poor fainting pilgrim on the road, where stronger spirits have marched erect before me."

"A faintin pelgrim! Deil a frights o' ye, ye're a brisk and bonny lad. Ah, sirr, in my juvenile days we didna fash wi' nature and truth, an' the like."

"The like! What is like nature and truth, except themselves?"

"Vara true, sirr, vara true; and sae I doot I will never attain the height o' profeeciency ye hae reached. An' at this vara moment, sir," continued Groove, with delicious solemnity and mystery, "ye see before ye, sir, a man wha is in maist dismal want — o' ten shellen." (A pause.) "If your superior talent has put ye in possession of that sum, ye would obleege me infinitely by a temporary accommodaation, Mr. Gaattie."

"Why did you not come to the point at once?" cried Gatty, brusquely, "instead of humbling me with undeserved praise. There" — Groove held out his hand, but made a wry face when, instead of money, Gatty put a sketch into his hand — "there," said Gatty, "that is a lie."

"How can it be a lee?" said the other, with sour inadvertence. "How can it be a lee, when I hae na spoken?"

"You don't understand me. That sketch is a libel on a poor cow and an unfortunate oak-tree. I did them at the Academy. They had never done me any wrong, poor things; they suffered unjustly. You take them to a shop, swear they are a tree and a cow, and some fool, that never really looked into a cow or a tree, will give you ten shillings for them."

"Are ye sure, lad?"

"I am sure. Mr. Groove, sir, if you cannot sell a lie for ten shillings, you are not fit to live in this world; where is the lie that will not sell for ten shillings?"

"I shall think the better o' lees all my days, sir; your words are inspeeriting." And away went Groove with the sketch.

Gatty reflected, and stopped him.

"On second thoughts, Groove, you must not ask ten shillings; you must ask twenty pounds for that rubbish."

"Twenty pund! What for will I seek twenty pund?"

"Simply because people that would not give you ten shillings for it will offer you eleven pounds for it if you ask twenty pounds."

"The fules," roared Groove. "Twenty pund, hem!" He looked closer into it. "For a'," said he, "I begin to obsairve it is a work of great merit. I'll seek twenty pund; an' I'll no tak less than fifteen schelln, at present."

The visit of this routine painter did not cheer our artist.

The small child got a coal, and pounded the floor with it, like a machine incapable of fatigue. So the wished-for pose seemed more remote than ever.

The day waxed darker, instead of lighter; Mr. Gatty's reflections took also a still more sombre hue.

"Even Nature spites us," thought he, "because we love her.

"Then cant, tradition, numbers, slang, and money are against us; the least of these is singly a match for truth. We shall die of despair or paint cobwebs in Bedlam; and I am faint, weary of a hopeless struggle; and one man's brush is truer than mine, another's is bolder, — my hand and eye are not in tune. Ah! no; I shall never, never, never be a painter."

These last words broke audibly from him, as his head went down almost to his knees.

A hand was placed on his shoulder, as a flake of snow falls on the water. It was Christie Johnstone, radiant, who had glided in unobserved.

"What's wrang wi' ye, my lad?"

"The sun is gone to the devil, for one thing."

"Hech! hech! ye'll no be long ahint him; div ye no think shame."

"And I want that little brute just to do so, and he'd die first."

"Oh, ye villain! to ca' a bairn a brute; there's but ae brute here, an' it's no you, Jamie, nor me; is it, my lamb?"

She then stepped to the window.

"It's clear to windward; in ten minutes ye'll hae plenty sun. Tak your tools noo." And at the word she knelt on the floor, whipped out a paper of sugar-plums, and said to him she had christened "Jamie," — "Heh! Here's sweeties till ye." Out went Jamie's arms, as if he had been a machine, and she had pulled the right string.

"Ah, that will do," said Gatty, and sketched away.

Unfortunately Jamie was quickly arrested on the way to immortality by his mother, who came in, saying, —

"I maun hae my bairn, — he canna be aye wasting his time here."

This sally awakened the satire that ever lies ready in piscatory bosoms.

"Wasting his time! ye're no blate. Oh, ye'll be for taking him to the college to laern pheesick, — and teach maenners."

"Ye needna begin on me," said the woman, "I'm no match for Newhaven."

So saying she cut short the dispute by carrying off the gristle of contention.

"Another enemy to art," said Gatty, hurling away his pencil.

The young fishwife inquired if there were any more griefs: what she had heard had not accounted, to her reason, for her companion's depression.

"Are ye sick, laddy?" said she.

"No, Christie, not sick, but quite, quite down in the mouth."

She scanned him thirty seconds.

"What had ye till your dinner?"

"I forget."

"A choep, likely?"

"I think it was."

"Or maybe it was a steak?"

"I dare say it was a steak."

"Taste my girdle cake, that I've brought for ye."

She gave him a piece; he ate it rapidly, and looked gratefully at her.

"Noo, div ye no think shame to look me in the face? Ye hae na dined ava." And she wore an injured look.

"Sit ye there; it's ower late for dinner, but ye'll get a cup tea: doon i' the mooth, nae wonder, when naething gangs doon your" —

In a minute she placed a tea-tray, and ran into the kitchen with a teapot.

The next moment a yell was heard, and she returned laughing with another teapot.

"The wife had maskit her tea till hersel'," said this lawless forager.

Tea and cake on the table — beauty seated by his side — all in less than a minute.

He offered her a piece of cake.

"Na! I am no for any."

"Nor I, then," said he.

"Hets! eat, I tell ye."

He replied by putting a bit to her heavenly mouth.

"Ye're awfu' opinionated," said she, with a countenance that said nothing should induce her, and eating it almost contemporaneously.

"Put plenty sugar," added she, referring to the Chinese infusion; "mind, I hae a sweet tooth."

"You have a sweet set," said he, approaching another morsel.

They showed themselves by way of smile, and confirmed the accusation.

"Aha, lad!" answered she; "they've been the death o' mony a herrin'!"

"Now, what does that mean in English, Christie?"

"My grinders — (a full stop.)

"Which you approve — (a full stop.)

"Have been fatal — (a full stop.)

"To many fishes!"

Christie prided herself on her English, which she had culled from books.

Then he made her drink from the cup, and was ostentatious in putting his lips to the same part of the brim.

Then she left the table, and inspected all things.

She came to his drawers, opened one, and was horror-struck.

There were coats and trousers, with their limbs interchangeably intertwined, waistcoats, shirts, and cigars, hurled into chaos.

She instantly took the drawer bodily out, brought it, leaned it against the tea-table, pointed silently into it, with an air of majestic reproach, and awaited the result.

"I can find whatever I want," said the unblushing bachelor, "except money."

"Siller does na bide wi' slovens! hae ye often siccan a gale o' wind in your drawer?"

"Every day! Speak English!"

"Aweel! How *do* you *do?* that's Ennglish! I daur say."

"Jolly!" cried he, with his mouth full.

Christie was now folding up and neatly arranging his clothes.

"Will you ever, ever be a painter?"

"I am a painter! I could paint the devil pea-green!"

"Dinna speak o' yon lad, Chairles; it's no canny."

"No! I am going to paint an angel; the prettiest, cleverest girl in Scotland, 'The Snowdrop of the North.'"

And he dashed into his bedroom to find a canvas.

"Hech!" reflected Christie. "Thir Ennglish hae flattering tongues, as sure as dethe; 'The Snawdrap o' the Norrth!'"

CHAPTER VIII.

Gatty's back was hardly turned when a visitor arrived and inquired, "Is Mr. Gatty at home?"

"What's your will wi' him?" was the Scottish reply.

"Will you give him this?"

"What est?"

"Are you fond of asking questions?" inquired the man.

"Ay, and fules canna answer them!" retorted Christie.

The little document which the man, in retiring, left with Christie Johnstone, purported to come from one Victoria, who seemed, at first sight, disposed to show Charles Gatty civilities. "Victoria — to Charles Gatty, greeting! (*salutem*)." Christie was much struck with this instance of royal affability; she read no farther, but began to think: "Victoree! that's the Queen hersel. A letter fra the Queen to a painter lad! Picters will rise i' the mairket — it will be an order to paint the bairns. I hae brought him luck; I am real pleased." And on Gatty's return, canvas in hand, she whipped the document behind her, and said archly, "I hae something for ye; a tecket fra a leddy; ye'll no want siller fra this day."

"Indeed!"

"Ay! indeed, fra a great leddy; it's vara gude o' me to gie ye it; heh! tak it."

He did take it, looked stupefied, looked again, sunk into a chair, and glared at it.

"Laddy!" said Christie.

"This is a new step on the downward path," said the poor painter.

"Is it no an orrder to paint the young Prence?" said Christie, faintly.

"No!" almost shrieked the victim. "It's a writ! I owe a lot of money."

"O Chairles!"

"See! I borrowed sixty pounds six months ago of a friend, so now I owe eighty!"

"All right!" giggled the unfriendly visitor at the door, whose departure had been more or less fictitious.

Christie, by an impulse, not justifiable, but natural, drew her oyster-knife out, and this time the man really went away.

"Hairtless mon!" cried she, "could he no do his ain dirrty work, and no gar me gie the puir lad th' action, and he likeit me sae weel!" and she began to whimper.

"And love you more now," said he; "don't you cry, dear, to add to my vexation."

"Na! I'll no add to your vexation," and she gulped down her tears.

"Besides, I have pictures painted worth two hundred pounds; this is only for eighty. To be sure you can't sell them for two hundred pence when you want. So I shall go to jail, but they won't keep me long."

Then he took a turn, and began to fall into the artistic, or true view of matters, which, indeed, was never long absent from him.

"Look here, Christie," said he, "I am sick of conventional assassins, humbugging models, with dirty beards, that knit their brows, and try to look murder; they never murdered so much as a tomcat: I always go in for the real thing, and here I shall find it."

"Dinna gang in there, lad, for ony favor."

"Then I shall find the accessories of a picture I have in my head — chains with genuine rust, and ancient

mouldering stones, with the stains of time." His eye brightened at the prospect.

"You among fiefs, and chains, and stanes! Ye'll break my hairt, laddy, ye'll no be easy till you break my hairt:" and this time the tears would not be denied.

"I love you for crying; don't cry;" and he fished from the chaotic drawer a cambric handkerchief, with which he dried her tears as they fell.

It is my firm belief she cried nearly twice as much as she really wanted to; she contrived to make the grief hers, the sympathy his. Suddenly she stopped, and said, —

"I'm daft; ye'll accept a lane o' the siller fra me, will ye no?"

"No!" said he. "And where could you find eighty pound?"

"Auchty pund," cried she, "it's no auchty pund that will ding Christie Johnstone, laddy. I hae boats and nets worth twa auchtys; and I hae forty pund laid by; and I hae seven hundred pund at London, but that I canna meddle. My feyther lent it the King or the Queen, I dinna justly mind; she pays me the interest twice the year. Sae ye ken I could na be sae dirty as seek my siller, when she pays me th' interest: to the very day, ye ken. She's just the only one o' a' my debtors that's hoenest, but never heed, ye'll no gang to jail."

"I'll hold my tongue, and sacrifice my pictures," thought Charles.

"Cheer up!" said Christie, mistaking the nature of his thoughts, "for it did na come fra Victoree hersel'. It wad smell o' the musk, ye ken. Na, it's just a wheen blackguards at London that makes use o' her name to torment puir folk. Wad she pairsecute a puir lad? No likely."

She then asked questions, some of which were embar-

rassing. One thing he could never succeed in making her understand, how, since it was sixty pounds he borrowed, it could be eighty pounds he owed.

Then once more she promised him her protection, bade him be of good cheer, and left him.

At the door she turned, and said, "Chairles, here's an auld wife seeking ye," and vanished.

These two young people had fallen acquainted at a Newhaven wedding. Christie, belonging to no one, had danced with him all the night, they had walked under the stars to cool themselves, for dancing reels with heart and soul is not quadrilling.

Then he had seen his beautiful partner in Edinburgh, and made a sketch of her, which he gave her; and by and by he used to run down to Newhaven, and stroll up and down a certain green lane near the town.

Next, on Sunday evenings, a long walk together, and then it came to visits at his place now and then.

And here Raphael and Fornarina were inverted, our artist used to work, and Christie tell him stories the while.

And as her voice curled round his heart, he used to smile and look, and lay inspired touches on his subject.

And she, an artist of the tongue (without knowing herself one), used to make him grave, or gay, or sad, at will, and watch the effect of her art upon his countenance; and a very pretty art it is — the *vivâ voce* story-tellers — and a rare one amongst the nations of Europe.

Christie had not learned it in a day; when she began, she used to tell them like the other Newhaven people, with a noble impartiality of detail, wearisome to the hearer.

But latterly she had learned to seize the salient parts of a narrative; her voice had compass, and, like all fine speakers, she travelled over a great many notes in speak-

ing; her low tones were gorgeously rich, her upper tones full and sweet; all this, and her beauty, made the hours she gave him very sweet to our poor artist.

He was wont to bask in her music, and tell her in return how he loved her, and how happy they were both to be as soon as he had acquired a name, for a name was wealth, he told her. And although Christie Johnstone did not let him see how much she took all this to heart and believed it, it was as sweet music to her, as her own honeysuckle breath to him.

She improved him.

He dropped cigars, and medical students, and similar abominations.

Christie's cool, fresh breath, as she hung over him while painting, suggested to him that smoking might, peradventure, be a sin against nature as well as against cleanliness.

And he improved her; she learned from art to look into nature (the usual process of mind).

She had noticed too little the flickering gold of the leaves at evening, the purple hills, and the shifting stories and glories of the sky; but now, whatever she saw him try to imitate, she learned to examine. She was a woman, and admired sunset, etc., for this boy's sake, and her whole heart expanded with a new sensation that softened her manner to all the world, and brightened her personal rays.

This charming picture of mutual affection had hitherto been admired only by those who figured in it.

But a visitor had now arrived on purpose to inspect it, etc., attracted by report.

A friend had considerately informed Mrs. Gatty, the artist's mother, and she had instantly started from Newcastle.

This was the old lady Christie discovered on the stairs.

OUR ARTIST USED TO WORK, AND CHRISTIE TELL HIM STORIES THE WHILE.

Her sudden appearance took her son's breath away.

No human event was less likely than that she should be there, yet there she was.

After the first surprise and affectionate greetings, a misgiving crossed him, "She must know about the writ." It was impossible; but our minds are so constituted, when we are guilty, we fear that others know what we know.

Now Gatty was particularly anxious she should not know about this writ, for he had incurred the debt by acting against her advice.

Last year he commenced a picture in which was Durham Cathedral: his mother bade him stay quietly at home, and paint the cathedral and its banks from a print, "as any other painter would," observed she.

But this was not the lad's system: he spent five months on the spot, and painted his picture, but he had to borrow sixty pounds to do this; the condition of this loan was, that in six months he should either pay eighty pounds, or finish, and hand over, a certain half-finished picture.

He did neither; his new subject thrust aside his old one, and he had no money; *ergo* his friend, a picture-dealer, who had found artists slippery in money-matters, followed him up sharp, as we see.

"There is nothing the matter, I hope, mother. What is it?"

"I'm tired, Charles." He brought her a seat: she sat down.

"I did not come from Newcastle at my age for nothing; you have formed an improper acquaintance."

"I, who? Is it Jack Adams?"

"Worse than any Jack Adams!"

"Who can that be? Jenkyns, mother, because he does the same things as Jack, and pretends to be religious."

"It is a female, — a fishwife. O my son!"

"Christie Johnstone an improper acquaintance!" said he: "why, I was good for nothing till I knew her; she has made me so good, mother, so steady, so industrious, you will never have to find fault with me again."

"Nonsense! a woman that sells fish in the streets!"

"But you have not seen her. She is beautiful; her mind is not in fish: her mind grasps the beautiful and the good: she is a companion for princes! What am I that she wastes a thought or a ray of music on me? Heaven bless her! She reads our best authors, and never forgets a word; and she tells me beautiful stories, — sometimes they make me cry, for her voice is a music that goes straight to my heart."

"A woman that does not even wear the clothes of a lady."

"It is the only genuine costume in these islands not beneath a painter's notice."

"Look at me, Charles; at your mother."

"Yes, mother," said he nervously.

"You must part with her, or kill me."

He started from his seat and began to flutter up and down the room. Poor excitable creature! "Part with her!" cried he; "I shall never be a painter if I do; what is to keep my heart warm when the sun is hid, when the birds are silent, when difficulty looks a mountain, and success a molehill? What is an artist without love? How is he to bear up against his disappointments from within, his mortification from without? the great ideas he has and cannot grasp, and all the forms of ignorance that sting him, from stupid insensibility down to clever, shallow criticism?"

"Come back to common-sense," said the old lady coldly and grimly.

He looked uneasy; common-sense had often been

quoted against him, and common-sense had always proved right.

"Come back to common-sense. She shall not be your mistress, and she cannot bear your name: you must part some day, because you cannot come together, and now is the best time."

"Not be together? all our lives, all our lives, ay," cried he, rising into enthusiasm, "hundreds of years to come will we two be together before men's eyes. I will be an immortal painter, that the world and time may cherish the features I have loved. I love her, mother," added he, with a tearful tenderness that ought to have reached a woman's heart; then flushing, trembling, and inspired he burst out, "And I wish I was a sculptor and a poet too, that Christie might live in stone and verse, as well as colors, and all who love an art might say, 'This woman cannot die: Charles Gatty loved her.'"

He looked in her face: he could not believe any creature could be insensible to his love, and persist to rob him of it.

The old woman paused to let his eloquence evaporate.

The pause chilled him; then gently and slowly, but emphatically, she spoke to him thus: —

"Who has kept you on her small means ever since you were ten years and seven months old?"

"You should know, mother, dear mother."

"Answer me, Charles."

"My mother."

"Who has pinched herself in every earthly thing, to make you an immortal painter, and, above all, a gentleman?"

"My mother."

"Who forgave you the little faults of youth, before you could ask pardon?"

"My mother. O mother, I ask pardon now for all

the trouble I ever gave the best, the dearest, the tenderest of mothers."

"Who will go home to Newcastle a broken-hearted woman, with the one hope gone that has kept her up in poverty and sorrow so many weary years, if this goes on?"

"Nobody, I hope."

"Yes, Charles: your mother."

"O, mother; you have been always my best friend."

"And am this day."

"Do not be my worst enemy now: it is for me to obey you, but it is for you to think well before you drive me to despair."

And the poor womanish heart leaned his head on the table, and began to sorrow over his hard fate.

Mrs. Gatty soothed him. "It need not be done all in a moment. It must be done kindly but firmly. I will give you as much time as you like."

This bait took — the weak love to temporize.

It is doubtful whether he honestly intended to part with Christie Johnstone, but to pacify his mother he promised to begin and gradually untie the knot.

"My mother will go," whispered his deceitful heart, "and when she is away, perhaps I shall find out that in spite of every effort I cannot resign my treasure."

He gave a sort of half-promise for the sake of peace.

His mother instantly sent to the inn for her boxes.

"There is a room in this same house," said she; "I will take it: I will not hurry you, but until it is done, I stay here, if it is a twelvemonth about."

He turned pale.

"And now hear the good news I have brought you from Newcastle."

Oh, these little iron wills! how is a great artist to fight three hundred and sixty-five days against such an antagonist?

Every day saw a repetition of these dialogues in which genius made gallant bursts into the air, and strong, hard sense caught him on his descent, and dabbed glue on his gauzy wings.

Old age and youth see life so differently.

To youth it is a story-book, in which we are to command the incidents, and be the bright exceptions to one rule after another.

To age it is an almanac, in which everything will happen just as it has happened so many times.

To youth, it is a path through a sunny meadow.

To age, a hard turnpike:

Whose travellers must be all sweat and dust, when they are not in mud and drenched:

Which wants mending in many places, and is mended with sharp stones.

Gatty would not yield to go down to Newhaven, and take a step against his love, but he yielded so far as to remain passive, and see whether this creature was necessary to his existence or not.

Mrs. G. scouted the idea.

"He was to work, and he would soon forget her."

Poor boy! he wanted to work; his debt weighed on him: a week's resolute labor might finish his first picture and satisfy his creditor. The subject was an interior. He set to work, he stuck to work, he glued to work, his body — but his heart?

Ah, my poor fellow, a much slower horse than Gatty will go by you, ridden as you are by a leaden heart.

Tu nihil invitâ facies pingesve Minervâ.

It would not lower a mechanical dog's efforts, but it must yours.

He was unhappy. He heard only one side for days;

that side was recommended by his duty, filial affection, and diffidence of his own good sense.

He was brought to see his proceedings were eccentric, and that it is destruction to be eccentric.

He was made a little ashamed of what he had been proud of.

He was confused and perplexed; he hardly knew what to think or do; he collapsed, and all his spirit was fast leaving him, and then he felt inclined to lean on the first thing he could find, and nothing came to hand but his mother.

Meantime, Christie Johnstone was also thinking of him, but her single anxiety was to find this eighty pounds for him.

It is a Newhaven idea that the female is the natural protector of the male, and this idea was strengthened in her case.

She did not fully comprehend his character and temperament, but she saw, by instinct, that she was to be the protector.

Besides, as she was twenty-one, and he only twenty-two, she felt the difference between herself — a woman, and him — a boy, and to leave him to struggle unaided out of his difficulties, seemed to her heartless.

Twice she opened her lips to engage the charitable "Vile Count" in his cause, but shame closed them again; this would be asking a personal favor, and one on so large a scale.

Several days passed thus; she had determined not to visit him without good news.

She then began to be surprised, she heard nothing from him.

And now she felt something that prevented her calling on him.

But Jean Carnie was to be married, and the next day

the wedding party were to spend in festivity upon the island of Inch Coombe.

She bade Jean call on him, and without mentioning her, invite him to this party, from which, he must know, she would not be absent.

Jean Carnie entered his apartment, and at her entrance, his mother, who took for granted, this was his sweetheart, whispered in his ear that he should now take the first step, and left him.

What passed between Jean Carnie and Charles Gatty is for another chapter.

CHAPTER IX.

A YOUNG viscount with income and person cannot lie *perdu* three miles from Edinburgh.

First one discovers him, then another, then twenty, then all the world. as the whole clique is modestly called.

Before, however, Lord Ipsden was caught, he had acquired a browner tint, a more elastic step, and a stouter heart.

The Aberford prescription had done wonders for him.

He caught himself passing one whole day without thinking of Lady Barbara Sinclair.

But even Aberford had misled him; there were no adventures to be found in the Firth of Forth; most of the days there was no wind to speak of; twice it blew great guns, and the men were surprised at his lordship going out, but nobody was in any danger except himself; the fishermen had all slipped into port before matters were serious.

He found the merchantmen that could sail creeping on with three reefs in their mainsail; and the Dutchmen lying to and breasting it, like ducks in a pond, and with no more chance of harm.

On one of these occasions he did observe a little steam-tug, going about a knot an hour, and rolling like a washing-tub. He ran down to her, and asked if he could assist her; she answered through the medium of a sooty animal at her helm, that she was (like our universities) "satisfied with her own progress;" she added, being under intoxication, "that if any danger existed, her

scheme was to drown it in the bo-o-owl;" and two days afterwards, he saw her puffing and panting, and fiercely dragging a gigantic three-decker out into deep water, like an industrious flea pulling his phaeton.

And now it is my office to relate how Mr. Flucker Johnstone comported himself on one occasion.

As the yacht worked alongside Granton Pier, before running out, the said Flucker, calmly and scientifically, drew his lordship's attention to three points:

The direction of the wind — the force of the wind — and his opinion, as a person experienced in the Firth, that it was going to be worse instead of better; in reply, he received an order to step forward to his place in the cutter — the immediate vicinity of the jib-boom. On this Mr. Flucker instantly burst into tears.

His lordship, or as Flucker called him, ever since the yacht came down, "the skipper," deeming that the higher appellation, inquired, with some surprise, what was the matter with the boy?

One of the crew, who, by-the-by, squinted, suggested "it was a slight illustration of the passion of fear."

Flucker confirmed the theory by gulping out, "We'll never see Newhaven again."

On this the skipper smiled, and ordered him ashore, somewhat peremptorily.

Straightway he began to howl, and saying "It was better to be drowned than be the laughing-stock of the place," went forward to his place; on his safe return to port, this young gentleman was very severe on open boats, which he said "bred womanish notions in hearts naturally dauntless. Give me a lid to the pot," added he, "and I'll sail with Old Nick, let the wind blow high or low."

The Aberford was wrong when he called love a cutaneous disorder.

There are cutaneous disorders that take that name, but they are no more love than verse is poetry ;

Than patriotism is love of country ;

Than theology is religion ;

Than science is philosophy ;

Than paintings are pictures ;

Than reciting on the boards is acting ;

Than physic is medicine ;

Than bread is bread, or gold, gold — in shops.

Love is a state of being ; the beloved object is our centre ; and our thoughts, affections, schemes, and selves, move but round it.

We may diverge hither or thither, but the golden thread still holds us.

Is fair or dark beauty the fairest ? The world cannot decide ; but love shall decide in a moment.

A halo surrounds her we love, and makes beautiful to us her movements, her looks, her virtues, her faults, her nonsense, her affectation, and herself, and that's love, doctor !

Lord Ipsden was capable of loving like this, but to do Lady Barbara justice, she had done much to freeze the germ of noble passion ; she had not killed, but she had benumbed it.

"Saunders," said Lord Ipsden, one morning after breakfast, "have you entered everything in your diary ?"

"Yes, my lord."

"All these good people's misfortunes ?"

"Yes, my lord."

"Do you think you have spelt their names right ?"

"Where it was impossible, my lord, I substituted an English appellation hidentical in meaning."

"Have you entered and described my first interview with Christie Johnstone, and somebody something ?"

"Most minutely, my lord."

"How I turned Mr. Burke into poetry — how she listened with her eyes all glistening — how they made me talk — how she dropped a tear, he! he! he! at the death of the first baron — how shocked she was at the king striking him when he was dying, to make a knight-banneret of the poor old fellow?"

"Your lordship will find all the particulars exactly related," said Saunders, with dry pomp.

"How she found out that titles are but breath — how I answered — some nonsense?"

"Your lordship will find all the topics included."

"How she took me for a madman? And you for a prig?"

"The latter circumstance eluded my memory, my lord."

"But when I told her I must relieve only one poor person by day, she took my hand."

"Your lordship will find all the items realized in this book, my lord."

"What a beautiful book!"

"Alba are considerably ameliorated, my lord."

"Alba?"

"Plural of album, my lord," explained the refined factotum, "more delicate, I conceive, than the vulgar reading."

Viscount Ipsden read from Mr. Saunders's Album:

"To illustrate the inelegance of the inferior classes, two juvenile venders of the piscatory tribe were this day ushered in, and instantaneously, without the accustomed preliminaries, plunged into a familiar conversation with Lord Viscount Ipsden.

"Their vulgarity, shocking and repulsive to myself, appeared to afford his lordship a satisfaction greater than he derives from the graceful amenities of fashionable association" —

"Saunders, I suspect you of something."

"Me, my lord!"

"Yes. Writing in an annual."

"I do, my lord," said he with benignant *hauteur*. "It appears every month — 'The Polytechnic.'"

"I thought so! you are polysyllabic, Saunders; *en route!*"

"In this hallucination I find it difficult to participate; associated from infancy with the aristocracy, I shrink, like the sensitive plant, from contact with anything vulgar."

"I see! I begin to understand you, Saunders. Order the dog-cart, and Wordsworth's mare for leader; we'll give her a trial. You are an ass, Saunders."

"Yes, my lord; I will order Robert to tell James to come for your lordship's commands about your lordship's vehicles. (What could he intend by a recent observation of a discourteous character?)"

His lordship soliloquized.

"I never observed it before, but Saunders is an ass; La Johnstone is one of nature's duchesses, and she has made me know some poor people that will be richer than the rich one day; and she has taught me that honey is to be got from bank-notes — by merely giving them away."

Amongst the objects of charity Lord Ipsden discovered, was one Thomas Harvey, a maker and player of the violin. This man was a person of great intellect; he mastered every subject he attacked. By a careful examination of all the points that various fine-toned instruments had in common, he had arrived at a theory of sound; he made violins to correspond, and was remarkably successful in insuring that which had been too hastily ascribed to accident — a fine tone.

This man, who was in needy circumstances, demon-

strated to his lordship that ten pounds would make his fortune; because with ten pounds he could set up a shop, instead of working out of the world's sight in a room.

Lord Ipsden gave him ten pounds!

A week after he met Harvey, more ragged and dirty than before.

Harvey had been robbed by a friend whom he had assisted. Poor Harvey! Lord Ipsden gave him ten pounds more!

Next week, Saunders, entering Harvey's house, found him in bed at noon, because he had no clothes to wear.

Saunders suggested that it would be better to give his wife the next money, with strict orders to apply it usefully.

This was done!

The next day, Harvey finding his clothes upon a chair, his tools redeemed from pawn, and a beefsteak ready for his dinner, accused his wife of having money, and meanly refusing him the benefit of it. She acknowledged she had a little, and appealed to the improved state of things as a proof that she knew better than he the use of money. He demanded the said money. She refused — he leathered her — she put him in prison.

This was the best place for him. The man was a drunkard, and all the riches of Egypt would never have made him better off.

And here, gentlemen of the lower classes, a word with you. How can you, with your small incomes, hope to be well off, if you are more extravagant than those who have large ones?

"Us extravagant?" you reply.

Yes! your income is ten shillings a week; out of that you spend three shillings in drink; ay! you the sober ones. You can't afford it, my boys. Find me a man whose income is a thousand a year; well, if he imitates

you, and spends three hundred upon sensuality, I bet you the odd seven hundred, he does not make both ends meet; the proportion is too great. And *two-thirds of the distress of the lower orders is owing to this — that they are more madly prodigal than the rich; in the worst, lowest, and most dangerous item of all human prodigality!*

Lord Ipsden went to see Mrs. Harvey; it cost him much to go; she lived in the old town, and he hated disagreeable smells; he also knew from Saunders that she had two black eyes, and he hated women with black eyes of that sort. But this good creature did go; did relieve Mrs. Harvey; and, bareheaded, suffered himself to be bedewed ten minutes by her tearful twaddle.

For once, virtue was rewarded: returning over the North Bridge, he met somebody whom, but for his charity, he would not have met.

He came in one bright moment plump upon — Lady Barbara Sinclair. She flushed, he trembled, and in two minutes he had forgotten every human event that had passed since last he was by her side.

She seemed pleased to see him, too; she ignored entirely his obnoxious proposal; he wisely took her cue, and so, on this secret understanding, they were friends. He made his arrangements, and dined with her family. It was a family party. In the evening Lady Barbara allowed it to transpire that she had made inquiries about him.

(He was highly flattered.) And she had discovered he was lying hid somewhere in the neighborhood.

"Studying the guitar?" inquired she.

"No," said he, "studying a new class of the community. Do you know any of what they call the 'lower classes'?"

"Yes."

"Monstrous agreeable people, are they not?"

"No, very stupid! I only know two old women—except the servants, who have no characters. They imitate us, I suspect, which does not say much for their taste."

"But some of my friends are young women, that makes all the difference."

"It does! and you ought to be ashamed. If you want a low order of mind, why desert our own circle?"

"My friends are only low in station; they have rather lofty minds, some of them."

"Well, amuse yourself with these lofty minds. Amusement is the end of being, you know, and the aim of all the men of this day."

"We imitate the ladies," said he slyly.

"You do," answered she, very dryly; and so the dialogue went on, and Lord Ipsden found the pleasure of being with his cousin compensate him fully for the difference of their opinions; in fact, he found it simply amusing that so keen a wit as his cousin's could be entrapped into the humor of decrying the time one happens to live in, and admiring any epoch one knows next to nothing about, and entrapped by the notion of its originality, above all things; the idea being the stale commonplace of asses in every age, and the manner of conveying the idea being a mere imitation of the German writers, not the good ones, *bien entendu*, but the quill-drivers, the snobs of the Teutonic pen.

But he was to learn that follies are not always laughable, that *eadem sentire* is a bond, and that when a clever and pretty woman chooses to be a fool, her lover, if he is wise, will be a greater—if he can.

The next time they met, Lord Ipsden found Lady Barbara occupied with a gentleman, whose first sentence proclaimed him a pupil of Mr. Thomas Carlyle, and he had the mortification to find that she had neither an ear nor an eye for him.

Human opinion has so many shades, that it is rare to find two people agree.

But two people may agree wonderfully, if they will but let a third think for them both.

Thus it was that these two ran so smoothly in couples.

Antiquity, they agreed, was the time when the world was old, its hair gray, its head wise. Every one that said "Lord, Lord!" two hundred years ago, was a Christian. There were no earnest men now; Williams, the missionary, who lived and died for the gospel, was not earnest in religion; but Cromwell, who packed a jury, and so murdered his prisoner, — Cromwell, in whose mouth was heaven, and in his heart temporal sovereignty, was the pattern of earnest religion, or, at all events, second in sincerity to Mahomet alone, in the absence of details respecting Satan, of whom we know only that his mouth is a Scripture concordance, and his hands the hands of Mr. Carlyle's saints.

Then they went back a century or two, and were eloquent about the great antique heart, and the beauty of an age whose samples were Abbot Sampson and Joan of Arc.

Lord Ipsden hated argument; but jealousy is a brass spur: it made even this man fluent for once.

He suggested "That five hundred years added to a world's life made it just five hundred years older, not younger; and if older, grayer; and if grayer, wiser.

"Of Abbot Sampson," said he, "whom I confess both a great and a good man, his author, who with all his talent belongs to the class muddle-head, tells us, that when he had been two years in authority his red hair had turned gray, fighting against the spirit of his age; how the deuce, then, could he be a sample of the spirit of his age?

"Joan of Arc was burnt by acclamation of her age,

and is admired by our age. Which fact identifies an age most with a heroine, to give her your heart, or to give her a blazing fagot and death?

"Abbot Sampson and Joan of Arc," concluded he, "prove no more in favor of their age, and no less against it, than Lot does for or against Sodom. Lot was in Sodom, but not of it; and so were Sampson and Joan in, but not of, the villanous times they lived in.

"The very best text-book of true religion is the New Testament, and I gather from it, that the man who forgives his enemies whilst their axe descends on his head, however poor a creature he may be in other respects, is a better Christian than the man who has the God of Mercy forever on his lips, and whose hands are swift to shed blood.

"The earnest men of former ages are not extinct in this," added he. "Whenever a scaffold is erected outside a prison-door, if you are earnest in pursuit of truth, and can put up with disgusting objects, you shall see a relic of ancient manners hung.

"There still exist, in parts of America, rivers on whose banks are earnest men, who shall take your scalp, the wife's of your bosom, and the innocent child's of her bosom.

"In England we are as earnest as ever in pursuit of heaven, and of innocent worldly advantages. If, when the consideration of life and death interposes, we appear less earnest in pursuit of comparative trifles, such as kingdoms or dogmas, it is because, cooler in action we are more earnest in thought — because reason, experience, and conscience are things that check the unscrupulousness or beastly earnestness of man.

"Moreover, he who has the sense to see that questions have three sides, is no longer so intellectually as well as morally degraded as to be able to cut every throat that utters an opinion contrary to his own.

"If the phrase 'earnest man' means man imitating the beasts that are deaf to reason, it is to be hoped that civilization and Christianity will really extinguish the whole race for the benefit of the earth."

Lord Ipsden succeeded in annoying the fair theorist, but not in convincing her.

The mediæval enthusiasts looked on him as some rough animal that had burst into sacred grounds unconsciously, and gradually edged away from him.

CHAPTER X.

Lord Ipsden had soon the mortification of discovering that this Mr. —— was a constant visitor at the house; and although his cousin gave him her ear in this man's absence, on the arrival of her fellow-enthusiast he had ever the mortification of finding himself *de trop.*

Once or twice he demolished this personage in argument, and was rewarded by finding himself more *de trop.*

But one day, Lady Barbara, being in a cousinly humor, expressed a wish to sail in his lordship's yacht; and this hint soon led to a party being organized, and a sort of picnic on the island of Inch Coombe, his lordship's cutter being the mode of conveyance to and from that spot.

Now it happened that on that very day Jean Carnie's marriage was celebrated on that very island by her relations and friends.

So that we shall introduce our readers to The Rival Picnics.

We begin with *Les gens comme il faut.*

Picnic No. 1.

The servants were employed in putting away dishes into hampers.

There was a calm silence.

"Hem," observed Sir Henry Talbot.

"Eh?" replied the Honorable Tom Hitherington.

"Mamma," said Miss Vere, "have you brought any work?"

"No, my dear."

"At a picnic," said Mr. Hitherington, "isn't it the thing for somebody — aw — to do something?"

"Ipsden," said Lady Barbara, "there is an understanding *between* you and Mr. Hitherington. I condemn you to turn him into English."

"Yes, Lady Barbara; I'll tell you, he means — do you mean anything, Tom?"

Hitherington. Can't anybody guess what I mean?

Lady Barbara. Guess first, yourself; you can't be suspected of being in the secret.

Hitherington. What I mean is, that people sing a song, or run races, or preach a sermon, or do something funny at a picnic, — aw — somebody gets up and does something.

Lady Barbara. Then perhaps Miss Vere, whose singing is famous, will have the complaisance to sing to us.

Miss Vere. I should be happy, Lady Barbara, but I have not brought my music.

Lady Barbara. Oh, we are not critical; the simplest air, or even a fragment of melody; the sea and the sky will be a better accompaniment than Broadwood ever made.

Miss Vere. I can't sing a note without book.

Sir H. Talbot. Your music is in your soul, not at your fingers' ends.

Lord Ipsden (to Lady Barbara). It is in her book, and not in her soul.

Lady Barbara (to Lord Ipsden). Then it has chosen the better situation of the two.

Ipsden. Miss Vere is to the fine art of music, what the engrossers are to the black art of law; it all filters through them without leaving any sediment; and so the music of the day passes through Miss Vere's mind, but

none remains to stain its virgin snow. (He bows, she smiles.)

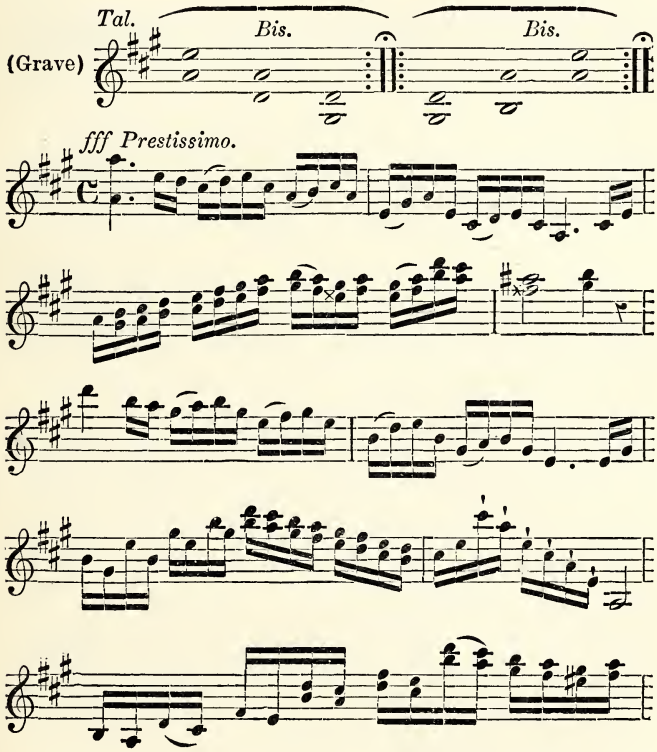
Lady Barbara (to herself). Insolent; and the little dunce thinks he is complimenting her.

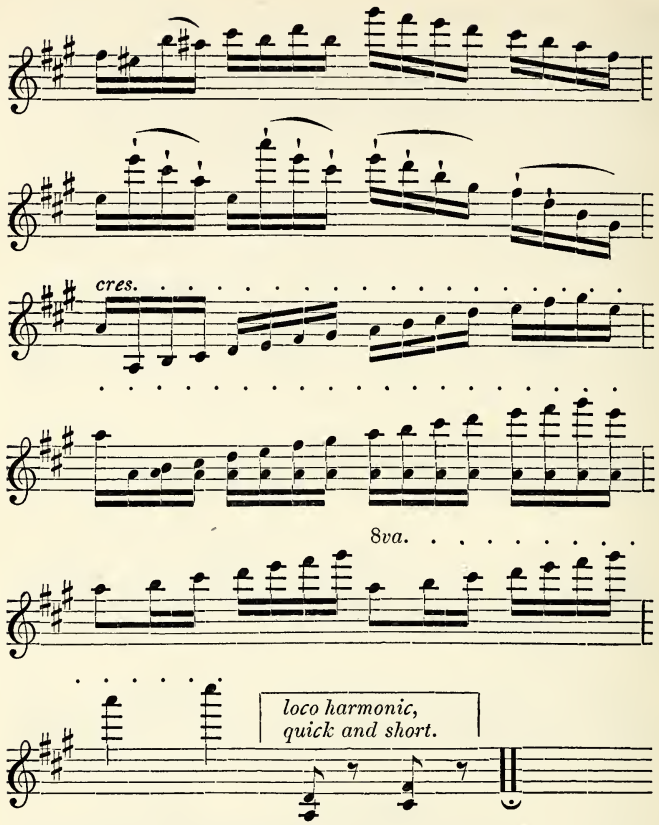
Ipsden. Perhaps Talbot will come to our rescue; he is a fiddler.

Talbot. An amateur of the violin.

Ipsden. It is all the same thing.

Lady Barbara. I wish it may prove so.





Miss Vere. Beautiful.

Mrs. Vere. Charming.

Hitherington. Superb.

Ipsden. You are aware that good music is a thing to be wedded to immortal verse; shall I recite a bit of poetry to match Talbot's strain?

Miss Vere. Oh, yes, how nice!

Ipsden (rhetorically). A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, W, X, Y, Z, Y, X, W, V, U, T, S, O, N, M, L, K, J, I, H, G, F, A, M, little p, little t.

Lady Barbara. Beautiful! Superb! Ipsden has been taking lessons on the thinking instrument.

Hitherington. He has been *perdu* amongst vulgar people.

Talbot. And expects a pupil of Herz to play him tunes!

Lady Barbara. What are tunes, Sir Henry?

Talbot. Something I don't play, Lady Barbara.

Lady Barbara. I understand you; something we ought to like.

Ipsden. I have a Stradivarius violin at home; it is yours, Talbot, if you can define a tune.

Talbot. A tune is — everybody knows what.

Lady Barbara. A tune is a tune, that is what you meant to say.

Talbot. Of course it is.

Lady Barbara. Be reasonable, Ipsden. No man can do two things at once. How can the pupil of Herz condemn a thing and know what it means contemporaneously?

Ipsden. Is the drinking-song in "Der Freischutz," a tune?

Lady Barbara. It is.

Ipsden. And the melodies of Handel, are they tunes?

Lady Barbara (pathetically). They are! They are!

Ipsden. And the "Russian Anthem," and the "Marseillaise," and "Ah, Perdona"?

Talbot. And "Yankee Doodle"?

Lady Barbara. So that Sir Henry, who prided himself on his ignorance, has a wide field for its dominion.

Talbot. All good violin players do like me; they prelude, not play tunes.

Ipsden. Then Heaven be thanked for our blind fiddlers. You like syllables of sound in unmeaning rotation, and you despise its words, its purposes, its narrative feats; carry out your principle, it will show you where you are. Buy a dirty palette for a picture, and dream the alphabet is a poem.

Lady Barbara (to herself). Is this my cousin Richard?

Hitherington. Mind, Ipsden, you are a man of property, and there are such things as commissions *de lunatico.*

Lady Barbara. His defence will be that his friends pronounce him insane.

Ipsden. No; I shall subpœna Talbot's fiddle; cross-examination will get nothing out of that but do, re, mi, fa.

Lady Barbara. Yes, it will; fa, mi, re, do.

Talbot. Violin, if you please.

Lady Barbara. Ask Fiddle's pardon directly.

(Sound of fiddles is heard in the distance.)

Talbot. How lucky for you, there are fiddles and tunes, and the natives you are said to favor; why not join them?

Ipsden (shaking his head solemnly). I dread to encounter another prelude.

Hitherington. Come, I know you would like; it is a wedding-party — two sea monsters have been united. The sailors and fishermen are all blue cloth and wash-leather gloves.

Miss Vere. He! he!

Talbot. The fishwives unite the colors of the rainbow —

Lady Barbara. (And we all know how hideous they are) — to vulgar blooming cheeks, staring white teeth, and sky-blue eyes.

Mrs. Vere. How satirical you are, especially you, Lady Barbara.

Here Lord Ipsden, after a word to Lady Barbara, the answer to which did not appear to be favorable, rose, gave a little yawn, looked steadily at his companions without seeing them, and departed without seeming aware that he was leaving anybody behind him.

Hitherington. Let us go somewhere where we can quiz the natives without being too near them.

Lady Barbara. I am tired of this unbroken solitude. "I must go and think to the sea," added she, in a mock soliloquy; and out she glided with the same unconscious air as his lordship had worn.

The others moved off slowly together.

"Mamma," said Miss Vere, "I can't understand half Barbara Sinclair says."

"It is not necessary, my love," replied mamma; "she is rather eccentric, and I fear she is spoiling Lord Ipsden."

"Poor Lord Ipsden," murmured the lovely Vere, "he used to be so nice, and do like everybody else. Mamma, I shall bring some work the next time."

"Do, my love."

Picnic No. 2.

In a house two hundred yards from this scene, a merry dance, succeeding a merry song, had ended, and they were in the midst of an interesting story; Christie Johnstone was the narrator. She had found the tale in one of the viscount's books, — it had made a great impression on her.

The rest were listening intently: in a room which had lately been all noise, not a sound was now to be heard but the narrator's voice.

"Aweel, lasses, here are the three wee kists set, the lads are to chuse, — the ane that chuses reicht is to get Porsha, an' the lave to get the bag, and dee baitchelars.

Flucker Johnstone, you that's sae clever, — are ye for gowd or siller or leed ? "

First Fishwife. Gowd for me !

Second ditto. The white siller's my taste.

Flucker. Na ! there's aye some deevelish trick in thir lassie's stories. I shall lie-to till the ither lads hae chused ; the mair part will put themsels oot, ane will hit it off reicht maybe, then I shall gie him a hidin' an' carry off the lass. You-hoo !

Jean Carnie. That's you, Flucker.

Christie Johnstone. And div ye really think we are gawn to let you see a' the world chuse ? Na, lad, ye are putten oot o' the room, like witnesses.

Flucker. Then I'd toss a penny ; for gien ye trust to luck, she whiles favors ye, but gien ye commence to reason and argefy — ye're done !

Christie. The suitors had na your wit, my manny, or maybe they had na a penny to toss, sae ane chused the gowd and ane the siller ; but they got an awfu' affront. The gowd kist had just a skull intill't, and the siller a deed cuddy's head !

Chorus of Females. He ! he ! he !

Ditto of Males. Haw ! haw ! haw ! haw ! Ho !

Christie. An' Porsha puttit the pair of gowks to the door. Then came Bassanio, the lad fra Veeneece, that Porsha loed in secret. Veeneece, lasses, is a wonderful city ; the streets o't are water and the carriages are boats — that's in Chambers's.

Flucker. Wha are ye making a fool o' ?

Christie. What's wrang ?

Flucker. Yon's just as big a lee as ever I heerd.

The words were scarcely out of his mouth ere he had reason to regret them ; a severe box on the ear was administered by his indignant sister. Nobody pitied him.

Christie. I'll laern ye t' affront me before a' the company.

Jean Carnie. Suppose it's a lee, there's nae silver to pay for it, Flucker.

Christie. Jean, I never telt a lee in a' my days.

Jean. There's ane to begin wi', then. Go ahead, Custy.

Christie. She bade the music play for him, for music brightens thoucht; ony way, he chose the leed kist. Opens't and wasn't there Porsha's pictur, and a posy that said,

> "'If you be well pleased with this,
> And hold your fortune for your bliss;
> Turn you where your leddy iss,
> And greet her wi' a loving'"— **(Pause.)**

"Kess," roared the company.

Chorus (led by Flucker). Hurraih!

Christie (pathetically). Flucker, behave!

Sandy Liston (drunk). Hur-raih! He then solemnly reflected: "Na! but its na hurraih; decency requires amen first an' hurraih afterwards; here's kissin plenty, but I hear nae word o' the minister. Ye'll obsairve, young woman, that kissin's the prologue to sin, and I'm a decent man, an' a gray-headed mon, an' your licht stories are no for me; sae, if the minister's no expeckit, I shall retire —an' tak my quiet jill my lane."

Jean Carnie. And div ye really think a decent cummer like Custy wad let the lad and lass misbehave thirsels! Na, lad; the minister's at the door, but (sinking her voice to a confidential whisper) I daurna let him in, for fear he'd see ye hae putten the enemy in your mooth sae aerly. (That's Custy's word.)

"Jemmy Drysel," replied Sandy, addressing vacancy, for Jemmy was mysteriously at work in the kitchen,

"ye hae gotten a thoughtfu' wife." Then, with a strong revulsion of feeling: "Dinna let the blākguŭrd[1] in here," cried he, "to spoil the young folks' sporrt."

Christie. Aweel, lassies, comes a letter to Bassanio; he reads it, and turns as pale as deeth.

A Fishwife. Gude help us.

Christie. Poorsha behoved to ken his grief, wha had a better reicht? "Here's a letter, leddy," says he, "the paper's the boedy of my freend, like, and every word in it a gaping wound."

A Fisherman. Maircy on us.

Christie. Lad it was fra puir Antonio, ye mind o' him, lasses. Hech! the ill luck o' yon man, no a ship come hame; ane foundered at sea, coming fra Tri-po-lis; the pirates scuttled another, an' ane ran ashore on the Goodwyns, near Bright-helm-stane, that's in England itsel', I daur say: sae he could na pay the three thoosand ducats, an' Shylock had grippit him, an' sought the pund o' flesh aff the breest o' him, puir body.

Sandy Liston. He would na be the waur o' a wee bit hiding, yon thundering ŭrang ŭtang; let the man alane, ye cursed old cannibal.

Christie. Poorsha keepit her man but ae hoor till they were united, an' then sent him wi' a puckle o' her ain siller to Veeneece, and Antonio, — think o' that, lassies, — pairted on their wedding day.

Lizzy Johnstone (a fishwife, aged twelve). Hech, hech! it's lamēntable.

Jean Carnie. I'm saying, mairriage is quick wark, in some pairts, — here there's an awfu' trouble to get a man.

A Young Fishwife. Ay, is there.

Omnes. Haw! haw! haw! (The fishwife hides.)

[1] At present this is a spondee in England — a trochee in Scotland. The pronunciation of this important word ought to be fixed, representing, as it does, so large a portion of the community in both countries.

Christie. Fill your taupsels, lads and lasses, and awa to Veeneece.

Sandy Liston (sturdily). I'll no gang to sea this day.

Christie. Noo, we are in the hall o' judgment. Here are set the judges, awfu' to behold; there, on his throne, presides the Juke.

Flucker. She's awa to her Ennglish.

Lizzy Johnstone. Did we come to Veeneece to speak Scoetch, ye useless fule?

Christie. Here, pale and hopeless, but resigned, stands the broken mairchant, Antonio; there, wi' scales and knives, and revenge in his murderin' eye, stands the crewel Jew Shylock.

"Aweel," muttered Sandy considerately, "I'll no mak a disturbance on a wedding day."

Christie. They wait for Bell — I dinna mind his mind — a laerned lawyer, ony way; he's sick, but sends ane mair laerned still, and when this ane comes, he looks not older nor wiser than mysel'.

Flucker. No possible!

Christie. Ye need na be sae sarcy, Flucker, for when he comes to his wark he soon lets 'em ken — runs his een like lightening ower the boend. "This bond's forfeit. Is Antonio not able to dischairge the money?" — "Ay!" cries Bassanio, "here's the sum thrice told." Says the young judge, in a bit whisper to Shylock, "Shylock, there's thrice thy money offered thee. Be mairciful," says he, out loud. "Wha'll mak me?" says the Jew body. "Mak ye!" says he; "maircy is no a thing ye strain through a sieve, mon; it droppeth like the gentle dew fra heaven upon the place beneath; it blesses him that gives and him that taks; it becomes the king better than his throne, and airthly power is maist like God's power when maircy seasons justice."

Robert Haw (fisherman). Dinna speak like that to

me onybody, or I shall gie ye my boat, and fling my nets intil it, as ye sail awa wi' her.

Jean Carnie. Sae he let the puir deevil go. Oh! ye ken wha could stand up against siccan a shower o' Ennglish as thaat.

Christie. He just said, "My deeds upon my heed. I claim the law," says he; "there is no power in the tongue o' man to alter me. I stay here on my boend."

Sandy Liston. I hae sat quiet! — quiet I hae sat against my will, no to disturb Jamie Drysel's weddin'; but ye carry the game ower far, Shylock, my lad. I'll just give yon bluidy minded ŭrāng ŭtāng a hidin', and bring Tony off, the gude, puir-spirited creature; and him an' me, an' Bassanee, an' Porshee, we'll all hae a jill thegither.

He rose, and was instantly seized by two of the company, from whom he burst furiously, after a struggle, and the next moment was heard to fall clean from the top to the bottom of the stairs. Flucker and Jean ran out; the rest appealed against the interruption.

Christie. Hech! he's killed; Sandy Liston's brake his neck.

"What aboot it, lassy?" said a young fisherman, "'tis *Antonio* I'm feared for; save him, lassy, if poessible; but I doot ye'll no get him clear o' yon deevelich heathen."

"Auld Sandy's cheap sairved," added he, with all the indifference a human tone could convey.

"O Cursty," said Lizzy Johnstone, with a peevish accent, "dinna break the bonny yarn for naething."

Flucker (returning). He's a' reicht.

Christie. Is he no dead?

Flucker. Him deed? he's sober — that's a' the change I see.

Christie. Can he speak? I'm asking ye.

Flucker. Yes, he can speak.

Christie. What does he say, puir body?

Flucker. He sat up, an' sought a jill fra' the wife — puir body!

Christie. Hech, hech! he was my pupil in the airt o' sobriety! — Aweel, the young judge rises to deliver the sentence of the coort. — Silence! (thundered Christie. A lad and a lass that were slightly flirting were discountenanced.)

Christie. A pund o' that same mairchant's flesh is thine! the coort awards it, and the law does give it.

A Young Fishwife. There, I thoucht sae; he's gaun to cut him, he's gaun to cut him; I'll no can bide. (*Exibat.*)

Christie. There's a fulish goloshen. — "Have by a doctor to stop the blood." — "I see nae doctor in the boend," says the Jew body.

Flucker. Bait your hook wi' a boend, and ye shall catch yon carle's saul, Satin, my lad.

Christie (with dismal pathos). O Flucker, dinna speak evil o' deegneties, — that's maybe fishing for yoursel' the noo! — "An' ye shall cut the flesh frae off his breest." — "A sentence," says Shylock, "come, prepare."

Christie made a dash *en Shylock*, and the company trembled.

Christie. "Bide a wee," says the judge. "This boend gies ye na a drap o' bluid; the words expressly are, a pund o' flesh!"

(*A Dramatic Pause.*)

Jean Carnie (drawing her breath). That's into your mutton, Shylock.

Christie (with dismal pathos). O Jean! yon's an awfu' voolgar expression to come fra' a woman's mooth.

"Could ye no hae said, 'intil his bacon'?" said Lizzy Johnstone, confirming the remonstrance.

Christie. "Then tak your boend, an' your pund o' flesh; but in cutting o't, if thou dost shed one drop of Christian bluid — thou diest!"

Jean Carnie. Hech!

Christie. "Thy goods are by the laws of Veeneece con-fis-cate, confiscate!"

Then like an artful narrator, she began to wind up the story more rapidly.

"Sae Shylock got to be no sae saucy. 'Pay the boend thrice,' says he, 'and let the puir deevil go.' — 'Here it's,' says Bassanio. Na! the young judge wad na let him. 'He has refused it in open coort; no a bawbee for Shylock but just the forfeiture; an' he daur na tak it.' — 'I'm awa',' says he. 'The deivil tak ye a'.' Na! he was na to win clear sae; ance they'd gotten the Jew on the hep, they worried him, like good Christians, that's a fact. The judge fand a law that fitted him, for conspiring against the life of a citizen; an' he behooved to give up hoose an' lands, an' be a Christian; yon was a soor drap — he tarned no weel, puir auld villain, an' scairtit; an' the lawyers sent ane o' their weary parchments till his hoose, and the puir auld heathen signed awa his siller, an' Abraham, an' Isaac, an' Jacob, on the heed o't. I pity him, an auld, auld man; and his dochter had rin off wi' a Christian lad — they ca' her Jessica, and didn't she steal his very diamond ring that his ain lass gied him when he was young, an' maybe no sae hard-hairted."

Jean Carnie. Oh, the jaud! Suppose he was a Jew, it was na her business to clean him oot.

A Young Fishwife. Aweel, it was only a Jew body, that's my comfort.

Christie. Ye speak as a Jew was na a man; has not a Jew eyes, if ye please?

Lizzy Johnstone. Ay, has he! and the awfuest lang neb atween 'em.

Christie. Has not a Jew affections, paassions, organs ?

Jean. Na, Christie ! thir lads comes fr' Italy !

Christie. If you prick him, does he not bleed ? if you tickle him, does na he lauch ?

A Young Fishwife (pertly). I never kittlet a Jew, for my pairt, sae I'll no can tell ye.

Christie. If you poison him, does he not die ? and if you wrang him (with fury), shall he not revenge ?

Lizzy Johnstone. Oh, but ye're a fearsome lass.

Christie. Wha'll give me a sang for my bonny yarn ?

Lord Ipsden, who had been an unobserved auditor of the latter part of the tale, here inquired whether she had brought her book.

"What'n buik ?

"Your music-book."

"Here's my music-book," said Jean, roughly tapping her head.

"And here's mines," said Christie, bird-ly, touching her bosom.

"Richard," said she, thoughtfully, "I wish ye may no hae been getting in voolgar company ; div ye think we hae minds like rinning water ?"

Flucker (*avec malice*). And tongues like the mill-clack abune it ? Because if ye think sae, captain, ye're no far wrang.

Christie. Na ! we hae na muckle gowd, maybe, but our minds are gowden vessels.

Jean. Aha, lad.

Christie. They are not saxpenny sieves, to let music an' metre through, and leave us none the wiser or better. Dinna gang in low voolgar company, or you a lost laddy.

Ipsden. Vulgar, again ! everybody has a different sense for that word, I think. What is vulgar ?

Christie. Voolgar folk sit on an chair, ane, twa,

whiles three hours, eatin an' abune a' drinkin, as still as hoegs, or gruntin puir every day clashes, goessip, rubbich; when ye are aside them, ye might as weel be aside a cuddy; they canna gie ye a sang, they canna tell ye a story, they canna think ye a thoucht, to save their useless lives; that's voolgar folk.

She sings. "A caaller herrin'!"

Jean. "A caaller herrin'!"

Omnes.

> "Come buy my bonny caaller herrin',
> Six a penny caaller from the sea," etc.

The music chimed in, and the moment the song was done, without pause, or anything to separate or chill the succession of the arts, the fiddles diverged with a gallant plunge into "The Dusty Miller." The dancers found their feet by an instinct as rapid, and a rattling reel shook the floor like thunder. Jean Carnie assumed the privilege of a bride, and seized his lordship; Christie, who had a mind to dance with him too, took Flucker captive, and these four were one reel. There were seven others.

The principle of reel-dancing is articulation; the foot strikes the ground for every *accented* note; and, by-the by, it is their weakness of accent which makes all English reel and hornpipe players such failures.

And in the best steps of all, which it has in common with the hornpipe, such as the quick "heel and toe," the "sailor's fling," and the "double shuffle," the foot strikes the ground for every *single* note of the instrument.

All good dancing is beautiful.

But this articulate dancing, compared with the loose, lawless diffluence of motion that goes by that name, gives me (I must confess it) as much more pleasure as

articulate singing is superior to tunes played on the voice by a young lady.

Or the clean playing of my mother to the pianoforte splashing of my daughter; though the latter does attack the instrument as a washerwoman her soapsuds, and the former works like a lady;

Or skating to sliding;

Or English verse to dactyls in English;

Or painting to daubing;

Or preserved strawberries to strawberry jam.

What says Goldsmith of the two styles?

"They swam, sprawled, frisked, and languished; but Olivia's foot was as pat to the music as its echo." —*Vicar of Wakefield.*

Newhaven dancing aims also at fun; laughter mingles with agility; grotesque, yet graceful gestures are flung in, and little inspiriting cries flung out.

His lordship soon entered into the spirit of it. Deep in the mystery of the hornpipe, he danced one or two steps Jean and Christie had never seen, but their eyes were instantly on his feet, and they caught in a minute, and executed these same steps.

To see Christie Johnstone do the double-shuffle with her arms so saucily a-kimbo, and her quick, elastic foot at an angle of forty-five, was a treat.

The dance became inspiriting, inspiring, intoxicating; and when the fiddles at last left off, the feet went on another seven bars by the enthusiastic impulse.

And so, alternately spinning yarns, singing songs, dancing, and making fun, and mingling something of heart and brain in all, these benighted creatures made themselves happy instead of peevish, and with a day of stout, vigorous, healthy pleasure, refreshed, indemnified, and warmed themselves for many a day of toil.

Such were the two picnics of Inch Coombe, and these

rival cliques, agreeing in nothing else, would have agreed in this: each, if allowed (but we won't allow either) to judge the other, would have pronounced the same verdict, —

"*Ils ne savent pas vivre ces gens-là.*"

CHAPTER XI.

Two of our personages left Inch Coombe less happy than when they came to it.

Lord Ipsden encountered Lady Barbara with Mr. ——, who had joined her upon the island.

He found them discoursing, as usual, about the shams of the present day, and the sincerity of Cromwell and Mahomet, and he found himself *de trop*.

They made him, for the first time, regret the loss of those earnest times when, "to avoid the inconvenience of both addressing the same lady," you could cut a rival's throat at once, and be smiled on by the fair and society.

That a book-maker should blaspheme high civilization, by which alone he exists, and one of whose diseases and lying pains he is, neither surprised nor moved him; but that any human being's actions should be affected by such tempestuous twaddle, was ridiculous.

And that the witty Lady Barbara should be caught by this chaff was intolerable; he began to feel bitter.

He had the blessings of the poor, the good opinion of the world; every living creature was prepossessed in his favor but one, and that one despised him; it was a diabolical prejudice; it was the spiteful caprice of his fate.

His heart, for a moment, was in danger of deteriorating. He was miserable; the devil suggested to him, "make others miserable too;" and he listened to the advice.

There was a fine breeze, but instead of sailing on a wind, as he might have done, he made a series of tacks, and all were ill.

The earnest man first; and Flucker announced the skipper's insanity to the whole town of Newhaven, for, of course, these tacks were all marine solecisms.

The other discontented picnic-ian was Christie Johnstone. Gatty never came; and this, coupled with five or six days' previous neglect, could no longer pass unnoticed.

Her gayety failed her before the afternoon was ended; and the last two hours were spent by her alone, watching the water on all sides for him.

At last, long after the departure of his lordship's yacht, the Newhaven boat sailed from Inch Coombe with the wedding party. There was now a strong breeze, and the water every now and then came on board; so the men set the foresail with two reefs, and drew the mainsail over the women; and there, as they huddled together in the dark, Jean Carnie discovered that our gay storyteller's eyes were wet with tears.

Jean said nothing; she embraced her, and made them flow faster.

But when they came alongside the pier, Jean, who was the first to get her head from under the sail, whipped it back again, and said to Christie, —

"Here he is, Christie; dinna speak till him."

And sure enough there was, in the twilight, with a pale face and an uneasy look — Mr. Charles Gatty!

He peered timidly into the boat, and when he saw Christie, an "Ah!" that seemed to mean twenty different things at once, burst from his bosom. He held out his arm to assist her.

She cast on him one glance of mute reproach, and placing her foot on the boat's gunwale, sprang like an antelope upon the pier, without accepting his assistance.

Before going farther, we must go back for this boy, and conduct him from where we left him up to the present point.

The moment he found himself alone with Jean Carnie, in his own house, he began to tell her what trouble he was in; how his mother had convinced him of his imprudence in falling in love with Christie Johnstone; and how she insisted on a connection being broken off, which had given him his first glimpse of heaven upon earth, and was contrary to common-sense.

Jean heard him out, and then, with the air of a lunatic-asylum keeper to a rhodomontading patient, told him "he was one fool, and his mother was another." First she took him up on the score of prudence.

"You," said she, "are a beggarly painter, without a rap; Christie has houses, boats, nets, and money: you are in debt; she lays by money every week. It is not prudent on her part to take up with you — the better your bargain, my lad."

Under the head of common-sense, which she maintained was all on the same side of the question, she calmly inquired, —

"How could an old woman of sixty be competent to judge how far human happiness depends on love, when she has no experience of that passion, and the reminiscences of her youth have become dim and dark? You might as well set a judge in court, that has forgotten the law, — common-sense;" said she, "the old wife is sixty, and you are twenty — what can she do for you the forty years you may reckon to outlive her? Who is to keep you through those weary years, but the wife of your own choice, not your mother's? You English does na read the Bible, or ye'd ken that a lad is to 'leave his father and mother, and cleave until his wife,'" added she; then, with great contempt, she repeated, "common-sense, indeed! ye're fou wi' your common-sense; ye hae the name o't pat eneuch — but there's na muckle o' that mairchandize in your harns."

Gatty was astonished: what! was there really common-sense on the side of bliss? and when Jean told him to join her party at Inch Coombe, or never look her in the face again, scales seemed to fall from his eyes; and with a heart that turned in a moment from lead to a feather, he vowed he would be at Inch Coombe.

He then begged Jean on no account to tell Christie the struggle he had been subjected to, since his scruples were now entirely conquered.

Jean acquiesced at once, and said, "Indeed, she would be very sorry to give the lass that muckle pain."

She hinted, moreover, that her neebor's spirit was so high, she was quite capable of breaking with him at once upon such an intimation; and she, Jean, was "nae mischief-maker."

In the energy of his gratitude, he kissed this dark-browed beauty, professing to see in her a sister.

And she made no resistance to this way of showing gratitude, but muttered between her teeth, "He's just a bairn!"

And so she went about her business.

On her retreat, his mother returned to him, and, with a sad air, hoped nothing that that rude girl had said had weakened his filial duty.

"No, mother," said he.

She then, without explaining how she came acquainted with Jean's arguments, proceeded to demolish them one by one.

"If your mother is old and experienced," said she, "benefit by her age and experience. She has not forgotten love, nor the ills it leads to, when not fortified by prudence. Scripture says, a man shall cleave to his wife when he has left his parents; but in making that, the most important step of life, where do you read that he is to break the fifth commandment? But I do you

wrong, Charles, you never could have listened to that vulgar girl when she told you your mother was not your best friend."

"N—no, mother, of course not."

"Then you will not go to that place to break my heart, and undo all you have done this week?"

"I should like to go, mother."

"You will break my heart if you do."

"Christie will feel herself slighted, and she has not deserved this treatment from me."

"The other will explain to her, and if she is as good a girl as you say"—

"She is an angel!"

"How can a fishwife be an angel? Well, then she will not set a son to disobey his mother."

"I don't think she would! but is all the goodness to be on her side?"

"No, Charles, you do your part; deny yourself, be an obedient child, and your mother's blessing and the blessing of Heaven will rest upon you."

In short, he was not to go to Inch Coombe.

He stayed at home, his mother set him to work; he made a poor hand of it, he was so wretched. She at last took compassion on him, and in the evening, when it was now too late for a sail to Inch Coombe, she herself recommended a walk to him.

The poor boy's feet took him towards Newhaven, not that he meant to go to his love, but he could not forbear from looking at the place which held her.

He was about to return, when a spacious blue jacket hailed him. Somewhere inside this jacket was Master Flucker, who had returned in the yacht, leaving his sister on the island.

Gatty instantly poured out a flood of questions.

The baddish boy reciprocated fluency; he informed

him "that his sister had been the star of a goodly company, and that her own lad having stayed away, she had condescended to make a conquest of the skipper himself.

"He had come in quite at the tag end of one of her stories, but it had been sufficient to do his business — he had danced with her, had even whistled whilst she sung. (Hech, it was bonny !)

"And when the cutter sailed, he (Flucker) had seen her perched on a rock, like a mermaid, watching their progress, which had been slow, because the skipper, infatuated with so sudden a passion, had made a series of ungrammatical tacks.

"For his part he was glad," said the gracious Flucker; "the lass was a prideful hussy, that had given some twenty lads a sore heart and him many a sore back; and he hoped his skipper, with whom he naturally identified himself rather than with his sister, would avenge the male sex upon her."

In short, he went upon this tack till he drove poor Gatty nearly mad.

Here was a new feeling superadded; at first he felt injured, but on reflection what cause of complaint had he ?

He had neglected her; he might have been her partner — he had left her to find one where she could.

Fool, to suppose that so beautiful a creature would ever be neglected — except by him !

It was more than he could bear.

He determined to see her, to ask her forgiveness, to tell her everything, to beg her to decide, and, for his part, he would abide by her decision.

Christie Johnstone, as we have already related, declined his arm, sprang like a deer upon the pier, and walked towards her home, a quarter of a mile distant.

Gatty followed her, disconsolately, hardly knowing what to do.

At last, observing that she drew near enough to the wall to allow room for another on the causeway, he had just *nous* enough to creep alongside, and pull her sleeve somewhat timidly.

"Christie, I want to speak to you."

"What can ye hae to say till me?"

"Christie, I am very unhappy; and I want to tell you why, but I have hardly the strength or the courage."

"Ye shall come ben my hoose if ye are unhappy, and we'll hear your story; come away."

He had never been admitted into her house before.

They found it clean as a snowdrift.

They found a bright fire, and Flucker frying innumerable steaks.

The baddish boy had obtained them in his sister's name and at her expense, at the flesher's, and claimed credit for his affection.

Potatoes he had boiled in their jackets, and so skilfully, that those jackets hung by a thread.

Christie laid an unbleached tablecloth, that somehow looked sweeter than a white one, as brown bread is sweeter than white.

But lo, Gatty could not eat; so then Christie would not, because he refused her cheer.

The baddish boy chuckled, and addressed himself to the nice brown steaks with their rich gravy.

On such occasions a solo on the knife and fork seemed better than a trio to the gracious Flucker.

Christie moved about the room, doing little household matters; Gatty's eye followed her.

Her beauty lost nothing in this small apartment; she was here, like a brilliant in some quaint, rough setting, which all earth's jewellers should despise, and all its

poets admire, and it should show off the stone and not itself.

Her beauty filled the room, and almost made the spectators ill.

Gatty asked himself whether he could really have been such a fool as to think of giving up so peerless a creature.

Suddenly an idea occurred to him, a bright one, and not inconsistent with a true artist's character — he would decline to act in so doubtful a case; he would float passively down the tide of events — he would neither desert her, nor disobey his mother; he would take everything as it came, and to begin, as he was there, he would for the present say nothing but what he felt, and what he felt was that he loved her.

He told her so accordingly.

She replied, concealing her satisfaction, "that if he liked her, he would not have refused to eat when she asked him."

But our hero's appetite had returned with his change of purpose, and he instantly volunteered to give the required proof of affection.

Accordingly two pound of steaks fell before him.

Poor boy — he had hardly eaten a genuine meal for a week past.

Christie sat opposite him, and every time he looked off his plate, he saw her rich blue eyes dwelling on him.

Everything contributed to warm his heart, he yielded to the spell, he became contented, happy, gay.

Flucker ginger-cordialled him, his sister bewitched him.

She related the day's events in a merry mood.

Mr. Gatty burst forth into singing.

He sung two light and sombre trifles, such as in the present day are deemed generally encouraging to the

spirits, and particularly in accordance with the sentiment of supper — they were about death, and ivy green.

The dog's voice was not very powerful, but sweet and round as honey dropping from the comb.

His two hearers were entranced, for the creature sang with an inspiration good singers dare not indulge.

He concluded by informing Christie that the ivy was symbolical of her, and the oak prefigured Charles Gatty, Esq.

He might have inverted the simile with more truth.

In short, he never said a word to Christie about parting with her, but several about being buried in the same grave with her, sixty years hence, for which the spot he selected was Westminster Abbey.

And away he went, leaving golden opinions behind him.

The next day Christie was so affected with his conduct, coming as it did, after an apparent coolness, that she conquered her bashfulness and called on the "Vile Count," and with some blushes and hesitation, inquired "Whether a painter lad was a fit subject of charity."

"Why not?" said his lordship.

She then told him Gatty's case, and he instantly promised to see that artist's pictures, particularly "ane awfu' bonny ane," the hero of which she described as an English minister blessing the bairns with one hand, and giving orders to kill the puir Scoetch with the other.

"*C'est égal*," said Christie in Scotch, "its awfu' bonny."

Gatty reached home late; his mother had retired to rest.

But the next morning she drew from him what had happened, and then ensued another of those dialogues which I am ashamed again to give the reader.

Suffice it to say, that she once more prevailed, though with far greater difficulty. Time was to be given him to

unsew a connection which he could not cut asunder, and he, with tearful eyes and a heavy heart, agreed to take some step the very first opportunity.

This concession was hardly out of his mouth ere his mother made him kneel down and bestowed her blessing upon him. He received it coldly and dully, and expressed a languid hope it might prove a charm to save him from despair, and sad, bitter, and dejected, forced himself to sit down and work on the picture that was to meet his unrelenting creditor's demand.

He was working on his picture, and his mother with her needle at the table, when a knock was heard, and, gay as a lark, and fresh as the dew on the shamrock, Christie Johnstone stood in person in the apartment.

She was evidently the bearer of good tidings; but before she could express them, Mrs. Gatty beckoned her son aside, and announcing "she should be within hearing," bade him take the occasion that so happily presented itself, and make the first step.

At another time, Christie, who had learned from Jean the arrival of Mrs. Gatty, would have been struck with the old lady's silence; but she came to tell the depressed painter that the charitable viscount was about to visit him and his picture; and she was so full of the good fortune likely to ensue, that she was neglectful of minor considerations.

It so happened, however, that certain interruptions prevented her from ever delivering herself of the news in question.

First, Gatty himself came to her, and, casting uneasy glances at the door by which his mother had just gone out, said, —

"Christie!"

"My lad!"

"I want to paint your likeness."

This was for a souvenir, poor fellow!

"Hech! I wad like fine to be painted."

"It must be exactly the same size as yourself, and so like you, that should we be parted I may seem not to be quite alone in the world."

Here he was obliged to turn his head away.

"But we'll no pairt," replied Christie cheerfully. "Suppose ye're puir, I'm rich, and it's a' one; dinna be so cast down for auchty pund."

At this a slipshod servant entered, and said, —

"There's a fisher lad inquiring for Christie Johnstone."

"It will be Flucker," said Christie; "show him ben. What's wrang the noo, I wonder?"

The baddish boy entered, took up a position, and remained apparently passive, hands in pockets.

Christie. Aweel, what est?

Flucker. Custy.

Christie. What's your will, my manny?

Flucker. Custy, I was at Inch Keith the day.

Christie. And hae ye really come to Edinbro' to tell me thaat?

Flucker (dryly). Oh! ye ken the lasses are a hantle wiser than we are — will ye hear me? South Inch Keith, I played a bowl i' the water, just for divairsion, — and I catched twarree fish!

Christie. Floonders, I bet.

Flucker. Does floonders swim high? I'll let you see his gills, and if ye are a reicht fishwife ye'll smell bluid.

Here he opened his jacket, and showed a bright little fish.

In a moment all Christie's *nonchalance* gave way to a fiery animation. She darted to Flucker's side.

"Ye hae na been sae daft as tell?" asked she.

Flucker shook his head contemptuously.

"Ony birds at the island, Flucker?"

"Sea-maws, plenty, and a bird I dinna ken; he moonted sae high, then doon like thunder intil the sea, and gart the water flee as high as Haman, and porpoises as big as my boat."

"Porr-poises, fulish laddy — ye hae seen the herrin whale at his wark, and the solant guse ye hae seen her at wark; and beneath the sea, Flucker, every coed-fish and doeg-fish, and fish that has teeth, is after them; and half Scotland wad be at Inch Keith Island if they kenned what ye hae tell't me — dinna speak to me."

During this, Gatty, who did not comprehend this sudden excitement, or thought it childish, had tried in vain to win her attention.

At last he said a little peevishly, "Will you not attend to me, and tell me at least when you will sit to me?"

"Set!" cried she. "When there's nae wark to be done stanning."

And with this she was gone. At the foot of the stairs she said to her brother, —

"Puir lad! I'll sune draw auchty punds fra' the sea for him, with my feyther's nets."

As she disappeared, Mrs. Gatty appeared.

"And this is the woman whose mind was not in her dirty business," cried she. "Does not that open your eyes, Charles?"

"Ah! Charles," added she tenderly, "there's no friend like a mother."

And off she carried the prize; his vanity had been mortified.

And so that happened to Christie Johnstone which has befallen many a woman, — the greatness of her love made that love appear small to her lover.

"Ah! mother," cried he, "I must live for you and my art: I am not so dear to her as I thought."

And so, with a sad heart, he turned away from her, whilst she, with a light heart, darted away to think and act for him.

CHAPTER XII.

It was some two hours after this that a gentleman, plainly dressed, but whose clothes seemed a part of himself, — whereas mine I have observed hang upon me, and the Rev. Josiah Splitall's stick to him, — glided into the painter's room, with an inquiry whether he had not a picture or two disposable.

"I have one finished picture, sir," said the poor boy, "but the price is high."

He brought it, in a faint-hearted way, for he had shown it to five picture-dealers, and all five agreed it was hard.

He had painted a lime-tree, distant fifty yards, and so painted it that it looked something like a lime-tree fifty yards off.

"That was *mesquin*," said his judges; "the poetry of painting required abstract trees at metaphysical distance, not the various trees of nature as they appear under positive accidents."

On this Mr. Gatty had deluged them with words.

"When it is art, truth, or sense, to fuse a cow, a horse, and a critic, into one undistinguishable quadruped, with six legs, then it will be art to melt an ash, an elm, and a lime, things that differ more than quadrupeds, into what you call abstract trees, that any man who has seen a tree, as well as looked at one, would call drunken stinging-nettles. You, who never look at nature, how can you judge the arts, which are all but copies of nature? At two hundred yards distance, full-grown trees are more distinguishable than the animal tribe.

Paint me an abstract human being, neither man nor a woman," said he, "and then I will agree to paint a tree that shall be no tree; and if no man will buy it, perhaps the father of lies will take it off my hands, and hang it in the only place it would not disgrace."

In short, he never left off till he had crushed the non-buyers with eloquence and satire; but he could not crush them into buyers, — they beat him at the passive retort.

Poor Gatty, when the momentary excitement of argument had subsided, drank the bitter cup all must drink awhile, whose bark is alive and strong enough to stem the current down which the dead, weak things of the world are drifting, many of them into safe harbors.

And now he brought out his picture with a heavy heart.

"Now," said he to himself, "this gentleman will talk me dead, and leave me no richer in coin, and poorer in time and patience."

The picture was placed in a light, the visitor sat down before it.

A long pause ensued.

"Has he fainted?" thought Gatty, ironically; "he doesn't gabble."

"If you do not mind painting before me," said the visitor, "I should be glad if you would continue whilst I look into this picture."

Gatty painted.

The visitor held his tongue.

At first the silence made the artist uneasy, but by degrees it began to give him pleasure; whoever this was, it was not one of the flies that had hitherto stung him, nor the jackdaws that had chattered him dead.

Glorious silence! he began to paint under its influence like one inspired.

Half an hour passed thus.

"What is the price of this work of art?"

"Eighty pounds."

"I take it," said his visitor, quietly.

What, no more difficulty than that? He felt almost disappointed at gaining his object so easily.

"I am obliged to you, sir; much obliged to you," he added, for he reflected what eighty pounds were to him just then.

"It is my descendants who are obliged to you," replied the gentleman; "the picture is immortal!"

These words were an epoch in the painter's life.

The grave, silent inspection that had preceded them, the cool, deliberate, masterly tone in which they were said, made them oracular to him.

Words of such import took him by surprise.

He had thirsted for average praise in vain.

A hand had taken him, and placed him at the top of the tree.

He retired abruptly, or he would have burst into tears.

He ran to his mother.

"Mother," said he, "I am a painter; I always thought so at bottom, but I suppose it is the height of my ideas makes me discontented with my work."

"What has happened?"

"There is a critic in my room. I had no idea there was a critic in the creation, and there is one in my room."

"Has he bought your picture, my poor boy?" said Mrs. Gatty, distrustfully.

To her surprise he replied:

"Yes! he has got it; only eighty pounds for an immortal picture."

Mrs. Gatty was overjoyed, Gatty was a little sad; but reviving, he professed himself glad; the picture was going to a judge.

"It is not much money," said he, "but the man has spoken words that are ten thousand pounds to me."

He returned to the room; his visitor, hat in hand, was about to go; a few words were spoken about the art of painting, this led to a conversation, and then to a short discussion.

The new-comer soon showed Mr. Charles Gatty his ignorance of facts.

This man had sat quietly before a multitude of great pictures, new and old, in Europe.

He cooled down Charles Gatty, Esq, monopolist of nature and truth.

He quoted to him thirty painters in Germany, who paint every stroke of a landscape in the open air, and forty in various nations who had done it in times past.

"You, sir," he went on, "appear to hang on the skirts of a certain clique, who handle the brush well, but draw ill, and look at nature through the spectacles of certain ignorant painters who spoiled canvas four hundred years ago.

"Go no farther in that direction.

"Those boys, like all quacks, have one great truth which they disfigure with more than one falsehood.

"Hold fast their truth, which is a truth the world has always possessed, though its practice has been confined to the honest and laborious few.

"Eschew their want of mind and taste.

"Shrink with horror from that profane *culte de laideur*, that 'love of the lop-sided,' they have recovered from the foul receptacles of decayed art."

He reminded him further, that "Art is not imitation, but illusion; that a plumber and glazier of our day and a mediæval painter are more alike than any two representatives of general styles that can be found; and for the same reason, namely, that with each of these, art is

in its infancy; these two sets of bunglers have not learned how to produce the illusions of art."

To all this he added a few words of compliment on the mind, as well as mechanical dexterity, of the purchased picture, bade him good-morning, and glided away like a passing sunbeam.

"A mother's blessing is a great thing to have, and to deserve," said Mrs. Gatty, who had rejoined her son.

"It is, indeed," said Charles. He could not help being struck by the coincidence.

He had made a sacrifice to his mother, and in a few hours one of his troubles had melted away.

In the midst of these reflections arrived Mr. Saunders with a note.

The note contained a check for one hundred and fifty pounds, with these lines, in which the writer excused himself for the amendment: "I am a painter myself," said he, "and it is impossible that eighty pounds can remunerate the time expended on this picture, to say nothing of the skill."

We have treated this poor boy's picture hitherto with just contempt, but now that it is gone into a famous collection, mind, we always admired it; we always said so, we take our oath we did; if we have hitherto deferred framing it, that was merely because it was not sold.

MR. GATTY'S PICTURE, AT PRESENT IN THE COLLECTION OF LORD IPSDEN.

There was, hundreds of years ago, a certain Bishop of Durham, who used to fight in person against the Scotch, and defeat them. When he was not with his flock, the Northern wolves sometimes scattered it; but when the holy father was there, with his prayers and his battle-axe, England won the day!

This nettled the Scottish king, so he penetrated one day, with a large band, as far as Durham itself, and for a short time blocked the prelate up in his stronghold. This was the period of Mr. Gatty's picture;

Whose title was, —

"Half Church of God, half Tower against the Scot."

In the background was the cathedral, on the towers of which paced to and fro men in armor, with the western sun glittering thereon. In the centre, a horse and cart, led by a boy, were carrying a sheaf of arrows, tied with a straw band. In part of the foreground was the prelate, in a half suit of armor, but bareheaded; he was turning away from the boy, to whom his sinking hand had indicated his way into the holy castle, and his benignant glance rested on a child, whom its mother was holding up for his benediction. In the foreground the afternoon beams sprinkled gold on a long glassy slope, corresponding to the elevation on which the cathedral stood, separated by the river Wear from the group; and these calm beauties of nature, with the mother and child, were the peaceful side of this twofold story.

Such are the dry details. But the soul of its charm no pen can fling on paper. For the stately cathedral stood and lived: the little leaves slumbered yet lived; and the story floated and lived, in the potable gold of summer afternoon.

To look at this painted poem was to feel a thrill of pleasure in bare existence; it went through the eyes, where paintings stop, and warmed the depths and recesses of the heart with its sunshine and its glorious air.

CHAPTER XIII.

"WHAT is in the wind this dark night? Six Newhaven boats and twenty boys and hobble-de-hoys, hired by the Johnstones at half a crown each for a night's job."

"Secret service!"

"What is it for?"

"I think it is a smuggling lay," suggested Flucker; "but we shall know all in good time."

"Smuggling!" their countenances fell, they had hoped for something more nearly approaching the illegal.

"Maybe she has fand the herrin'," said a ten-year-old.

"Haw, haw, haw!" went the others. "She find the herrin', when there's five hundred fishermen after them baith sides the Firrth."

The youngster was discomfited.

In fact the expedition bore no signs of fishing.

The six boats sailed at sundown, led by Flucker; he brought-to on the south side of Inch Keith, and nothing happened for about an hour.

Then such boys as were awake, saw two great eyes of light coming up from Granton; rattle went the chain cable, and Lord Ipsden's cutter swung at anchor in four fathom water.

A thousand questions to Flucker.

A single puff of tobacco smoke was his answer.

And now crept up a single eye of light from Leith; she came among the boats; the boys recognized a crazy old cutter from Leith harbor, with Christie Johnstone on board.

"What is that brown heap on her deck?"

"A mountain of nets — fifty stout herring nets."

Tunc manifesta fides.

A yell burst from all the boys.

"He's gaun to tak us to Dunbar."

"Half a croown! ye're no blate."

Christie ordered the boats alongside her cutter, and five nets were dropped into each boat, six into Flucker's.

The depth of water was given them, and they were instructed to shoot their nets so as to keep a fathom and a half above the rocky bottom.

A herring net is simply a wall of meshes twelve feet deep, fifty feet long; it sinks to a vertical position by the weight of net twine, and is kept from sinking to the bottom of the sea by bladders or corks. These nets are tied to one another, and paid out at the stern of the boat. Boat and nets drift with the tide; if therefore the nets touched the rocks they would be torn to pieces, and the fisherman ruined.

And this saves the herring — that fish lies hours and hours at the very bottom of the sea, like a stone, and the poor fisherman shall drive with his nets, a yard or two over a square mile of fish, and not catch a herring tail; on the other hand, if they rise to play for five minutes, in that five minutes they shall fill seven hundred boats.

At nine o'clock all the boats had shot their nets, and Christie went alongside his lordship's cutter; he asked her many questions about herring fishery, to which she gave clear answers, derived from her father, who had always been what the fishermen call a lucky fisherman; that is, he had opened his eyes and judged for himself.

Lord Ipsden then gave her blue lights to distribute among the boats, that the first which caught herring might signal all hands.

This was done, and all was expectation.

Eleven o'clock came — no signal from any boat.

Christie became anxious; at last she went round to the boats; found the boys all asleep, except the baddish boy; waked them up, and made them all haul in their first net. The nets came in as black as ink, no sign of a herring.

There was but one opinion; there was no herring at Inch Keith; they had not been there this seven years.

At last, Flucker, to whom she came in turn, told her he was going into two fathom water, where he would let out the bladders and drop the nets on their cursed backs.

A strong remonstrance was made by Christie, but the baddish boy insisted that he had an equal right in all her nets, and setting his sail, he ran into shoal water.

Christie began to be sorrowful: instead of making money she was going to throw it away, and the ne'er-do-weel Flucker would tear six nets from the ropes.

Flucker hauled down his sail, and unstepped his mast in two fathom water; but he was not such a fool as to risk his six nets; he devoted one to his experiment, and did it well; he let out his bladder line a fathom, so that one-half his net would literally be higgledy-piggledy with the rocks, unless the fish were there *en masse*.

No long time was required.

In five minutes he began to haul in the net; first, the boys hauled in the rope, and then the net began to approach the surface. Flucker looked anxiously down, the other lads incredulously; suddenly they all gave a yell of triumph — an appearance of silver and lightning mixed, had glanced up from the bottom; in came the first two yards of the net — there were three herrings in it. These three proved Flucker's point as well as three million.

They hauled in the net. Before they had a quarter of it in, the net came up to the surface, and the sea was alive with molten silver. The upper half of the net

was empty, but the lower half was one solid mass of fish.

The boys could not find a mesh; they had nothing to handle but fish.

At this moment the easternmost boat showed a blue light.

"The fish are rising," said Flucker, "we'll na risk nae mair nets."

Soon after this a sort of song was heard from the boat that had showed a light. Flucker, who had got his net in, ran down to her, and found, as he suspected, that the boys had not power to draw the weight of fish over the gunwale.

They were singing, as sailors do, that they might all pull together; he gave them two of his crew, and ran down to his own skipper.

The said skipper gave him four men.

Another blue light!

Christie and her crew came a little nearer the boats, and shot twelve nets.

The yachtsmen entered the sport with zeal, so did his lordship.

The boats were all full in a few minutes, and nets still out.

Then Flucker began to fear some of these nets would sink with the weight of fish; for the herring die after awhile in a net, and a dead herring sinks.

What was to be done?

They got two boats alongside the cutter, and unloaded them into her, as well as they could; but before they could half do this, the other boats hailed them.

They came to one of them; the boys were struggling with a thing which no stranger would have dreamed was a net.

Imagine a white sheet, fifty feet long, varnished with

red-hot silver; there were twenty barrels in this single net. By dint of fresh hands they got half of her in, and then the meshes began to break; the men leaned over the gunwale, and put their arms round blocks and masses of fish, and so flung them on board; and the cod-fish and dog-fish snapped them almost out of the men's hands, like tigers.

At last they came to a net, which was a double wall of herring; it had been some time in the water, and many of the fish were dead; they tried their best, but it was impracticable; they laid hold of the solid herring, and when they lifted up a hundred-weight clear of the water, away it all tore, and sank back again.

They were obliged to cut away this net, with twenty pounds sterling in her. They cut away the twine from the head-ropes, and net and fish went to the bottom.

All hands were now about the cutter; Christie's nets were all strong and new. They had been some time in the water; in hauling them up her side, quantities of fish fell out of the net into the water, but there were enough left.

She averaged twelve barrels a net.

Such of the yawls as were not quite full, crept between the cutter and the nets, and caught all they wanted.

The projector of this fortunate speculation suddenly announced that she was very sleepy.

Flucker rolled her up in a sail, and she slept the sleep of infancy on board her cutter.

When she awoke it was seven o'clock in the morning, and her cutter was creeping with a smart breeze, about two miles an hour, a mile from Newhaven pier.

The yacht had returned to Granton, and the yawls, very low in the water, were creeping along like snails, with both sails set.

The news was in Edinburgh long before they landed.

They had been discerned under Inch Keith at the dawn.

And the manner of their creeping along, when there was such a breeze, told the tale at once to the keen, experienced eyes that are sure to be scanning the sea.

Donkey carts came rattling down from the capital.

Merchants came pelting down to Newhaven pier.

The whole story began to be put together by bits, and comprehended.

Old Johnstone's cleverness was recalled to mind.

The few fishermen left at Newhaven were ready to kill themselves.

Their wives were ready to do the same good office for La Johnstone.

Four Irish merchants agreed to work together, and to make a show of competition, the better to keep the price down within bounds.

It was hardly fair, four men against one innocent unguarded female.

But this is a wicked world.

Christie landed, and proceeded to her own house; on the way she was met by Jean Carnie, who debarrassed her of certain wrappers, and a handkerchief she had tied round her head, and informed her she was the pride of Newhaven.

She next met these four little merchants, one after another.

And since we ought to dwell as little as possible upon scenes in which unguarded innocence is exposed to artful conspiracies, we will put a page or two into the brute form of dramatic dialogue, and so sail through it quicker.

First Merchant. Where are ye going, Meggie?

Christie Johnstone. If onybody asks ye, say ye dinna ken.

First Merchant. Will ye sell your fish?

Christie. Suner than gie them.

First Merchant. You will be asking fifteen shillin' the cran.

Christie. And ten to that.

First Merchant. Good-morning.

Second Merchant. Would he not go over fifteen shillings? Oh, the thief o' the world! I'll give sixteen.

Third Merchant. But I'll give eighteen.

Second Merchant. More fool you! Take him up, my girl.

Christie. Twenty-five is my price the day.

Third Merchant. You will keep them till Sunday week, and sell their bones.

[*Exeunt the three Merchants.*

Enter Fourth Merchant.

Fourth Merchant. Are your fish sold? I'll give sixteen shillings.

Christie. I'm seeking twenty-five, an' I'm offered eighteen.

Fourth Merchant. Take it. [*Exit.*

Christie. They hae putten their heads thegither.

Here Flucker came up to her, and told her there was a Leith merchant looking for her. "And Custy," said he, "there's plenty wind getting up, your fish will be sair hashed; put them off your hands, I rede ye."

Christie. Ay, lad! Flucker, hide, an' when I play my hand sae, ye'll run in an' cry, "Cirsty, the Irishman will gie ye twenty-two schellin' the cran."

Flucker. Ye ken mair than's in the catecheesm, for as releegious as ye are.

The Leith merchant was Mr. Miller, and this is the way he worked.

Miller (in a mellifluous voice). Are ye no fatigued, my deear?

Christie (affecting fatigue). Indeed, sir, and I am.

Miller. Shall I have the pleasure to deal wi' ye?

Christie. If it's your pleasure, sir. I'm seekin' twenty-five schellin'.

Miller (pretending not to hear). As you are a beginner, I must offer fair; twenty schellin' you shall have, and that's three shillings above Dunbar.

Christie. Wad ye even carted herrin' with my fish caller fra the sea? and Dunbar — oh fine! ye ken there's nae herrin' at Dunbar the morn; this is the Dunbar schule that slipped westward: I'm the mairket, ye'll hae to buy o' me or gang to your bed — (Here she signalled to Flucker). I'll no be oot o' mine lang.

Enter Flucker hastily crying: "Cirsty, the Irishman will gie ye twenty-two schellin'."

"I'll no tak it," said Christie.

"They are keen to hae them," said Flucker; and hastily retired, as if to treat further with the small merchants.

On this Mr. Miller, pretending to make for Leith, said carelessly, "Twenty-three shillings, or they are not for me."

"Tak the cutter's freight at a hundre' cran, an' I'm no caring," said Christie.

"They are mine!" said Mr. Miller, very sharply. "How much shall I give you the day?"

"Auchty pund, sir, if you please — the lave when you like; I ken ye, Mr. Miller."

Whilst counting her the notes, the purchaser said slyly to her: —

"There's more than a hundred cran in the cutter, my woman."

"A little, sir," replied the vender; "but ere I could count them till ye by baskets, they would lose seven or eight cran in book,[1] your gain my loss."

[1] Bulk.

"You are a vara intelligent young person," said Mr. Miller, gravely.

"Ye had measured them wi' your walking-stick, sir; there's just ae scale ye didna wipe off, though ye are a carefu' mon, Mr. Miller; sae I laid the bait for ye an' fine ye took it."

Miller took out his snuff-box, and tapping it, said:

"Will ye go into partnership with me, my dear?"

"Ay, sir!" was the reply. "When I'm aulder an' ye're younger."

At this moment the four merchants, believing it useless to disguise their co-operation, returned to see what could be done.

"We shall give you a guinea a barrel."

"Why, ye offered her twenty-two shillings before."

"That we never did, Mr. Miller."

"Haw, haw!" went Flucker.

Christie looked down and blushed.

Eyes met eyes, and without a word spoken all was comprehended and silently approved. There was no nonsense uttered about morality in connection with dealing.

Mr. Miller took an enormous pinch of snuff, and drew for the benefit of all present the following inference:

MR. MILLER'S APOPHTHEGM.

"Friends and neighbors! when a man's heed is gray with age and thoucht (pause) — he's just fit to go to schule to a young lass o' twenty."

There was a certain middle-aged fishwife, called Beeny Liston, a tenant of Christie Johnstone's; she had not paid her rent for some time, and she had not been pressed for it; whether this, or the whiskey she was in the habit of taking, rankled in her mind, certain it is she had always an ill word for her landlady.

She now met her, envied her success, and called out in a coarse tone, —

"Oh, ye're a gallant quean; ye'll be waur than ever the noo."

"What's wrang, if ye please?" said the Johnstone, sharply.

Reader, did you ever see two fallow bucks commence a duel?

They strut round, eight yards apart, tails up, look carefully another way to make the other think it all means nothing, and being both equally sly, their horns come together as if by concert.

Even so commenced this duel of tongues between these two heroines.

Beeny Liston, looking at everybody but Christie, addressed the natives who were congregating, thus: —

"Did ever ye hear o' a decent lass taking the herrin' oot o' the men's mooths — is yon a woman's pairt, I'm asking ye?"

On this, Christie, looking carefully at all the others except Beeny, inquired with an air of simple curiosity:

"Can onybody tell me wha Liston Carnie's drunken wife is speaking till? no to ony decent lass, though. Na! ye ken she wad na hae th' impudence!"

"Oh, ye ken fine I'm speaking till yoursel'."

Here the horns clashed together.

"To me, woman? (With admirably acted surprise.) Oo, ay! it will be for the twa years' rent you're awin me. Giest!"

Beeny Liston. Ye're just the impudentest girrl i' the toon, an' ye hae proved it the day (her arms akimbo).

Christie (arms akimbo). Me, impudent? how daur ye speak against my charäckter, that's kenned for decency o' baith sides the Firrth?

Beeny (contemptuously). Oh, ye're sly enough to beguile the men, but we ken ye.

Christie. I'm no sly — and (drawing near and hissing the words) I'm no like the woman Jean an' I saw in Rose Street, dead drunk on the causeway, while her mon was working for her at sea. If ye're no ben your hoose in ae minute, I'll say that will gar Liston Carnie fling ye ower the pier-head, ye fool-moothed drunken leear — Scairt![1]

If my reader has seen and heard Mademoiselle Rachel utter her famous *Sortez* in "Virginie," he knows exactly with what a gesture and tone the Johnstone uttered this word.

Beeny (in a voice of whining surprise). Hech! what a spite Flucker Johnstone's dochter has taen against us.

Christie. Scairt!

Beeny (in a coaxing voice, and moving a step). Aweel! what's a' your paession, my boenny woman?

Christie. Scairt!

Beeny retired before the thunder and lightning of indignant virtue.

Then all the fishboys struck up a dismal chant of victory.

"Yoo-hoo — Custy's won the day — Beeny's scair-*tit*" (going up on the last syllable).

Christie moved slowly away towards her own house, but before she could reach the door she began to whimper — little fool.

Thereat chorus of young Athenians chanted:

"Yu-hoo! come back, Beeny, ye'll maybe win yet. Custy's away gree-*tin*" (going up on the last syllable).

"I'm no greetin, ye rude bairns," said Christie, bursting into tears, and retiring as soon as she had effected that proof of her philosophy.

It was about four hours later; Christie had snatched some repose. The wind, as Flucker prognosticated, had

[1] A local word; a corruption from the French *Sortez*.

grown to a very heavy gale, and the Firth was brown and boiling.

Suddenly a clamor was heard on the shore, and soon after a fishwife made her appearance, with rather a singular burden.

Her husband, ladies; *rien que cela.*

She had him by the scruff of the neck; he was *dos-à-dos*, with his booted legs kicking in the air, and his fists making warlike but idle demonstrations, and his mouth uttering ineffectual bad language.

This worthy had been called a coward by Sandy Liston, and being about to fight with him, and get thrashed, his wife had whipped him up, and carried him away; she now flung him down, at some risk to his equilibrium.

"Ye are not fit to feicht wi' Sandy Liston," said she; "if ye are for feichtin, here's for ye."

As a comment to this proposal, she tucked up the sleeves of her short gown. He tried to run by her; she caught him by the bosom, and gave him a violent push, that sent him several paces backwards; he looked half fierce, half astounded; ere he could quite recover himself, his little servant forced a pipe into his hand, and he smoked contented and peaceable.

Before tobacco the evil passions fall, they tell me.

The cause of this quarrel soon explained itself; up came Sandy Liston, cursing and swearing.

"What! ye hae gotten till your wife's, that's the place for ye; to say there's a brig in distress, and ye'll let her go on the rocks under your noses; but what are ye afraid o'? there's na danger."

"Nae danger!" said one of the reproached, "are ye fou?"

"Ye are fou wi' fear yoursel'; of a' the beasts that crawl the airth, a cooward is the ugliest, I think."

"The wifes will no let us," said one, sulkily.

"It's the woman in your hairts that keeps ye," roared Sandy, hoarsely. "Curse ye, ye are sure to dee ane day, and ye are sure to be ——! (a past participle) soon or late, what signifies when? Oh! curse the hour ever I was born amang sic a cooardly crew." (Gun at sea.)

"There!"

"She speaks till ye, hersel'; she cries for maircy; to think of a' that hear ye cry, Alexander Liston is the only mon mon enough to answer." (Gun.)

"You are mistaken, Mr. Alexander Liston," said a clear, smart voice, whose owner had mingled unobserved with the throng; "there are always men to answer such occasions. Now, my lads, your boats have plenty of beam, and well handled, should live in any sea; who volunteers with Alexander Liston and me?"

The speaker was Lord Ipsden.

The fishwives of Newhaven, more accustomed to measure men than poor little Lady Barbara Sinclair, saw in this man what, in point of fact he was, a cool daring devil, than whom none more likely to lead men into mortal danger, or pull them through it, for that matter.

They recognized their natural enemy, and collected together against him, like hens at the sight of a hawk.

"And would you really entice our men till their death?"

"My life's worth as much as theirs, I suppose."

"Nae! your life! it's na worth a button; when you dee your next kin will dance, and wha'll greet? but our men hae wife and bairns to look till." (Gun at sea.)

"Ah! I didn't look at it in that light," said Lord Ipsden. He then demanded paper and ink. Christie Johnstone, who had come out of her house, supplied it from her treasures, and this cool hand actually began to

convey a hundred and fifty thousand pounds away, upon a sheet of paper blowing in the wind; when he had named his residuary legatee, and disposed of certain large bequests, he came to the point —

"Christie Johnstone, what can these people live on? two hundred a year? Living is cheap here — confound the wind!"

"Twa hundred? Fifty! Vile Count."

"Don't call me Vile Count. I am Ipsden, and my name's Richard. Now, then, be smart with your names."

Three men stepped forward, gave their names, had their widows provided for, and went for their sou'-westers, etc.

"Stay," said Lord Ipsden, writing. "To Christina Johnstone, out of respect for her character, one thousand pounds."

"Richard, dinna gang," cried Christie, "oh! dinna gang, dinna gang, dinna gang; it's no your business."

"Will you lend me your papa's Flushing jacket and sou'wester, my dear? If I was sure to be drowned, I'd go."

Christie ran in for them.

In the mean time, discomposed by the wind, and by feelings whose existence neither he nor I nor any one suspected, Saunders, after a sore struggle between the frail man and the perfect domestic, blurted out, —

"My lord, I beg your lordship's pardon, but it blows tempestuous."

"That is why the brig wants us," was the reply.

"My lord, I beg your lordship's pardon," whimpered Saunders. "But oh! my lord, don't go; it's all very well for fishermen to be drowned; it is their business, but not yours, my lord."

"Saunders, help me on with this coat."

Christie had brought it.

"Yes, my lord," said Saunders, briskly, his second nature reviving.

His lordship, whilst putting on the coat and hat, undertook to cool Mr. Saunders's aristocratic prejudices.

"Should Alexander Liston and I be drowned," said he, coolly, "when our bones come ashore, you will not know which are the fisherman's and which the viscount's." So saying, he joined the enterprise.

"I shall pray for ye, lad," said Christie Johnstone, and she retired for that purpose.

Saunders, with a heavy heart, to the nearest tavern, to prepare an account of what he called "Heroism in High Life," large letters, and the usual signs of great astonishment! ! ! ! ! ! for the "Polytechnic Magazine."

The commander of the distressed vessel had been penny-wise. He had declined a pilot off the Isle of May, trusting to fall in with one close to the port of Leith; but a heavy gale and fog had come on; he knew himself in the vicinity of dangerous rocks; and, to make matters worse, his ship, old and sore battered by a long and stormy voyage, was leaky; and unless a pilot came alongside, his fate would be, either to founder, or run upon the rocks, where he must expect to go to pieces in a quarter of an hour.

The Newhaven boat lay in comparatively smooth water, on the lee side of the pier.

Our adventurers got into her, stepped the mast, set a small sail, and ran out. Sandy Liston held the sheet, passed once round the belaying-pin, and whenever a larger wave than usual came at them, he slacked the sheet, and the boat losing her way, rose gently, like a cork, upon seas that had seemed about to swallow her.

But seen from the shore it was enough to make the most experienced wince; so completely was this wooden

shell lost to sight, as she descended from a wave, that each time her reappearance seemed a return from the dead.

The weather was misty; the boat was soon lost sight of: the story remains ashore.

CHAPTER XIV.

It was an hour later; the natives of the New Town had left the pier, and were about their own doors, when three Buckhaven fishermen came slowly up from the pier; these men had arrived in one of their large fishing-boats which defy all weather.

The men came slowly up; their petticoat trousers were drenched, and their neck-handkerchiefs and hair were wet with spray.

At the foot of the New Town they stood still and whispered to each other.

There was something about these men that drew the eye of Newhaven upon them.

In the first place, a Buckhaven man rarely communicates with natives of Newhaven, except at the pier, where he brings in his cod and ling from the deep sea; flings them out like stones, and sells them to the fish-wives; then up sail and away for Fifeshire.

But these men evidently came ashore to speak to some one in the town.

They whispered together; something appeared to be proposed and demurred to; but at last two went slowly back towards the pier, and the eldest remained, with a fisherman's long mackintosh coat in his hand, which the others had given him as they left him.

With this in his hand, the Buckhaven fisherman stood in an irresolute posture; he looked down, and seemed to ask himself what course he should take.

"What's wrang?" said Jean Carnie, who, with her neighbors, had observed the men. "I wish yon man may na hae ill news."

"What ill news wad he hae?" replied another.

"Are ony freends of Liston Carnie here?" said the fisherman.

"The wife's awa' to Granton, Beeny Liston they ca' her — there's his house," added Jean, pointing up the row.

"Ay," said the fisherman, "I ken he lived there."

"Lived there!" cried Christie Johnstone; "oh! what's this?"

"Freends," said the man, gravely, "his boat is driving keel uppermost in Kircauldy Bay; we passed her near enough to read the name upon her."

"But the men will have won to shore, please God?"

The fisherman shook his head.

"She'll hae coupit a mile wast Inch Keith, an' the tide rinning aff the island an' a heavy sea gaun. This is a' Newhaven we'll see of them (holding up the coat) till they rise to the top in three weeks' time."

The man then took the coat, which was now seen to be drenched with water, and hung it up on a line not very far from its unfortunate owner's house; then, in the same grave and subdued tone in which he had spoken all along, he said, "We are sorry to bring siccan a tale into your toon," and slowly moved off to rejoin his comrades, who had waited for him at no great distance. They then passed through the Old Town, and in five minutes the calamity was known to the whole place.

After the first stupor, the people in the New Town collected into knots, and lamented their hazardous calling, and feared for the lives of those that had just put to sea in this fatal gale for the rescue of strangers, and the older ones failed not to match this present sorrow with others within their recollection.

In the middle of this, Flucker Johnstone came hastily in from the Old Town, and told them he had seen the wife, Beeny Liston, coming through from Granton.

The sympathy of all was instantly turned in this direction.

"She would hear the news."

"It would fall on her like a thunder-clap."

"What would become of her?"

Every eye was strained towards the Old Town, and soon the poor woman was seen about to emerge from it; but she was walking in her usual way, and they felt she could not carry her person so if she knew.

At the last house she was seen to stop and speak to a fisherman and his wife that stood at their own door.

"They are telling her," was then the cry.

Beeny Liston then proceeded on her way.

Every eye was strained.

No, they had not told her.

She came gayly on, the unconscious object of every eye and every heart.

The hands of this people were hard, and their tongues rude, but they had shrunk from telling this poor woman of her bereavement; they thought it kinder she should know it under her own roof from her friends or neighbors, than from comparative strangers.

She drew near her own door.

And now a knot collected round Christie Johnstone, and urged her to undertake the sad task.

"You that speak sa learned, Christie, ye should tell her; we daur na."

"How can I tell her?" said Christie, turning pale. "How will I tell her? Ise try."

She took one trembling step to meet the woman.

Beeny's eye fell upon her.

"Ay! here's the Queen o' Newhaven," cried she, in a loud and rather coarse voice. "The men will hae ta leave the place now y'are turned fisherman, I daur say."

"Oh, dinna fleicht on me! dinna fleicht on me!" cried Christie, trembling.

"Mairey on us," said the other, "auld Flucker Johnstone's dochter turned humble. What next?"

"I'm vexed for speaking back till ye the morn," faltered Christie.

"Hett," said the woman, carelessly, "let yon flea stick i' the wa'. I fancy I began on ye. Aweel, Cirsty," said she, falling into a friendlier tone, "it's the place we live in spoils us; Newhaven's an impudent toon, as sure as deeth.

"I passed through the Auld Toon the noo, a place I never speak in; an' if they did na glower at me as I had been a strange beast.

"They cam' to their very doors to glower at me; if ye'll believe me, I thoucht shame.

"At the hinder end my paassion got up, and I faced a wife East-by, and I said, 'What gars ye glower at me that way, ye ignorant woman?' Ye would na think it, she answered like honey itsel' — 'I'm askin' your paardon,' says she; and her mon by her side said, 'Gang hame to your ain hoose, my woman, and Gude help ye, and help us a' at our need,' the decent mon. 'It's just there I'm for,' said I, 'to get my mon his breakfast.'"

All who heard her drew their breath with difficulty.

The woman then made for her own house, but in going up the street she passed the wet coat hanging on the line.

She stopped directly.

They all trembled — they had forgotten the coat — it was all over; the coat would tell the tale.

"Aweel," said she, "I could sweer that's Liston Carnie's coat, a droukit wi' the rain;" then she looked again at it, and added, slowly, "if I did na ken he has his away wi' him at the piloting." And in another moment she was in her own house, leaving them all standing there half stupefied.

Christie had indeed endeavored to speak, but her tongue had cloven to her mouth.

Whilst they stood looking at one another, and at Beeny Liston's door, a voice that seemed incredibly rough, loud, and harsh, jarred upon them; it was Sandy Liston, who came in from Leith, shouting, —

"Fifty pounds for salvage, lasses! is na thaat better than staying cooard-like aside the women?"

"Whisht! whisht!" cried Christie. "We are in heavy sorrow; puir Liston Cairnie and his son Willy lie deed at the bottom o' the Firrth."

"Gude help us!" said Sandy, and his voice sank.

"An', O Sandy! the wife does na ken, and it's hairt-breaking to see her and hear her; we canna get her tell't; ye're the auldest mon here; ye'll tell her, will ye no, Sandy?"

"No, me, that I will not!"

"Oh, yes; ye are kenned for your stoot heart an' coorage; ye come fra' facing the sea an' wind in a bit yawl."

"The sea and the wind," cried he, contemptuously; "they be ——; I'm used wi' them; but to look a woman i' the face, an' tell her her mon and her son are drowned since yestreen, I hae na coorage for that."

All further debate was cut short by the entrance of one who came expressly to discharge the sad duty all had found so difficult. It was the Presbyterian clergyman of the place; he waved them back. "I know, I know," said he, solemnly.

"Where is the wife?"

She came out of her house at this moment, as it happened, to purchase something at Drysale's shop, which was opposite.

"Beeny," said the clergyman, "I have sorrowful tidings."

"Tell me them, sir," said she, unmoved. "Is it a deeth?" added she, quietly.

"It is! — death, sudden and terrible; in your own house I must tell it you (and may God show me how to break it to her)."

He entered her house.

"Aweel," said the woman to the others, "it maun be some far awa cousin, or the like; for Liston an' me hae nae near freends. Meg, ye idle hizzy," screamed she to her servant, who was one of the spectators, "your pat is no on yet; div ye think the men will no be hungry when they come in fra the sea?"

"They will never hunger nor thirst ony mair," said Jean, solemnly, as the bereaved woman entered her own door.

There ensued a listless and fearful silence.

Every moment some sign of bitter sorrow was expected to break forth from the house, but none came; and amidst the expectation and silence the waves dashed louder and louder, as it seemed, against the dyke, conscious of what they had done.

At last, in a moment, a cry of agony arose, so terrible that all who heard it trembled, and more than one woman shrieked in return, and fled from the door; at which, the next moment, the clergyman stood alone, collected, but pale, and beckoned. Several women advanced.

"One woman," said he.

Jean Carnie was admitted, and after awhile returned.

"She is come to hersel'," whispered she; "I am no weel mysel'." And she passed into her own house.

Then Flucker crept to the door to see.

"Oh, dinna spie on her!" cried Christie.

"Oh, yes, Flucker," said many voices.

"He is kneelin'," said Flucker. "He has her hand to gar her kneel tae, — she winna, — she does na see him

nor hear him; he will hae her. He has won her to kneel, — he is prayin' an' greetin' aside her. I canna see noo; my een's blinded."

"He's a gude mon," said Christie. "Oh, what wad we do without the ministers?"

Sandy Liston had been leaning sorrowfully against the wall of the next house; he now broke out.

"An auld shipmate at the whale fishing! An' noow we'll never lift the dredging sang thegither again in yon dirty detch that's droowned him; I maun hae whiskey, an' forget it a'."

He made for the spirit-shop like a madman, but ere he could reach the door a hand was laid on him like a vise. Christie Johnstone had literally sprung on him. She hated this horrible vice, — had often checked him; and now it seemed so awful a moment for such a sin, that she forgot the wild and savage nature of the man, who had struck his own sister, and seriously hurt her, but a month before, — she saw nothing but the vice and its victim, and she seized him by the collar, with a grasp from which he in vain attempted to shake himself loose.

"No! ye'll no gang there at siccan a time."

"Hands off, ye daft jaud," roared he, "or there'll be another deeth i' the toon."

At the noise, Jean Carnie ran in.

"Let the ruffian go!" cried she, in dismay. "O Christie! dinna put your hand on a lion's mane."

"Yes, I'll put my hand on his mane, ere I'll let him mak a beast o' himsel'."

"Sandy, if ye hurt her, I'll find twenty lads that will lay ye deed at her feet."

"Haud your whisht," said Christie, very sharply, "he's no to be threetened."

Sandy Liston, black and white with rage, ground his

teeth together, and said, lifting his hand, "Wull ye let me go, or must I tak my hand till ye?"

"No!" said Christie, "I'll no let ye go, *sae look me i' the face; Flucker's dochter, your auld comrade, that saved your life at Holy Isle, — think o' his face, — an' look in mines, — an' strike me!*"

They glared on one another, — he fiercely and unsteadily; she firmly and proudly.

Jean Carnie said afterwards, "her eyes were like coals of fire."

"Ye are doing what nae mon i' the toon daur; ye are a bauld, unwise lassy."

"It's you mak me bauld," was the instant reply. "I saw ye face the mad sea to save a ship fra the rocks, an' will I fear a mon's hand, when I can save (rising to double her height) my feyther's auld freend fra the puir mon's enemy, the enemy o' mankind, the cursed, cursed drink. O Sandy Liston! hoow could ye think to put an enemy in your mooth to steal awa your brains!"

"This's no Newhaven chat; wha lairns ye sic words o' power?"

"A deed mon!"

"I would na wonder, y'are no canny; she's ta'en a' the poower oot o' my body, I think." Then suddenly descending to a tone of abject submission, "What's your pleesure, Flucker Johnstone's dochter?"

She instantly withdrew the offensive grasp, and leaning affectionately on his shoulder, she melted into her rich Ionic tones.

"It's no a time for sin: ye'll sit by my fire, an' get your dinner; a bonny haggis hae I for you an' Flucker, an' we'll improve this sorrowfu' judgment; an' ye'll tell me o' auld times; o' my feyther dear, that likeit ye weel, Sandy, — o' the storrms ye hae weathered side by side, — o' the muckle whales ye killed Greenland way, — an'

abune a', o' the lives ye hae saved at sea by your daurin an' your skell; an', O Sandy! will na that be better as sit an' poor leequid damnation doown your throat, an' gie awa the sense an' feeling o' a mon for a sair heed and an ill name?"

"I'se gang, my lamb," said the rough man, quite subdued; "I daur say whiskey will no pass my teeth the day."

And so he went quietly away, and sat by Christie's fireside.

Jean and Christie went towards the boats.

Jean, after taking it philosophically for half a minute, began to whimper.

"What's wrang?" said Christie.

"Div ye think my hairt's no in my mooth wi' you gripping yon fierce robber?"

Here a young fishwife, with a box in her hand, who had followed them, pulled Jean by the coats.

"Hets," said Jean, pulling herself free.

The child then, with a pertinacity these little animals have, pulled Christie's coats.

"Hets," said Christie, freeing herself more gently.

"Ye suld mairry Van Amburgh," continued Jean; "ye are just such a lass as he is a lad."

Christie smiled proudly, was silent, but did not disown the comparison.

The little fishwife, unable to attract attention by pulling, opened her box, and saying, "Lasses, I'll let ye see my presoner: hech! he's boenny!" pulled out a mouse by a string fastened to his tail, and set him in the midst for friendly admiration.

"I dinna like it, I dinna like it!" screamed Christie. "Jean, put it away: it fears me, Jean!" This she uttered (her eyes almost starting from her head with unaffected terror) at the distance of about eight yards,

whither she had arrived in two bounds that would have done no discredit to an antelope.

"Het," said Jean uneasily, "hae ye coowed yon savage, to be scared at the wee beastie?"

Christie, looking askant at the animal, explained, "A moose is an awesome beast; it's no like a mon;" and still her eye was fixed by fascination upon the four-footed danger.

Jean, who had not been herself in genuine tranquillity, now turned savagely on the little Wombwelless: "An' div ye really think ye are to come here wi' a' the beasts i' the Airk? Come, awa ye go, the pair o' ye."

These severe words, and a smart push, sent the poor little biped off roaring, with the string over her shoulder, recklessly dragging the terrific quadruped, which made fruitless grabs at the shingle. — *Moral.* Don't terrify bigger folk than yourself.

Christie had intended to go up to Edinburgh with her eighty pounds, but there was more trouble in store this eventful day.

Flucker went out after dinner, and left her with Sandy Liston, who was in the middle of a yarn, when some one came running in and told her Flucker was at the pier crying for her. She inquired what was the matter. "Come an' ye'll see," was all the answer. She ran down to the pier. There was poor Flucker lying on his back: he had slipped from the pier into a boat that lay alongside. The fall was considerable: for a minute he had been insensible, then he had been dreadfully sick, and now he was beginning to feel his hurt; he was in great anguish; nobody knew the extent of his injuries; he would let nobody touch him; all his cry was for his sister. At last she came: they all made way for her: he was crying for her as she came up.

"My bairn! my bairn!" cried she; and the poor lit-

tle fellow smiled, and tried to raise himself towards her.

She lifted him gently in her arms; she was powerful, and affection made her stronger. She carried him in her arms all the way home, and laid him on her own bed. Willy Liston, her discarded suitor, ran for the surgeon. There were no bones broken, but his ankle was severely sprained, and he had a terrible bruise on the loins. His dark, ruddy face was streaked and pale, but he never complained after he found himself at home.

Christie hovered round him, a ministering angel, applying to him with a light and loving hand whatever could ease his pain; and he watched her with an expression she had never noticed in his eye before.

At last, after two hours' silence, he made her sit in full view, and then he spoke to her; and what think you was the subject of his discourse?

He turned to and told her, one after another, without preface, all the loving things she had done to him ever since he was five years old. Poor boy! he had never shown much gratitude, but he had forgotten nothing, literally nothing.

Christie was quite overcome with this unexpected trait: she drew him gently to her bosom, and wept over him; and it was sweet to see a brother and sister treat each other almost like lovers, as these two began to do — they watched each other's eye so tenderly.

This new care kept the sister in her own house all the next day; but towards the evening, Jean, who knew her other anxiety, slipped in and offered to take her place for an hour by Flucker's side. At the same time she looked one of those signals which are too subtle for any but woman to understand.

Christie drew her aside, and learned that Gatty and his mother were just coming through from Leith. Chris-

tie ran for her eighty pounds, placed them in her bosom, cast a hasty glance at a looking-glass, little larger than an oyster-shell, and ran out.

"Hech! What pleased the auld wife will be to see he has a lass that can mak auchty pund in a morning."

This was Christie's notion.

At sight of them she took out the bank-notes, and with eyes glistening and cheeks flushing, she cried, —

"O Chairles, ye'll no gang to jail: I hae the siller!" and she offered him the money with both hands, and a look of tenderness and modesty that embellished human nature.

Ere he could speak, his mother put out her hand, and not rudely, but very coldly, repelling Christie's arm, said in a freezing manner, —

"We are much obliged to you, but my son's own talents have rescued him from his little embarrassment."

"A nobleman has bought my picture," said Gatty proudly.

"For one hundred and fifty pounds," said the old lady, meaning to mark the contrast between that sum and what Christie had in her hand.

Christie remained like a statue, with her arms extended and the bank-notes in her hand; her features worked: she had much ado not to cry; and any one that had known the whole story, and seen this unmerited repulse, would have felt for her; but her love came to her aid; she put the notes in her bosom, sighed and said, —

"I would hae likeit to hae been the first, ye ken, but I'm real pleased."

"But, mother," said Gatty, "it was very kind of Christie all the same. O Christie!" said he in a tone of despair.

At this kind word Christie's fortitude was sore tried; she turned away her head. She was far too delicate to

let them know who had sent Lord Ipsden to buy the picture.

Whilst she turned away, Mrs. Gatty said in her son's ear, —

"Now I have your solemn promise to do it here, and at once: you will find me on the beach behind these boats: do it."

The reader will understand that during the last few days Mrs. Gatty had improved her advantage, and that Charles had positively consented to obey her. The poor boy was worn out with the struggle: he felt he must have peace or die. He was thin and pale, and sudden twitches came over him: his temperament was not fit for such a battle; and it is to be observed nearly all the talk was on one side. He had made one expiring struggle: he described to his mother an artist's nature, his strength, his weakness: he besought her not to be a slave to general rules, but to inquire what sort of a companion the individual Gatty needed: he lashed with true but brilliant satire the sort of wife his mother was ready to see him saddled with, — a stupid, unsympathizing creature, whose ten children would, by nature's law, be also stupid, and so be a weight on him till his dying day. He painted Christie Johnstone, mind and body, in words as true and bright as his colors: he showed his own weak points, her strong ones, and how the latter would fortify the former.

He displayed, in short, in one minute more intellect than his mother had exhibited in sixty years; and that done, with all his understanding, wit, and eloquence, he succumbed like a child to her stronger will: he promised to break with Christie Johnstone.

When Christie had recovered her composure and turned round to her companions, she found herself alone with Charles.

"Chairles," said she gravely.

"Christie," said he uneasily.

"Your mother does na like me. Oh! ye need na deny it; and we are na together as we used to be, my lad."

"She is prejudiced, but she has been the best of mothers to me, Christie."

"Aweel."

"Circumstances compel me to return to England."

(Ah, coward! anything but the real truth!)

"Aweel, Chairles, it will not be for lang."

"I don't know; you will not be so unhappy as I shall — at least I hope not."

"Hoow do ye ken that?"

"Christie, do you remember the first night we danced together?"

"Ay."

"And we walked in the cool by the seaside, and I told you the names of the stars, and you said those were not their real names, but nicknames we give them here on earth. I loved you that first night."

"And I fancied you the first time I set eyes on you."

"How can I leave you, Christie? What shall I do?"

"I ken what I shall do," answered Christie, coolly; then bursting into tears she added, "I shall dee! I shall dee!"

"No! you must not say so; at least I will never love any one but you."

"An' I'll live as I am a' my days for your sake. O England! I hae likeit ye sae weel, ye suld na rob me o' my lad — he's a' the joy I hae!"

"I love you," said Gatty. "Do you love me?"

All the answer was, her head upon his shoulder.

"I can't do it," thought Gatty, "and I won't! Christie," said he, "stay here, don't move from here." And he dashed among the boats in great agitation.

He found his mother rather near the scene of the late conference.

"Mother," said he fiercely, like a coward as he was, "ask me no more, my mind is made up forever; I will not do this scoundrelly, heartless, beastly, ungrateful action you have been pushing me to so long."

"Take care, Charles, take care," said the old woman, trembling with passion, for this was a new tone for her son to take with her. "You had my blessing the other day, and you saw what followed it; do not tempt me to curse an undutiful, disobedient, ungrateful son."

"I must take my chance," said he, desperately; "for I am under a curse any way! I placed my ring on her finger, and held up my hand to God and swore she should be my wife: she has my ring and my oath, and I will not perjure myself even for my mother."

"Your ring! Not the ruby ring I gave you from your dead father's finger — not that! not that!"

"Yes! yes! I tell you yes! and if he was alive, and saw her, and knew her goodness, he would have pity on me, but I have no friend; you see how ill you have made me, but you have no pity; I could not have believed it; but since you have no mercy on me, I will have the more mercy on myself; I marry her to-morrow, and put an end to all this shuffling and manœuvring against an angel! I am not worthy of her, but I'll marry her to-morrow. Good-by."

"Stay!" said the old woman, in a terrible voice; "before you destroy me and all I have lived for, and suffered and pinched for, hear me; if that ring is not off the hussy's finger in half an hour, and you my son again, I fall on this sand and" —

"Then God have mercy upon me, for I'll see the whole creation lost eternally, ere I'll wrong the only creature that is an ornament to the world."

He was desperate; and the weak, driven to desperation, are more furious than the strong.

It was by Heaven's mercy that neither mother nor son had time to speak again.

As they faced each other, with flaming eyes and faces, all self-command gone, about to utter hasty words, and lay up regret, perhaps for all their lives to come, in a moment, as if she had started from the earth, Christie Johnstone stood between them!

Gatty's words, and still more, his hesitation, had made her quick intelligence suspect: she had resolved to know the truth; the boats offered every facility for listening — she had heard every word.

She stood between the mother and son.

They were confused, abashed, and the hot blood began to leave their faces.

She stood erect like a statue, her cheek pale as ashes, her eyes glittering like basilisks, she looked at neither of them.

She slowly raised her left hand, she withdrew a ruby ring from it, and dropped the ring on the sand between the two.

She turned on her heel, and was gone as she had come, without a word spoken.

They looked at one another, stupefied at first; after a considerable pause the stern old woman stooped, picked up the ring, and in spite of a certain chill that the young woman's majestic sorrow had given her, said, placing it on her own finger, "This is for your wife!"

"It will be for my coffin, then," said her son, so coldly, so bitterly, and so solemnly, that the mother's heart began to quake.

"Mother," said he, calmly, "forgive me, and accept your son's arm."

"I will, my son."

"We are alone in the world now, mother."

Mrs. Gatty had triumphed, but she felt the price of her triumph more than her victory. It had been done in one moment, that for which she had so labored, and it seemed that had she spoken long ago to Christie, instead of Charles, it could have been done at any moment.

Strange to say, for some minutes the mother felt more uneasy than her son; she was a woman, after all, and could measure a woman's heart, and she saw how deep the wound she had given one she was now compelled to respect.

Charles, on the other hand, had been so harassed backwards and forwards, that to him certainty was relief; it was a great matter to be no longer called upon to decide. His mother had said "Part," and now Christie had said "Part;" at least the affair was taken out of his hands, and his first feeling was a heavenly calm.

In this state he continued for about a mile, and he spoke to his mother about his art, sole object now; but after the first mile he became silent, distrait; Christie's pale face, her mortified air, when her generous offer was coldly repulsed, filled him with remorse: finally, unable to bear it, yet not daring to speak, he broke suddenly from his mother without a word, and ran wildly back to Newhaven; he looked back only once, and there stood his mother, pale, with her hands piteously lifted towards heaven.

By the time he got to Newhaven he was as sorry for her as for Christie. He ran to the house of the latter; Flucker and Jean told him she was on the beach. He ran to the beach; he did not see her at first, but presently looking back, he saw her, at the edge of the boats, in company with a gentleman in a boating dress. He looked — could he believe his eyes? he saw Christie Johnstone kiss this man's hand, who then, taking her

head gently in his two hands, placed a kiss upon her brow, whilst she seemed to yield lovingly to the caress.

Gatty turned faint, sick; for a moment everything swam before his eyes; he recovered himself, they were gone.

He darted round to intercept them; Christie had slipped away somewhere; he encountered the man alone!

CHAPTER XV.

Christie's situation requires to be explained.

On leaving Gatty and his mother, she went to her own house. Flucker — who after looking upon her for years as an inconvenient appendage, except at dinner-time, had fallen in love with her in a manner that was half pathetic, half laughable, all things considered — saw by her face she had received a blow, and raising himself in the bed, inquired anxiously "What ailed her?"

At these kind words, Christie Johnstone laid her cheek upon the pillow beside Flucker's, and said, —

"O, my laamb! be kind to your puir sister fra this hoor, for she has naething i' the warld noo but yoursel'."

Flucker began to sob at this.

Christie could not cry; her heart was like a lump of lead in her bosom; but she put her arm round his neck, and at the sight of his sympathy she panted heavily, but could not shed a tear — she was sore stricken.

Presently Jean came in, and as the poor girl's head ached as well as her heart, they forced her to go and sit in the air. She took her creepie and sat and looked on the sea; but whether she looked seaward or landward, all seemed unreal; not things, but hard pictures of things, some moving, some still. Life seemed ended — she had lost her love.

An hour she sat in this miserable trance; she was diverted into a better, because a somewhat less dangerous form of grief, by one of those trifling circumstances that often penetrate to the human heart, when inaccessible to greater things.

Willie, the fiddler, and his brother, came through the town, playing as they went, according to custom; their music floated past Christie's ears like some drowsy chime, until, all of a sudden, they struck up the old English air, "Speed the plough."

Now it was to this tune Charles Gatty had danced with her their first dance the night they made acquaintance.

Christie listened, lifted up her hands, and crying—

"Oh, what will I do? what will I do?" burst into a passion of grief.

She put her apron over her head, and rocked herself, and sobbed bitterly.

She was in this situation when Lord Ipsden, who was prowling about, examining the proportions of the boats, discovered her.

Some one in distress — that was all in his way.

"Madam!" said he.

She lifted up her head.

"It is Christie Johnstone. I'm so glad; that is, I'm sorry you are crying, but I'm glad I shall have the pleasure of relieving you," and his lordship began to feel for a check-book.

"And div ye really think siller's a cure for every grief?" said Christie bitterly.

"I don't know," said his lordship; "it has cured them all as yet."

"It will na cure me then!" and she covered her head with her apron again.

"I am very sorry," said he; "tell me (whispering) what is it? poor little Christie!"

"Dinna speak to me; I think shame; ask Jean. O Richard, I'll no be lang in this warld!"

"Ah!" said he, "I know too well what it is now; I know by sad experience. But, Christie, money will cure

it in your case, and it shall, too; only instead of five pounds, we must put a thousand pounds or two to your banker's account, and then they will all see your beauty, and run after you."

"How daur ye even to me that I'm seekin' a lad?" cried she, rising from her stool; "I would na care, suppose there was na a lad in Britain." And off she flounced.

"Offended her by my gross want of tact," thought the viscount.

She crept back, and two velvet lips touched his hand. That was because she had spoken harshly to a friend.

"O Richard!" said she despairingly, "I'll no be lang in this warld."

He was touched: and it was then he took her head and kissed her brow, and said, "This will never do; my child, go home and have a nice cry, and I will speak to Jean; and rely upon me, I will not leave the neighborhood till I have arranged it all to your satisfaction."

And so she went, — a little, a very, very little — comforted by his tone and words.

Now this was all very pretty; but then seen at a distance of fifty yards, it looked very ugly; and Gatty, who had never before known jealousy, the strongest and worst of human passions, was ripe for anything.

He met Lord Ipsden, and said at once, in his wise temperate way:

"Sir, you are a villain!"

Ipsden. *Plait-il?*

Gatty. You are a villain!

Ipsden. How do you make that out?

Gatty. But, of course, you are not a coward, too.

Ipsden (ironically). You surprise me with your moderation, sir.

Gatty. Then you will waive your rank, — you are a lord, I believe, — and give me satisfaction.

Ipsden. My rank, sir, such as it is, engages me to give a proper answer to proposals of this sort; I am at your orders.

Gatty. A man of your character must often have been called to an account by your victims, so — so (hesitating) perhaps you will tell me the proper course.

Ipsden. *I* shall send a note to the castle, and the colonel will send me down somebody with a mustache; I shall pretend to remember mustache, mustache will pretend he remembers me; he will then communicate with your friend, and they will arrange it all for us.

Gatty. And, perhaps, through your licentiousness, one or both of us will be killed.

Ipsden. Yes; but we need not trouble our heads about that, — the seconds undertake everything.

Gatty. I have no pistols.

Ipsden. If you will do me the honor to use one of mine, it shall be at your service.

Gatty. Thank you.

Ipsden. To-morrow morning?

Gatty. No. I have four days' painting to do on my picture; I can't die till it is finished; — Friday morning.

Ipsden. (He is mad.) I wish to ask you a question; you will excuse my curiosity. Have you any idea what we are agreeing to differ about?

Gatty. The question does you little credit, my lord; that is to add insult to wrong.

He went off hurriedly, leaving Lord Ipsden mystified.

He thought Christie Johnstone was somehow connected with it; but conscious of no wrong, he felt little disposed to put up with any insult, especially from this boy, to whom he had been kind, he thought.

His lordship was, besides, one of those good, simple-minded creatures, educated abroad, who, when invited to fight, simply bow, and load two pistols, and get them-

selves called at six; instead of taking down tomes of casuistry and puzzling their poor brains to find out whether they are game-cocks or capons, and why.

As for Gatty, he hurried home in a fever of passion, begged his mother's pardon, and reproached himself for ever having disobeyed her on account of such a perfidious creature as Christie Johnstone.

He then told her what he had seen, as distance and imagination had presented it to him; to his surprise the old lady cut him short.

"Charles," said she, "there is no need to take the girl's character away; she has but one fault, — she is not in the same class of life as you, and such marriages always lead to misery: but in other respects she is a worthy young woman, — don't speak against her character, or you will make my flesh creep; you don't know what her character is to a woman, high or low."

By this moderation perhaps she held him still faster.

Friday morning arrived. Gatty had, by hard work, finished his picture, collected his sketches from nature, which were numerous, left by memorandum everything to his mother, and was, or rather felt, as ready to die as live.

He had hardly spoken a word, or eaten a meal, these four days; his mother was in anxiety about him. He rose early, and went down to Leith; an hour later, his mother, finding him gone out, rose, and went to seek him at Newhaven.

Meantime Flucker had entirely recovered, but his sister's color had left her cheeks; and the boy swore vengeance against the cause of her distress.

On Friday morning, then, there paced on Leith Sands two figures.

One was Lord Ipsden.

The other seemed a military gentleman, who having

swallowed the mess-room poker, and found it insufficient, had added the ramrods of his company.

The more his lordship reflected on Gatty, the less inclined he had felt to invite a satirical young dog from barracks to criticise such a *rencontre;* he had therefore ordered Saunders to get up as a field-marshal, or some such trifle, and what Saunders would have called incomparable verticality was the result.

The painter was also in sight.

Whilst he was coming up, Lord Ipsden was lecturing Marshal Saunders on a point on which that worthy had always thought himself very superior to his master — "Gentlemanly deportment."

"Now, Saunders, mind and behave like a gentleman, or we shall be found out."

"I trust, my lord, my conduct" —

"What I mean is, you must not be so overpoweringly gentleman-like, as you are apt to be; no gentleman is so gentleman-like as all that; it could not be borne, *c'est suffoquant;* and a white handkerchief is unsoldier-like — and nobody ties a white handkerchief so well as that; of all the vices, perfection is the most intolerable." His lordship then touched with his cane the generalissimo's tie, whose countenance straightway fell, as though he had lost three successive battles.

Gatty came up.

They saluted.

"Where is your second, sir?" said the maréchal.

"My second?" said Gatty. "Ah! I forgot to wake him — does it matter?"

"It is merely a custom," said Lord Ipsden, with a very slightly satirical manner. "Savanadero," said he, "do us the honor to measure the ground, and be everybody's second."

Savanadero measured the ground, and handed a pistol

to each combatant, and struck an imposing attitude apart.

"Are you ready, gentlemen?" said this Jack-o'-both-sides.

"Yes!" said both.

Just as the signal was about to be given, an interruption occurred. — "I beg your pardon, sir," said Lord Ipsden to his antagonist; "I am going to take a *liberty* — *a great liberty* with you, but I think you will find your pistol is only at half-cock."

"Thank you, my lord; what am I to do with the thing?"

"Draw back the cock so, and be ready to fire."

"So?" *Bang!*

He had touched the trigger as well as the cock, so off went the barker; and after a considerable pause the field-marshal sprang yelling into the air.

"Hallo!" cried Mr. Gatty.

"Ah! oh! I'm a dead man," whined the general.

"Nonsense!" said Ipsden, after a moment of anxiety. "Give yourself no concern, sir," said he, soothingly, to his antagonist — "a mere accident. — Maréchal, reload Mr. Gatty's pistol."

"Excuse me, my lord" —

"Load his pistol directly," said his lordship, sternly; "and behave like a gentleman."

"My lord! my lord! but where shall I stand to be safe?"

"Behind me!"

The commander of division advanced reluctantly for Gatty's pistol.

"No, my lord!" said Gatty, "it is plain I am not a fit antagonist; I shall but expose myself — and my mother has separated us; I have lost her — if you do not win her, some worse man may; but oh! if you are a man use her tenderly."

"Whom?"

"Christie Johnstone! O sir, do not make her regret me too much! She was my treasure, my consolation, — she was to be my wife, she would have cheered the road of life — it is a desert now. I loved her — I — I" —

Here the poor fellow choked.

Lord Ipsden turned round, and threw his pistol to Saunders, saying, "Catch that, Saunders."

Saunders, on the contrary, by a single motion changed his person from a vertical straight line to a horizontal line, exactly parallel with the earth's surface, and the weapon sang innoxious over him.

His lordship then, with a noble defiance of etiquette, walked up to his antagonist, and gave him his hand with a motion no one could resist; — for he felt for the poor fellow.

"It is all a mistake," said he. "There is no sentiment between La Johnstone and me but mutual esteem. I will explain the whole thing; *I* admire *her* for her virtue, her wit, her innocence, her goodness, and all that sort of thing; and *she* — what *she* sees in *me*, I am sure I don't know," added he, slightly shrugging his aristocratic shoulders. "Do me the honor to breakfast with me at Newhaven."

"I have ordered twelve sorts of fish at the 'Peacock,' my lord," said Saunders.

"Divine! (I hate fish.) I told Saunders all would be hungry and none shot; by-the-by, you are winged, I think you said, Saunders?"

"No, my lord! but look at my trousers."

The bullet had cut his pantaloons.

"I see — only barked; so go and see about our breakfast."

"Yes, my lord" (faintly).

"And draw on me for fifty pounds worth of — new trousers."

"Yes, my lord" (sonorously).

The duellists separated, Gatty taking the short cut to Newhaven; he proposed to take his favorite swim there, to refresh himself before breakfast; and he went from his lordship a little cheered by remarks which fell from him, and which, though vague, sounded friendly; — poor fellow, except when he had brush in hand he was a dreamer.

This viscount, who did not seem to trouble his head about class dignity, was to convert his mother from her aristocratic tendencies, or something.

Que sais-je? what will not a dreamer hope?

Lord Ipsden strolled along the sands, and judge his surprise, when, attended by two footmen, he met at that time in the morning, Lady Barbara Sinclair.

Lord Ipsden had been so disheartened and piqued by this lady's conduct, that for a whole week he had not been near her; this line of behavior sometimes answers.

She met him with a grand display of cordiality.

She inquired, "Whether he had heard of a most gallant action, that, coupled with another circumstance (here she smiled) had in part reconciled her to the age we live in?"

He asked for further particulars.

She then informed him "that a ship had been ashore on the rocks, that no fisherman dared venture out, that a young gentleman had given them his whole fortune, and so bribed them to accompany him; that he had saved the ship and the men's lives, paid away his fortune, and lighted an odious cigar, and gone home, never minding, amidst the blessings and acclamations of a maritime population."

A beautiful story she told him; so beautiful, in fact, that until she had discoursed ten minutes, he hardly recognized his own feat; but when he did, he blushed

inside as well as out with pleasure. Oh! music of music — praise from eloquent lips, and those lips, the lips we love.

The next moment he felt ashamed; ashamed that Lady Barbara should praise him beyond his merits, as he conceived.

He made a faint hypocritical endeavor to moderate her eulogium; this gave matters an unexpected turn: Lady Barbara's eyes flashed defiance.

"I say it was a noble action, that one nursed in effeminacy (as you all are) should teach the hardy seamen to mock at peril — noble fellow!"

"He did a man's duty, Barbara."

"Ipsden, take care, you will make me hate you, if you detract from a deed you cannot emulate. This gentleman risked his own life to save others — he is a hero! I should know him by his face the moment I saw him. Oh that I were such a man, or knew where to find such a creature!"

The water came into Lord Ipsden's eyes; he did not know what to say or do; he turned away his head.

Lady Barbara was surprised; her conscience smote her.

"Oh, dear," said she, "there now, I have given you pain — forgive me; we can't all be heroes; dear Ipsden, don't think I despise you now as I used. Oh, no! I have heard of your goodness to the poor, and I have more experience now. There is nobody I esteem more than you, Richard, so you need not look so."

"Thank you, dearest Barbara."

"Yes, and if you were to be such a goose as to write me another letter proposing absurdities to me" —

"Would the answer be different?"

"Very different."

"O Barbara, would you accept?"

"Why, of course not — but I would refuse civilly!"

"Ah!"

"There, don't sigh; I hate a sighing man. I'll tell you something that I know will make you laugh." She then smiled saucily in his face, and said, "Do you remember Mr. ——?"

L'effrontée! this was the earnest man.

But Ipsden was a match for her this time.

"I think I do," said he; "a gentleman who wants to make John Bull little again into John Calf; but it won't do."

Her ladyship laughed. "Why did you not tell us that on Inch Coombe?"

"Because I had not read 'The Catspaw' then."

"'The Catspaw'? Ah! I thought it could not be you. Whose is it?"

"Mr. Jerrold's."

"Then Mr. Jerrold is cleverer than you."

"It is possible."

"It is certain! Well, Mr. Jerrold and Lord Ipsden, you will both be glad to hear that it was, in point of fact, a bull that confuted the advocate of the Middle Ages; we were walking; he was telling me manhood was extinct except in a few earnest men who lived upon the past, its associations, its truth; when a horrid bull gave — oh — such a bellow! and came trotting up. I screamed and ran — I remember nothing but arriving at the stile, and lo, on the other side, offering me his arm with *empressement* across the wooden barrier, was"—

"Well?"

"Well! don't you see?"

"No — oh — yes, I see! — fancy — ah! Shall I tell you how he came to get first over? He ran more earnestly than you."

"It is not Mr. Jerrold this time, I presume," said her satirical ladyship.

"No! you cannot always have him. I venture to predict your ladyship on your return home gave this mediæval personage his *congé*."

"No!"

"No?"

"I gave it him at the stile! Let us be serious, if you please; I have a confidence to make you, Ipsden. Frankly, I owe you some apology for my conduct of late; I meant to be reserved — I have been rude, — but you shall judge me. A year ago you made me some proposals; I rejected them because, though I like you" —

"You like me?"

"I detest your character. Since then, my West India estate has been turned into specie; that specie, the bulk of my fortune, placed on board a vessel; that vessel lost, at least we think so — she has not been heard of."

"My dear cousin!"

"Do you comprehend that now I am cooler than ever to all young gentlemen who have large incomes, and (holding out her hand like an angel) I must trouble you to forgive me."

He kissed her lovely hand.

"I esteem you more and more," said he.

"You ought, for it has been a hard struggle to me not to adore you, because you are so improved, *mon cousin*."

"Is it possible? In what respect?"

"You are browner and charitabler; and I should have been very kind to you — mawkishly kind I fear, my sweet cousin, if this wretched money had not gone down in the Tisbe."

"Hallo!" cried the viscount.

"Ah!" squeaked Lady Barbara, unused to such interjections.

"Gone down in what?" said Ipsden in a loud voice.

"Don't bellow in people's ears. The Tisbe, stupid," cried she, screaming at the top of her voice.

"Ri tum, ti tum, ti tum, tum, tum, tiddy, iddy," went Lord Ipsden, — he whistled a polka.

Lady Barbara (inspecting him gravely). I have heard it at a distance, but I never saw how it was done before. *It is very, very pretty!*

Ipsden. Polkez-vous, madame?

Lady Barbara. Si, je polke, monsieur le vicomte.

They polked for a second or two.

"Well, I dare say I am wrong," cried Lady Barbara, "but I like you better now you are a downright — ahem! than when you were only an insipid non-intellectual — You are greatly improved."

Ipsden. In what respects?

Lady Barbara. Did I not tell you? browner and more impudent; but tell me (said she, resuming her sly satirical tone) how is it that you, who used to be the pink of courtesy, dance and sing over the wreck of my fortunes?

"Because they are not wrecked."

"I thought I told you my specie is gone down in the Tisbe."

Ipsden. But the Tisbe has not gone down.

Lady Barbara. I tell you it is.

Ipsden. I assure you it is not.

Lady Barbara. It is not?

Ipsden. Barbara! I am too happy, I begin to nourish such sweet hopes once more; oh, I could fall on my knees and bless you for something you said just now.

Lady Barbara blushed to the temples.

"Then why don't you?" said she. "All you want is a little enthusiasm." Then recovering herself, she said, —

"You kneel on wet sand, with black trousers on; that will never be!"

These two were so occupied that they did not observe the approach of a stranger until he broke in upon their dialogue.

An ancient mariner had been for some minutes standing off and on, reconnoitring Lord Ipsden; he now bore down, and with great rough, roaring cordiality, that made Lady Barbara start, cried out, —

"Give me your hand, sir, — give me your hand, if you were twice a lord.

"I couldn't speak to you till the brig was safe in port, and you slipped away, but I've brought you up at last; and — give me your hand again, sir. I say, isn't it a pity you are a lord instead of a sailor?"

Ipsden. But I am a sailor.

Ancient Mariner. That ye are, and as smart a one as ever tied a true-lover's knot in the top; but tell the truth, you were never nearer losing the number of your mess than that day in the old Tisbe.

Lady Barbara. The old Tisbe! Oh!

Ipsden. Do you remember that nice little lurch she gave to leeward as we brought her round?

Lady Barbara. O Richard!

Ancient Mariner. And that reel the old wench gave under our feet, north the pier-head. I wouldn't have given a washing-tub for her at that moment.

Ipsden. Past danger becomes pleasure, sir. *Olim et hæc meminisse* — I beg your pardon, sir.

Ancient Mariner (taking off his hat, with feeling). God bless ye, sir, and send ye many happy days, and well spent, with the pretty lady I see alongside; asking your pardon, miss, for parting pleasanter company, — so I'll sheer off.

And away went the skipper of the Tisbe, rolling fearfully. In the heat of this reminiscence, the skipper of the yacht (they are all alike, blue water once fairly

tasted) had lost sight of Lady Barbara; he now looked round. Imagine his surprise!

Her ladyship was in tears.

"Dear Barbara," said Lord Ipsden, "do not distress yourself on my account."

"It is not your fe-feelings I care about; at least, I h-h-hope not; but I have been so unjust, and I prided myself so on my j-ju-justice."

"Never mind!"

"Oh! if you don't, I don't. I hate myself, so it is no wonder you h-hate me."

"I love you more than ever."

"Then you are a good soul! Of course you know I always *l*-esteemed you, Richard."

"No! I had an idea you despised me!"

"How silly you are! Can't you see? When I thought you were not perfection, which you are now, it vexed me to death; you never saw me affront any one but you?"

"No, I never did! What does that prove?"

"That depends upon the wit of him that reasons thereon." (Coming to herself.)

"I love you, Barbara! Will you honor me with your hand?"

"No! I am not so base, so selfish; you are worth a hundred of me, and here have I been treating you *de haut en bas*. Dear Richard, poor Richard! Oh, oh, oh!" (A perfect flood of tears.)

"Barbara, I regret nothing; this moment pays for all."

"Well, then, I will! since you keep pressing me. There, let me go; I must be alone; I must tell the sea how unjust I was, and how happy I am, and when you see me again, you shall see the better side of your cousin Barbara."

She was peremptory. "She had her folly and his merits to think over," she said; but she promised to pass through Newhaven, and he should put her into her pony-phaeton, which would meet her there.

Lady Barbara was only a fool by the excess of her wit over her experience; and Lord Ipsden's love was not misplaced, for she had a great heart which she hid from little people. I forgive her.

The resolutions she formed in company with the sea, having dismissed Ipsden, and ordered her flunky into the horizon, will probably give our viscount just half a century of conjugal bliss.

As he was going, she stopped him and said, "Your friend had browner hands than I have hitherto conceived possible. *To tell the truth*, I took them for the claws of a mahogany table when he grappled you, — is that the term? *C'est egal*! I like him" —

She stopped him again. "Ipsden, in the midst of all, that poor man's ship is broken. I feel it is! You will buy him another, if you really love me, — for I like him."

And so these lovers parted for a time; and Lord Ipsden with a bounding heart returned to Newhaven. He went to entertain his late *vis-à-vis* at the "Peacock."

Meantime a shorter and less pleasant *rencontre* had taken place between Leith and that village.

Gatty felt he should meet his lost sweetheart; and sure enough, at a turn of the road Christie and Jean came suddenly upon him.

Jean nodded, but Christie took no notice of him; they passed him; he turned and followed them, and said, "Christie!"

"What is your will wi' me?" said she coldly.

"I — I — how pale you are!"

"I am no very weel."

"She has been watching over muckle wi' Flucker," said Jean.

Christie thanked her with a look.

"I hope it is not — not" —

"Nae fears, lad," said she briskly; "I dinna think that muckle o' ye."

"And I think of nothing but you," said he.

A deep flush crimsoned the young woman's brow, but she restrained herself, and said icily, "Thaat's very gude o' ye, I'm sure."

Gatty felt all the contempt her manners and words expressed. He bit his lips: the tear started to his eye. "You will forget me," said he: "I do not deserve to be remembered, but I shall never forget you. I leave for England: I leave Newhaven forever, where I have been so happy. I am going at three o'clock by the steamboat: won't you bid me good-by?" He approached her timidly.

"Ay! that wull do," cried she; "Gude be wi' ye, lad; I wish ye nae ill." She gave a commanding gesture of dismissal; he turned away, and went sadly from her.

She watched every motion when his back was turned.

"That is you, Christie," said Jean; "use the lads like dirt, an' they think a' the mair o' ye."

"O Jean, my hairt's broken. I'm just deeing for him."

"Let me speak till him then," said Jean; "I'll sune bring him till his marrow-banes;" and she took a hasty step to follow him.

Christie held her fast. "I'd dee ere I'd give in till them. O Jean! I'm a lassy clean flung awa; he has neither hairt nor spunk ava, yon lad!"

Jean began to make excuses for him: Christie inveighed against him; Jean spoke up for him with more earnestness.

Now observe, Jean despised the poor boy.

Christie adored him.

So Jean spoke for him, because women of every degree are often one solid mass of tact; and Christie abused him, because she wanted to hear him defended.

CHAPTER XVI.

Richard, Lord Viscount Ipsden, having dotted the seashore with sentinels, to tell him of Lady Barbara's approach, awaited his guest in the "Peacock;" but as Gatty was a little behind time, he placed Saunders sentinel over the "Peacock," and strolled eastward; as he came out of the "Peacock," Mrs. Gatty came down the little hill in front, and also proceeded eastward; meantime Lady Barbara and her escort were not far from the New Town of Newhaven, on their way from Leith.

Mrs. Gatty came down, merely with a vague fear. She had no reason to suppose her son's alliance with Christie either would or could be renewed, but she was a careful player and would not give a chance away; she found he was gone out unusually early, so she came straight to the only place she dreaded; it was her son's last day in Scotland. She had packed his clothes, and he had inspired her with confidence by arranging pictures, etc., himself; she had no idea he was packing for his departure from this life, not Edinburgh only.

She came then to Newhaven with no serious misgivings, for even if her son had again vacillated, she saw that with Christie's pride and her own firmness, the game must be hers in the end; but as I said before, she was one who played her cards closely, and such seldom lose.

But my story is with the two young fishwives, who, on their return from Leith, found themselves at the foot of the New Town, Newhaven, some minutes before any of the other persons who, it is to be observed, were approaching it from different points; they came slowly in, Christie

in particular, with a listlessness she had never known till this last week; for some days her strength had failed her — it was Jean that carried the creel now; before, Christie, in the pride of her strength, would always do more than her share of their joint labor; then she could hardly be forced to eat, and what she did eat was quite tasteless to her; and sleep left her, and in its stead came uneasy slumbers, from which she awoke, quivering from head to foot.

Oh! perilous venture of those who love one object with the whole heart.

This great but tender heart was breaking day by day.

Well, Christie and Jean strolling slowly into the New Town of Newhaven, found an assemblage of the natives all looking seaward; the fishermen, except Sandy Liston, were away at the herring-fishery, but all the boys and women of the New Town were collected; the girls felt a momentary curiosity; it proved, however, to be only an individual swimming in towards shore from a greater distance than usual.

A little matter excites curiosity in such places.

The man's head looked like a spot of ink.

Sandy Liston was minding his own business, lazily mending a skait-net, which he had attached to a crazy old herring-boat hauled up to rot.

Christie sat down, pale and languid, by him, on a creepie that a lass who had been baiting a line with mussels had just vacated; suddenly she seized Jean's arm with a convulsive motion. Jean looked up — it was the London steamboat running out from Leith to Granton Pier to take up her passengers for London. Charles Gatty was going by that boat; the look of mute despair the poor girl gave went to Jean's heart — she ran hastily from the group, and cried out of sight for poor Christie.

A fishwife looking through a telescope at the swimmer

remarked, "He's coming in fast; he's a gallant swimmer yon" —

"Can he dee't?" inquired Christie of Sandy Liston.

"Fine thaat," was the reply, "he does it aye o' Sundays when ye are at the kirk."

"It's no oot o' the kirk-window ye'll hae seen him, Sandy, my mon," said a young fishwife.

"Rin for my glass ony way, Flucker," said Christie, forcing herself to take some little interest.

Flucker brought it to her. She put her hand on his shoulder, got slowly up, and stood on the creepie, and adjusted the focus of her glass; after a short view she said to Flucker, —

"Rin and see the nock." She then levelled her glass again at the swimmer.

Flucker informed her the nock said "half eleven," — Scotch for half-past ten.

Christie whipped out a well-thumbed almanac.

"Yon nock's aye ahint," said she. She swept the sea once more with her glass, then brought it together with a click, and jumped off the stool; her quick intelligence viewed the matter differently from all the others.

"Noow," cried she, smartly, "wha'll lend me his yawl?"

"Hets! dinna be sae interferin, lassie," said a fishwife.

"Hae nane o' ye ony spunk?" said Christie, taking no notice of the woman. "Speak, laddies!"

"M'uncle's yawl is at the pier-head; ye'll get her, my woman," said a boy.

"A schell'n for wha's first on board," said Christie, holding up the coin.

"Come awa, Flucker, we'll hae her schell'n," and these two worthies instantly effected a false start.

"It's no under your jackets," said Christie, as she dashed after them like the wind.

"Haw! haw! haw!" laughed Sandy.

"What's her business picking up a mon against his will?" said a woman.

"She's an awfu' lassie," whined another.

The examination of the swimmer was then continued, and the crowd increased; some would have it he was rapidly approaching, others that he made little or no way.

"Wha est?" said another.

"It's a lummy," said a girl.

"Na! it's no a lummy," said another.

Christie's boat was now seen standing out from the pier. Sandy Liston, casting a contemptuous look on all the rest, lifted himself lazily into the herring-boat and looked seaward. His manner changed in a moment.

"The deevil!" cried he; "the tide's turned! You wi' your glass, could you no see yon man's drifting oot to sea?"

"Hech!" cried the women, "he'll be drooned, he'll be drooned!"

"Yes, he'll be drooned!" cried Sandy, "if yon lassie does na come alongside him deevelich quick — he's sair spent I doot."

Two spectators were now added to the scene, Mrs. Gatty and Lord Ipsden. Mrs. Gatty inquired what was the matter.

"It's a mon drooning," was the reply.

The poor fellow, whom Sandy, by aid of his glass, now discovered to be in a worn-out condition, was about half a mile east of Newhaven pier-head, and unfortunately the wind was nearly due east. Christie was standing north-north-east, her boat-hook jammed against the sail, which stood as flat as a knife.

The natives of the Old Town were now seen pouring

down to the pier and the beach, and strangers were collecting like bees.

"After-wit is everybody's wit!"

Old Proverb.

The affair was in the Johnstone's hands.

"That boat is not going to the poor man," said Mrs. Gatty; "it is turning its back upon him."

"She canna lie in the wind's eye, for as clever as she is," answered a fishwife.

"I ken wha it is," suddenly squeaked a little fishwife; "it's Christie Johnstone's lad; it's yon daft painter fr' England. Hech!" cried she, suddenly, observing Mrs. Gatty, "it's your son, woman."

The unfortunate woman gave a fearful scream, and flying like a tiger on Liston, commanded him, "to go straight out to sea, and save her son."

Jean Carnie seized her arm; "Div ye see yon boat?" cried she; "and div ye mind Christie, the lass wha's hairt ye hae broken? aweel, woman, — *it's just a race between deeth and Cirsty Johnstone for your son.*"

The poor old woman swooned dead away; they carried her into Christie Johnstone's house, and laid her down, then hurried back — the greater terror absorbed the less.

Lady Barbara Sinclair was there from Leith, and seeing Lord Ipsden standing in the boat with a fisherman, she asked him to tell her what it was; neither he nor any one answered her.

"Why doesn't she come about, Liston?" cried Lord Ipsden, stamping with anxiety and impatience.

"She'll no be lang," said Sandy; "but they'll mak a mess o't wi' ne'er a man i' the boat."

"Ye're sure o' thaat?" put in a woman.

"Ay, about she comes," said Liston, as the sail came

down on the first tack. He was mistaken; they dipped the lug as cleverly as any man in the town could.

"Hech! look at her hauling on the rope like a mon," cried a woman. The sail flew up on the other tack.

"She's an awfu' lassie," whined another.

"He's awa," groaned Liston, "he's doon!"

"No! he's up again," cried Lord Ipsden; "but I fear he can't live till the boat comes to him."

The fisherman and the viscount held on by each other.

"He does na see her, or maybe he'd tak hairt."

"I'd give ten thousand pounds if only he could see her. My God, the man will be drowned under our eyes. If he but saw her!"

The words had hardly left Lord Ipsden's lips, when the sound of a woman's voice came like an Æolian note across the water.

"Hurraih!" roared Liston, and every creature joined the cheer.

"She'll no let him dee. Ah! she's in the bows, hailing him an' waving the lad's bonnet ower her head to gie him coorage. Gude bless ye, lass, Gude bless ye!"

Christie knew it was no use hailing him against the wind, but the moment she got the wind she darted into the bows, and pitched, in its highest key, her full and brilliant voice; after a moment of suspense she received proof that she must be heard by him, for on the pier now hung men and women, clustered like bees, breathless with anxiety, and the moment after she hailed the drowning man, she saw and heard a wild yell of applause burst from the pier, and the pier was more distant than the man. She snatched Flucker's cap, planted her foot on the gunwale, held on by a rope, hailed the poor fellow again, and waved the cap round and round her head, to give him courage; and in a moment, at the sight of this, thousands of voices thundered back their cheers to her

across the water. Blow, wind; spring, boat; and you, Christie, still ring life towards those despairing ears, and wave hope to those sinking eyes; cheer the boat on, you thousands that look upon this action. Hurrah! from the pier; Hurrah! from the town; Hurrah! from the shore; Hurrah! now, from the very ships in the roads, whose crews are swarming on the yards to look; five minutes ago they laughed at you; three thousand eyes and hearts hang upon you now; ay, these are the moments we live for!

And now dead silence. The boat is within fifty yards, they are all three consulting together round the mast: an error now is death; his forehead only seems above water.

"If they miss him on that tack," said Lord Ipsden, significantly, to Liston.

"He'll never see London Brigg again," was the whispered reply.

They carried on till all on shore thought they would run over him, or past him; but no, at ten yards distant they were all at the sail, and had it down like lightning; and then Flucker sprang to the bows, the other boy to the helm.

Unfortunately, there were but two Johnstones in the boat; and this boy, in his hurry, actually put the helm to port, instead of to starboard. Christie, who stood amidships, saw the error; she sprang aft, flung the boy from the helm, and jammed it hard-a-starboard with her foot. The boat answered the helm, but too late for Flucker; the man was four yards from him as the boat drifted by.

"He's a deed mon!" cried Liston, on shore.

The boat's length gave one more little chance; the after-part must drift nearer him — thanks to Christie. Flucker flew aft, flung himself on his back, and seized his sister's petticoats.

"Fling yourself ower the gunwale," screamed he. "Ye'll no hurt; I'se haud ye."

She flung herself boldly over the gunwale; the man was sinking, her nails touched his hair, her fingers entangled themselves in it, she gave him a powerful wrench and brought him alongside; the boys pinned him like wild cats.

Christie darted away forward to the mast, passed a rope round it, threw it the boys; in a moment it was under his shoulders. Christie hauled on it from the fore thwart, the boys lifted him, and they tumbled him, gasping and gurgling like a dying salmon, into the bottom of the boat, and flung net and jackets and sail over him, to keep the life in him.

Ah! draw your breath all hands at sea and ashore, and don't try it again, young gentleman, for there was nothing to spare: when you were missed at the bow two stout hearts quivered for you; Lord Ipsden hid his face in his two hands, Sandy Liston gave a groan, and when you were grabbed astern, jumped out of his boat, and cried, —

"A jill o' whiskey for ony favor, for it's turned me as seeck as a doeg." He added, "He may bless yon lassie's fowr banes, for she's taen him oot o' death's maw, as sure as Gude's in heaven!"

Lady Barbara, who had all her life been longing to see perilous adventures, prayed, and trembled, and cried most piteously; and Lord Ipsden's back was to her, and he paid no attention to her voice; but when the battle was won and Lord Ipsden turned and saw her, she clung to his arm and dried her tears; and then the Old Town cheered the boat, and the New Town cheered the boat, and the towns cheered each other; and the Johnstones, lad and lass, set their sail, and swept back in triumph to the pier; so then Lady Barbara's blood mounted and

tingled in her veins like fire. "Oh, how noble!" cried she.

"Yes, dearest," said Ipsden. "You have seen something great done at last; and by a woman, too!"

"Yes," said Barbara, "how beautiful! oh, how beautiful it all is! only the next one I see, I should like the danger to be over first, that is all."

The boys and Christie, the moment they had saved Gatty, up sail again for Newhaven; they landed in about three minutes at the pier.

Time.	Min.	Sec.
From Newhaven town to pier on foot . . .	1	30
First tack	5	30
Second tack and getting him on board . . .	4	00
Back to the pier, going free	3	30
Total	14	30

They came in to the pier, Christie sitting quietly on the thwart after her work, the boy steering, and Flucker standing against the mast, hands in his pockets; the deportment this young gentleman thought fit to assume on this occasion was "complete apathy." He came into port with the air of one bringing home the ordinary results of his day's fishing; this was, I suppose, to impress the spectators with the notion that saving lives was an every-day affair with *la famille* Johnstone; as for Gatty, he came to himself under his heap of nets and jackets, and spoke once between death's jaw and the pier.

"Beautiful!" murmured he, and was silent. The meaning of this observation never transpired, and never will in this world. Six months afterwards, being subjected to a searching interrogatory, he stated that he had alluded to the majesty and freedom of a certain *pose* Christie had adopted whilst hailing him from the boat;

but, reader, if he had wanted you and me to believe it was this, he should not have been half a year finding it out — *increduli odimus!* They landed, and Christie sprang on shore; whilst she was wending her way through the crowd, impeded by greetings and acclamations, with every now and then a lass waving her kerchief, or a lad his bonnet, over the heroine's head, poor Mrs. Gatty was receiving the attention of the New Town; they brought her to, they told her the good news — she thanked God.

The whole story had spread like wildfire; they expostulated with her, they told her now was the time to show she had a heart, and bless the young people.

She rewarded them with a valuable precept.

"Mind your own business!" said she.

"Hech! y' are a dour wife!" cried Newhaven.

The dour wife bent her eyes on the ground.

The people were still collected at the foot of the street, but they were now in knots, when in dashed Flucker, arriving by a short cut, and crying, "She does na ken, she does na ken, she was ower moedest to look, I daur say, and ye'll no tell her, for he's a blackguard, an' he's just making a fule o' the puir lass, and if she kens what she has done for him, she'll be fonder o' him than a coow o' her cauf."

"O Flucker! we maun tell her, it's her lad, her ain lad, she saved," expostulated a woman.

"Did ever my feyther do a good turn till ye?" cried Flucker. "Aweel, then, ye'll no tell the lassy, she's weel as she is; he's gaun t' Enngland the day. I cannie gie ye a' a-hidin," said he, with an eye that flashed volumes of good intention, on a hundred and fifty people; "but I am feytherless and motherless, an' I can fa' on my knees an' curse ye a' if ye do us sic an ill turn, an' then ye'll see whether ye'll thrive."

"We'll no tell, Flucker, ye need na currse us ony way."

His lordship, with all the sharp authority of a skipper, ordered Master Flucker to the pier, with a message to the yacht; Flucker *quâ* yachtsman was a machine, and went as a matter of course. "I am determined to tell her," said Lord Ipsden to Lady Barbara.

"But," remonstrated Lady Barbara, "the poor boy says he will curse us if we do."

"He won't curse me."

"How do you know that?"

"Because the little blackguard's grog would be stopped on board the yacht if he did."

Flucker had not been gone many minutes before loud cheering was heard, and Christie Johnstone appeared convoyed by a large detachment of the Old Town; she had tried to slip away, but they would not let her. They convoyed her in triumph till they saw the New Town people, and then they turned and left her.

She came in amongst the groups, a changed woman — her pallor and her listlessness were gone — the old light was in her eye, and the bright color in her cheek, and she seemed hardly to touch the earth. "I'm just droukit, lasses," cried she, gayly, wringing her sleeve. Every eye was upon her; did she know, or did she not know, what she had done?

Lord Ipsden stepped forward; the people tacitly accepted him as the vehicle of their curiosity.

"Who was it, Christie?"

"I dinna ken, for my pairt!"

Mrs. Gatty came out of the house.

"A handsome young fellow, I hope, Christie?" resumed Lord Ipsden.

"Ye maun ask Flucker," was the reply. "I could no tak muckle notice, ye ken," putting her hand before her eye, and half smiling.

"Well! I hear he is very good looking; and I hear you think so, too."

She glided to him, and looked in his face. He gave a meaning smile. The poor girl looked quite perplexed. Suddenly she gave a violent start.

"Christie! where is Christie?" had cried a well-known voice. He had learned on the pier who had saved him — he had slipped up among the boats to find her — he could not find his hat — he could not wait for it — his dripping hair showed where he had been — it was her love, whom she had just saved out of death's very jaws.

She gave a cry of love, that went through every heart, high or low, young or old, that heard it. And she went to him, through the air it seemed; but quick as she was, another was as quick; the mother had seen him first, and she was there. Christie saw nothing. With another cry, the very keynote of her great and loving heart, she flung her arms round — Mrs. Gatty, who was on the same errand as herself.

> "Hearts are not steel, and steel is bent;
> Hearts are not flint, and flint is rent."

The old woman felt Christie touch her. She turned from her son in a moment, and wept upon her neck. Her lover took her hand and kissed it, and pressed it to his bosom, and tried to speak to her; but all he could do was to sob and choke — and kiss her hand again.

"My daughter!" sobbed the old woman.

At that word Christie clasped her quickly; and then Christie began to cry.

"I am not a stone," cried Mrs. Gatty. "I gave him life; but you have saved him from death. O Charles! never make her repent what she has done for you."

She was a woman after all; and prudence and prejudice melted like snow before her heart.

There were not many dry eyes — least of all the heroic Lady Barbara's.

The three whom a moment had made one, were becoming calmer, and taking one another's hands for life, when a diabolical sound arose — and what was it, but Sandy Liston, who, after furious resistance, was blubbering with explosive but short-lived violence. Having done it, he was the first to draw everybody's attention to the phenomenon; and affecting to consider it a purely physical attack, like a *coup de soleil*, or so on, he proceeded instantly to Drysel's for his panacea.

Lady Barbara enjoined Lord Ipsden to watch these people, and not to lose a word they said; and after she had insisted upon kissing Christie, she went off to her carriage. And she, too, was so happy, she cried three distinct times on her way to Edinburgh.

Lord Ipsden having reminded Gatty of his engagement, begged him to add his mother and Christie to the party, and escorted Lady Barbara to her phaeton.

So then the people dispersed by degrees.

"That old lady's face seems familiar to me," said Lord Ipsden, as he stood on the little natural platform by the "Peacock." "Do you know who she is, Saunders?"

"It is Peggy, that was cook in your lordship's uncle's time, my lord. She married a greengrocer," added Saunders, with an injured air.

"Hech! hech!" cried Flucker, "Christie has ta'en up her head wi' a cook's son."

Mrs. Gatty was ushered into the "Peacock," with mock civility, by Mr. Saunders. No recognition took place, each being ashamed of the other as an acquaintance.

The next arrival was a beautiful young lady, in a

black silk gown, a plain but duck-like plaid shawl, who proved to be Christie Johnstone, in her Sunday attire.

When they met, Mrs. Gatty gave a little scream of joy, and said, "O my child! if I had seen you in that dress, I should never have said a word against you."

"Pars minima est ipsa puella sui!"

His lordship stepped up to her, took off his hat, and said, "Will Mrs. Gatty take from me a commission for two pictures, as big as herself, and as bonny," added he, doing a little Scotch. He handed her a check; and turning to Gatty, added, "at your convenience, sir, *bien entendu.*"

"Hech! it's for five hundred pund, Chairles."

"Good gear gangs in little book," [1] said Jean.

"Ay, does it," replied Flucker, assuming the compliment.

"My lord," said the artist, "you treat Art like a prince; and she shall treat you like a queen. When the sun comes out again, I will work for you and fame. You shall have two things painted, every stroke loyally in the sunlight. In spite of gloomy winter and gloomier London, I will try if I can't hang nature and summer on your walls forever. As for me, you know I must go to Gerard Dow and Cuyp, and Pierre de Hoogh, when my little sand is run; but my handwriting shall warm your children's children's hearts, sir, when this hand is dust." His eye turned inwards, he walked to and fro, and his companions died out of his sight — he was in the kingdom of art.

His lordship and Jean entered the "Peacock," followed by Flucker, who merely lingered at the door to moralize as follows: —

[1] Bulk.

"Hech! hech! isna thaat lamēntable? Christie's mon's as daft as a drunk weaver."

But one stayed quietly behind, and assumed that moment the office of her life.

"Ay," he burst out again, "*the resources of our art are still unfathomed! Pictures are yet to be painted that shall refresh men's inner souls, and help their hearts against the artificial world, and charm the fiend away, like David's harp! The world, after centuries of lies, will give nature and truth a trial. What a paradise art will be when truths, instead of lies, shall be told on paper, on marble, on canvas, and on the boards!*"

"Dinner's on the boarrd," murmured Christie, alluding to Lord Ipsden's breakfast; "and I hae the charge o' ye," pulling his sleeve hard enough to destroy the equilibrium of a flea.

"Then don't let us waste our time here. O Christie!"

"What est, my laddy?"

"I'm so preciously hungry!"

"C-way [1] then!"

Off they ran, hand in hand, sparks of beauty, love, and happiness flying all about them.

[1] Come away.

CHAPTER XVII.

"THERE is nothing but meeting and parting in this world!" and you may be sure the incongruous personages of our tale could not long be together. Their separate paths had met for an instant, in one focus, furnished then and there the matter of an eccentric story, and then diverged forever.

Our lives have a general current, and also an episode or two; and the episodes of a common-place life are often rather startling; in like manner, this tale is not a specimen, but an episode of Lord Ipsden and Lady Barbara, who soon after this married and lived like the rest of the *beau monde*. In so doing, they passed out of my hands; such as wish to know how viscounts and viscountesses feed and sleep and do the domestic (so called) and the social (so called), are referred to the fashionable novel. To Mr. Saunders, for instance, who has in the press one of those cerberus-leviathans of fiction, so common now; incredible as folio to future ages. Saunders will take you by the hand, and lead you over carpets two inches thick — under rosy curtains — to dinner-tables. He will *fête* you, and opera you, and dazzle your young imagination with *epergnes*, and salvers, and buhl, and ormolu. No fishwives or painters shall intrude upon his polished scenes; all shall be as genteel as himself. Saunders is a good authority; he is more in the society, and far more in the confidence of the great, than most fashionable novelists. Mr. Saunders's work will be in three volumes; nine hundred and ninety pages!

In other words, this single work, of this ingenious writer, will equal in bulk the aggregate of all the writings extant by Moses, David, Solomon, Isaiah, and St. Paul!

I shall not venture into competition with this behemoth of the *salon;* I will evaporate in thin generalities.

Lord Ipsden, then, lived very happily with Lady Barbara, whose hero he straightway became, and who nobly and poetically dotes upon him. He has gone into political life to please her, and will remain there — to please himself. They were both very grateful to Newhaven; when they married, they vowed to visit it twice a year, and mingle a fortnight's simple life with its simple scenes; but four years have passed, and they have never been there again, and I dare say never will; but when Viscount Ipsden falls in with a brother aristocrat who is crushed by the fiend *ennui*, he remembers Aberford, and condenses his famous recipe into a two-edged hexameter, which will make my learned reader laugh, for it is full of wisdom: —

"Diluculo surgas! miseris succurrere discas!"

Flucker Johnstone meditated during breakfast upon the five hundred pounds, and regretted he had not, years ago, adopted Mr. Gatty's profession; some days afterwards he invited his sister to a conference. Chairs being set, Mr. Flucker laid down this observation — that near relations should be deuced careful not to cast discredit upon one another; that now his sister was to be a lady, it was repugnant to his sense of right to be a fisherman and make her ladyship blush for him; on the contrary, he felt it his duty to rise to such high consideration that she should be proud of him.

Christie acquiesced at once in this position, but professed herself embarrassed to know how such a "ne'er-

do-weel" was to be made a source of pride; then she kissed Flucker, and said, in a tone somewhat inconsistent with the above, "Tell me, my laamb!"

Her lamb informed her, that the sea has many paths; some of them disgraceful, such as line or net fishing, and the periodical laying down, on rocky shoals, and taking up again, of lobster-creels; others, superior to anything the dry land can offer in importance and dignity and general estimation, such as the command of a merchant-vessel trading to the East or West Indies. Her lamb then suggested that if she would be so good as to launch him in the merchant-service, with a good rig of clothes and money in his pocket, there was that in his head which would enable him to work to windward of most of his contemporaries. He bade her calculate upon the following results: in a year or two he would be second mate — and next year, first mate — and, in a few years more, skipper! Think of that, lass! Skipper of a vessel, whose rig he generously left his sister free to determine: premising that two masts were, in his theory of navigation, indispensable, and that three were a great deal more like Cocker than two. This led to a general consultation; Flucker's ambition was discussed and praised. That modest young gentleman, in spite of many injunctions to the contrary, communicated his sister's plans for him to Lord Ipsden, and affected to doubt their prudence. The bait took; Lord Ipsden wrote to his man of business, and an unexpected blow fell upon the ingenious Flucker. He was sent to school; there to learn a little astronomy, a little navigation, a little seamanship, a little manners, etc.; in the mysteries of reading and writing his sister had already perfected him by dint of "the taws." This school was a blow; but Flucker was no fool: he saw there was no way of getting from school to sea without working. So he liter-

ally worked out to sea. His first voyage was distinguished by the following peculiarities: attempts to put tricks upon this particular novice generally ended in the laugh turning against the experimenters; and instead of drinking his grog, which he hates, he secreted it, and sold it for various advantages. He has been now four voyages; when he comes ashore, instead of going to haunts of folly and vice, he instantly bears up for his sister's house — Kensington Gravel-pits — which he makes in the following manner: he goes up the river — Heaven knows where all — this he calls running down the longitude; then he lands, and bears down upon the Gravel-pits: in particular knowledge of the names of streets he is deficient, but he knows the exact bearings of Christie's dwelling. He tacks and wears according as masonry compels him, and he arrives at the gate. He hails the house, in a voice that brings all the inhabitants of the row to their windows, including Christie; he is fallen upon and dragged into the house. The first thing is, he draws out from his boots, and his back, and other hiding-places, China crape and marvellous silk handkerchiefs for Christie; and she takes from his pocket a mass of Oriental sugar-plums, with which, but for this precaution, she knows by experience he would poison young Charley; and soon he is to be seen, sitting with his hand in his sister's, and she looking like a mother upon his handsome weather-beaten face, and Gatty opposite adoring him as a specimen of male beauty, and sometimes making furtive sketches of him. And then the tales he always brings with him; the house is never very dull, but it is livelier than ever when this inexhaustible sailor casts anchor in it.

The friends (chiefly artists) who used to leave at 9.30, stay till eleven: for an intelligent sailor is better company than two lawyers, two bishops, three soldiers, and

four writers of plays and tales, all rolled together. And still he tells Christie he shall command a vessel some day, and leads her to the most cheering inferences from the fact of his prudence and his general width-awake; in particular he bids her contrast with him the general fate of sailors, eaten up by land-sharks, particularly of the female gender, whom he demonstrates to be the worst enemies poor Jack has; he calls these sunken rocks, fire-ships, and other metaphors. He concludes thus: "You are all the lass I mean to have, till I'm a skipper, and then I'll bear up alongside some pretty decent lass, like yourself, Christie, and we'll sail in company all our lives, let the wind blow high or low." Such is the gracious Flucker become in his twentieth year. Last voyage, with Christie's aid, he produced a sextant of his own, and "made it twelve o'clock" (with the sun's consent, I hope), and the eyes of authority fell upon him. So who knows, perhaps he may one day sail a ship; and if he does, he will be prouder and happier than if we made him monarch of the globe.

To return to our chiefs; Mrs. Gatty gave her formal consent to her son's marriage with Christie Johnstone.

There were examples. Aristocracy had ere now condescended to wealth; earls had married women rich by tallow-importing papas; and, no doubt, had these same earls been consulted in Gatty's case, they would have decided that Christie Johnstone, with her real and funded property, was not a villanous match for a greengrocer's son, without a rapp;[1] but Mrs. Gatty did not reason so, — did not reason at all, luckily, her heart ran away with her judgment, and her judgment ceasing to act, she became a wise woman.

The case was peculiar. Gatty was an artist *pur sang*,

[1] A diminutive German coin.

— and Christie, who would not have been the wife for a *petit maître,* was the wife of wives for him.

He wanted a beautiful wife to embellish his canvas, disfigured hitherto by an injudicious selection of models; a virtuous wife, to be his crown; a prudent wife, to save him from ruin; a cheerful wife, to sustain his spirits, drooping at times by virtue of his artist's temperament; an intellectual wife, to preserve his children from being born dolts, and bred dunces, and to keep his own mind from sharpening to one point, and so contracting and becoming monomaniacal: and he found all these qualities, together with the sun and moon of human existence — true love and true religion — in Christie Johnstone.

In similar cases, foolish men have set to work to make, in six months, their diamond of nature, the exact cut and gloss of other men's pastes, and nervously watching the process, have suffered torture; luckily Charles Gatty was not wise enough for this; he saw nature had distinguished her he loved beyond her fellows; here, as elsewhere, he had faith in nature, — he believed that Christie would charm everybody of eye, and ear, and mind, and heart, that approached her; he admired her as she was, and left her to polish herself, if she chose. He did well; she came to London with a fine mind, a broad brogue, a delicate ear; she observed how her husband's friends spoke, and in a very few months she had toned down her Scotch to a rich Ionic coloring, which her womanly instinct will never let her exchange for the thin vinegar accents that are too prevalent in English and French society; and in other respects she caught, by easy gradation, the tone of the new society to which her marriage introduced her, without, however, losing her charming self.

The wise dowager lodges hard by, having resisted an invitation to be in the same house; she comes to that

house to assist the young wife with her experience, and to be welcome, — not to interfere every minute, and tease her; she loves her daughter-in-law almost as much as she does her son, and she is happy because he bids fair to be an immortal painter, and above all, a gentleman; and she a wifely wife, a motherly mother, and above all, a lady.

This, then, is a happy couple. Their life is full of purpose and industry, yet lightened by gayety; they go to operas, theatres, and balls, for they are young. They have plenty of society, real society, not the ill-assorted collection of a predetermined number of bodies, that blindly assumes that name, but the rich communication of various and fertile minds; they very, very seldom consent to squat four mortal hours on one chair (like old hares stiffening in their hot forms), and nibbling, sipping, and twaddling, in four mortal hours, what could have been eaten, drunken, and said, in thirty-five minutes. They are both artists at heart, and it shocks their natures to see folks mix so very largely the *inutile* with the *insipidum*, and waste at one huge but barren incubation, the soul, and the stomach, and the irrevocable hours, things with which so much is to be done. But they have many desirable acquaintances, and not a few friends; the latter are mostly lovers of truth in their several departments, and in all things: among them are painters, sculptors, engineers, writers, conversers, thinkers; these acknowledging, even in England, other gods besides the intestines, meet often *chez* Gatty, chiefly for mental intercourse; a cup of tea with such is found, by experience, to be better than a stalled elk where chit-chat reigns over the prostrate hours.

This, then, is a happy couple; the very pigeons and the crows need not blush for the nest at Kensington Gravel-pits. There the divine institution, marriage, takes

its natural colors, and it is at once pleasant and good to catch such glimpses of Heaven's design, and sad to think how often this great boon, accorded by God to man and woman, must have been abused and perverted, ere it could have sunk to be the standing butt of farce-writers, and the theme of weekly punsters.

In this pair we see the wonders a male and female can do for each other in the sweet bond of holy wedlock. In that blessed relation alone two interests are really one, and two hearts lie safe at anchor side by side.

Christie and Charles are friends, — for they are man and wife.

Christie and Charles are lovers still, — for they are man and wife.

Christie and Charles are one forever, — for they are man and wife.

This wife brightens the house from kitchen to garret, for her husband; this husband works like a king for his wife's comfort and for his own fame, — and that fame is his wife's glory. When one of these expresses or hints a wish, the other's first impulse is to find the means, not the objections.

They share all troubles, and by sharing, halve them.

They share all pleasures, and by sharing double them.

They climb the hill together now, and many a canty day they shall have with one another; and when, by the inevitable law, they begin to descend towards the dark valley, they will still go hand in hand, smiling so tenderly, and supporting each other with a care more lovely than when the arm was strong and the foot firm.

On these two temperate lives old age will descend lightly, gradually, gently, and late, — and late upon these evergreen hearts, because they are not tuned to some selfish, isolated key; these hearts beat and ring with the young hearts of their dear children, and years

hence papa and mamma will begin life hopefully, wishfully, warmly again with each loved novice in turn.

And when old age does come, it will be no calamity to these, as it is to you, poor battered beau, laughed at by the fair ninnies who erst laughed with you; to you, poor follower of salmon, fox, and pheasant, whose joints are stiffening, whose nerve is gone, — whose Golgotha remains; to you, poor faded beauty, who have staked all upon man's appetite, and not accumulated goodness or sense for your second course; to you, poor drawing-room wit, whose sarcasm has turned to venom, and is turning to drivel.

What terrors has old age for this happy pair? it cannot make them ugly, for though the purple light of youth recedes, a new kind of tranquil beauty, the aloe-blossom of many years of innocence, comes to, and sits like a dove upon the aged faces, where goodness, sympathy, and intelligence have harbored together so long; and where evil passions have flitted (for we are all human), but found no resting-place.

Old age is no calamity to them: it cannot terrify them: for ere they had been married a week the woman taught the man, lover of truth, to search for the highest and greatest truths, in a book written for men's souls, by the Author of the world, the sea, the stars, the sun, the soul; and this book, *Dei gratiâ*, will, as the good bishop sings, —

> "Teach them to live, that they may dread
> The grave as little as their bed."

It cannot make them sad, for ere it comes, loved souls will have gone from earth, and from their tender bosom, but not from their memories; and will seem to beckon them now across the cold valley to the golden land.

It cannot make them sad, for on earth the happiest

must drink a sorrowful cup more than once in a long life, and so their brightest hopes will have come to dwell habitually on things beyond the grave; and the great painter, *jam senex*, will chiefly meditate upon a richer landscape, and brighter figures than human hand has ever painted; a scene whose glories he can see from hence but by glimpses, and through a glass darkly; the great meadows on the other side of Jordan, which are bright with the spirits of the just that walk there, and are warmed with an eternal sun, and ring with the triumph of the humble and the true, and the praises of God forever.

NOTE.

This story was written three years ago, and one or two topics in it are not treated exactly as they would be if written by the same hand to-day. But if the author had retouched those pages with his colors of 1853, he would (he thinks) have destroyed the only merit they have, viz., that of containing genuine contemporaneous verdicts upon a cant that was flourishing like a peony, and a truth that was struggling for bare life, in the year of truth 1850.

He prefers to deal fairly with the public, and, with this explanation and apology, to lay at its feet a faulty but genuine piece of work.

fig 41